is a 14 year old who has been resident in a training school for a period of approximately 7 months. He is of medium build, has fair hair and blue eyes and tends to have a rather angelic appearance when at his best, and this look is complemented by his soft effeminate facial features. In the initial stage of his residence within the training school **second** tended to dress very well; mostly in well pressed trousers set off by a shirt and cardigan. However, he is now more often seen to wear jeans and a bomber style jacket.

comes from a very unsettled background. His parents separated when he was an infant and both he and his sister were under the supervision of their mother who proved incapable of even rudimentary child care. He exhibited some disturbing behaviour patterns and this resulted in very poor conduct; probably the most serious being fire setting.

In May 1981 both children were removed to a children's home was in a children's home for 2 years before he moved to foster parents in 1983. His behaviour was soon to improve and it could be said that his socialisation began in the foster home. As problems arose during his stay there, he was again removed to a children's home and eventually in April last year was committed to a training school.

When residing in the school tended to show some disturbing behaviourisms, the most worrying of these being his foul language and everything he said having a double meaning and a sexual connation. This went on continually for a 3-4 month period and during this time he was always seeking and obtaining his peer groups attention by indulging in silly and childish singing of songs with sexual undertones. He also became the target of some severe bullying by his peers and this in turn led to him giving the same treatment to boys of his own size.

On 6 April 1987, **Sector** was first admitted to St Patrick's on a Training School Order for theft. Prior to his committal **been** had been the subject of several Probation Orders. He had also been ordered to spend 15 hours at an attendance centre.

initially appeared to settle into the routine of training school life fairly well. Into the ded to be a loner amongst his peer group in the school. At times he appeared to be on the receiving end of bullying and pressure from other boys.

## SPT-18379

After 2 months his general behaviour started to deteriorate. He became sullen and was at times quite unco-operative with staff, refusing to attend school or to go to the workshops.

On 17 June 1987 he was interviewed by the Police and charged with breaking and entry during one of his weekend leave periods. At the time of this charge was still attending different courts on charges incurred prior to his committal to the training school. A few months later it emerged that was having problems dealing with a craze for gambling machines.

At this stage, contact was made with Gambler's Anonymous, thus giving the opportunity of benefiting from their counselling. Through the school doctor professional help was arranged at Shaftesbury Square Hospital. During the past month his pattern of behaviour has again been quite poor and he has had quite a number of abscondings.

has now built himself up quite a record of offences. Being aware of his home problems, coupled with his apathetic response to his own behaviour, staff are concerned that the courts will take the matter out of the hands of the training school and deal with in some other manner.

#### APPRAISAL OF THE JUSTICE UNITS

- 5.15 The senior justice unit is located in the east side of the main block. It is comprised of 2 wings, set at right angles, within a 3-storey building constructed in the 1950s style. A corridor runs the full length of the ground floor. It has a low ceiling and grey and blue wall tiles stretch from the floor to three-quarter way up the walls on both sides. Windows along one side of the corridor give an unrestricted view over an enclosed tarmac quadrangle which can be reached through one of 2 doors. Large central heating radiators are set at intervals along the corridor walls and small groups of boys congregate around these on cold evenings. The corridor is the main meeting point for the boys and provides access to the other ground floor rooms. While the tiled walls have stood the test of time the low ceiling and poor lighting combine to give it a cold dismal appearance during the winter evenings.
- 5.16 On one wing 2 rooms run the full length of the corridor, ie: a visiting room and a recreation room. These are separated by a partition which if opened can provide one large room. The floor is covered in vinyl tiles and the walls are painted in light pastel colours. In contrast with the corridor there is a very high ceiling, tiled with perforated panels to allow controlled heating of the rooms from above. One of the exterior walls has several large windows which overlook the front garden and driveway. These 2 rooms are in frequent use. Therefore it was not

surprising to find signs of wear and tear. However there were grimy marks and stains on the walls which were unsightly and could have been removed.

- 5.17 The seating which was provided in the visiting and recreation rooms consisted mainly of hard polyproplyene chairs. These were fixed together in groups of 3 to a metal and wooden frame. They were dirty and uncomfortable and showed signs of having been abused. The Inspectors concluded that the atmosphere in the visiting room was not inviting and would not have been conducive to making the boy's friends and relatives feel welcomed. The main feature of the recreation room was a 3-quarter size pool table which was in constant use. Table Lennis equipment was also provided.
- 5.18 Off the corridor on the second wing is a classroom, a large office used by the staff group, a changing room with benches and storage space and a small tuck shop. The changing room, (boot room) is seldom used except by those boys working on the farm or grounds for storing rubber boots and protective clothing. The tuck shop is open for sale of cigarettes, confectionary and soft drinks 2 or 3 times each day.
- 5.19 Where the 2 wings of the building meet an ablutions and toilet area are located. The former is comprised of 16 open showers, ie: basins set into the floor in a room with no partition or curtains separating them. Fixed to the wall are hot and cold taps to control the flow and temperature of the water which falls from above. Some of the shower roses are missing and there are no stoppers in the basins. When water overflows on to the tiled floor it is swept into a open drain. A large extractor fan removes the moist air from the area which also serves as a changing room when showers are being taken. These washing facilities have never been upgraded since the school opened and have no place in residential provision for children and young persons in this day and age.
- 5.20 Next to the showers are the interior toilets provided for the boys. Eight urinals are sited along one wall with 5 cubicles opposite. At the time of the inspection 3 of the water closets were broken and the operation of one of these flooded the tiled floor. The door leading to the toilets has a large clear glass panel through which the boys can be observed from the corridor. This is a feature of all the toilets in the building and was provided in a period when surveillance was given priority over privacy. Aside from the short term need to improve and repair the showers and toilets described above, in the long term this area requires total renovation and this is recommended.
  - 5.21 Stairs lead up from the corridors to the boys sleeping accommodation on the first and second floors. The 4 former dormitories, 2 on each floor, were converted some years ago

to provide individual cubicles for the residents. There are 14 in each room ie: 7 on each side of a central passage which leads into a common sitting/television room. Only those on the second floor were occupied at the time when the inspection took place. All had built-in wardrobes and featured a night light. A bed, and in some cases a chair rested on the woodblock (parquet wood flooring) though in some rooms carpet was provided. There was evidence of wear and tear and some vandalism, though 1 or 2 boys had painted, decorated and personalised their own bedrooms.

- 5.22 On both of the upstairs floors there is a large bathroom with 6 urinals to one side and 14 washhand basins with mirrors along the other wall. Provision is also made for individuals to hang up their handtowels. However there are no showering or bathing facilities which the Inspectors consider would have been beneficial, especially for use by boys who are nocturnal enuretics.
- 5.23 A staff flatlet is provided on each floor. Generally these are used as a base by the night supervisor on duty. Fire hose reels and break glass alarm buttons are located on the landing walls outside each dormitory. These are serviced and maintained by a contractor.
- 5.24 Architectually the junior justice unit is a replication of the senior justice unit ie: 2 wings on the West side of the main building set at right angles to each other. The only change in the use of the ground floor rooms is that the classroom is used as an office by the deputy director (education). However the Inspectors found the long corridors and the showering and toilet facilities on the ground floor no less depressing than those on the senior justice side. The visiting and recreation rooms were untidy and sparsily furnished.
- 5.25 Upstairs modifications have been made to the interior of the building to provide office accommodation for the assessment staff on the first floor of the wing running from north to south with classroom and storage space directly above on the second floor. In effect this means that the sleeping accommodation for the junior justice unit is on the other wing. Indeed all of the residents were occupying cubicles on the second floor while the first floor was being held in reserve possibly to be used in the future as a specialist assessment facility. Generally the boys' sleeping accommodation was freshly decorated and new bedroom furniture had been provided just before the inspection commenced. There was no provision for bathing or showering on any of the upper floors.
- 5.26 The Inspectors found that some of the accommodation for boys in the justice units was poorly maintained, unsuitably furnished and in poor decorative order. Cleaning appeared to be general, and concentrated on the main circulation

areas, but with little attention paid to detail or to the least accessible areas of the building. While some changes of the appearance and fabric of the building could make improvements in its appearnce in the short term, the Inspectors felt that a more radical solution may be necessary if this decaying institution is to be transformed into suitable premises for the long term accommodation of young persons. To examine the possible adaptations that would be necessary to bring the accommodation in the main building, up to an acceptable standard, a range of expertise, architectural, electrical and mechnical will have to be called upon. At the time of the verbal feedback, following the inspection, the recommendation that a Feasibility Study Group, to examine the logistics of adaptation was made. This Group has been established and is currently meeting. The Inspectors welcome the speedy initiative by the Northern Ireland Office.

#### KEY WORKERS

- 5.27 As each boy is allocated to one of the justice units a member of the residential social work is appointed as key worker. One of his duties is to identify problem areas for discussion at the boy's first review, which takes place approximately 4 weeks following his placement in the school. Thereafter he is reviewed approximately every 3 months and the key worker may provide a brief report for this meeting. However, as reviews are arranged and chaired by staff from the assessment unit the boy's key worker seldom attends. The Inspectors will make recommendations about the organisation and management of the reviews later in this report but it is felt that the attendance of the relevant key workers at these meeting is essential and this is recommended.
- 5.28 In practice the key worker system seems to work best in the junior justice unit. There appears to be more contact with the boys' parents and the key workers are encouraged to spend time together with their own groups of "key children" after supper in the evenings. Simple plans are made for each boy though staff rely upon the psychologists or a psychiatrist to formulate therapeutic programmes of care which they will strive to implement. In some cases contracts are made and set out formally in writing between the key worker, a boy and his parents. Frequently these are used to encourage an improvement in the boy's behaviour or to achieve more regular attendance at school. There is a general staff meeting on Tuesdays when all boys in the unit are discussed so that staff are appraised of current developments in each case. However there is no formal system of counselling for boys and the view was expressed by some staff that they require further training to equip them for this task.
- 5.29 Staff in the senior justice unit told the Inspectors that their priority was the supervision of the boys and the

SPT-18383

recording on files of their behaviour. In practice this would appear to be almost the prescribed role of the key worker in this unit. Reviews are led by the assessment unit, most contact with the boy's homes are made by the after care staff and clothing is purchased in bulk by the matron. There is no evidence of the development of individual programmes of work with the boys and any counselling is provided on an ad hoc basis. It is recommended that the role of the key worker is developed to include case accountability, the planning and implementation of individual care plans, attendance at and preparing reports for reviews, individual and group counselling, case recording, appropriate contact with the boy's homes as well as responsibility for the physical care of the boys including matters relating to their clothing.

5.30 Good behaviour by the boys is reinforced through the operation of a marks system which is closely allied with the amount of pocket money and home leave each boy can achieve. Marks are given by teachers and by residential social workers and each boy's allocation is finalised at a weekly staff meeting held on Thursday afternoons. The following day the boys are divided into groups and advised of the marks awarded by their teachers and key workers. This is also the time when group counselling about behaviour takes place and appeals are made to the boys to act responsibly. Boys in the top grade and who are not giving reason for concern can achieve home leave every weekend.

5.31 Although much emphasis is placed on supervising the boys, in practice this does not appear to work efficiently. During the boys' free time they are inclined to gather along the ground floor corridors in small groups with staff casually observing them from a distance. Not enough appears to be done to infiltrate the boys' lifestyles and staff tend to have little influence over them. While Inspectors accept that the building has limitations, they were concerned to find that the boys seem to take matters into their own hands by absconding and staff appear unable to get to grips with the situation.

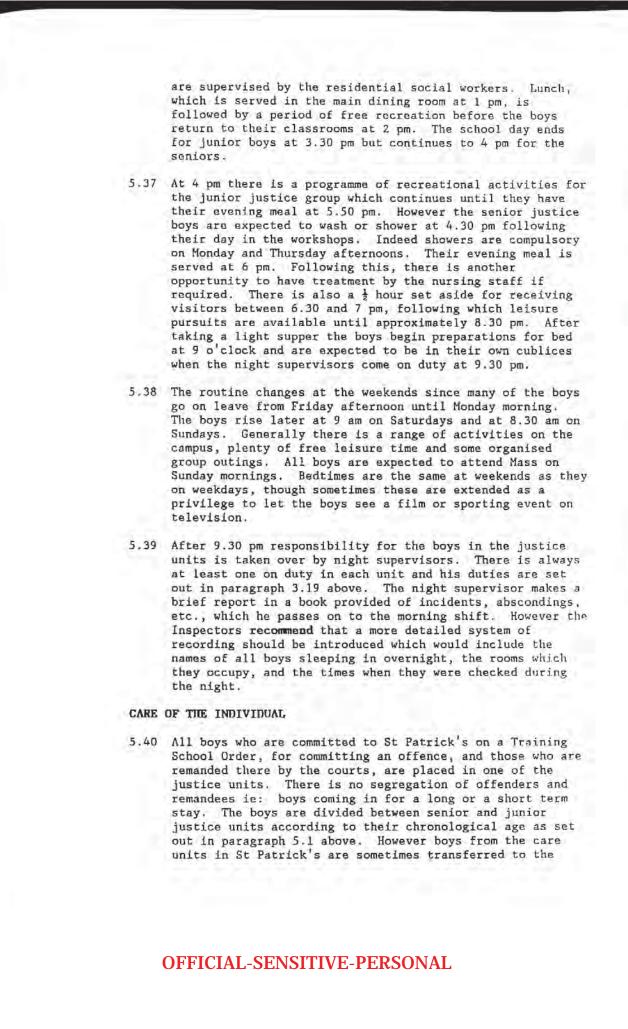
### RECORDS

- 5.32 There are 3 formal record books held in the justice units:-
  - A page per day diary where the number of boys present, at breakfast, dinner and supper is recorded and also all movement of boys in and out of the training school ie: to home leave to work, etc. Unapproved absences eg: abscondings are also noted as are relevant telephone calls.
  - An occurrence book ie: another diary into which are written brief reports of anything untoward affecting the boys and

- An absconders book to which details of every absconding is recorded.
- All of the above were found to up-to-date and in order.
- 5.33 The Inspectors also examined a selection of the boy's files and found these to be generally satisfatory. It was noted that there was a basic data sheet referring to the subject inside the flyleaf of his file and that additional information was held in one of 5 sub-divisions labelled (i) occurrence sheets, (ii) social background reports, (iii) assessment reports, (iv) legal documents and (v) miscellaneous. Case recording by the residential social workers was made on occurrence sheets held on the files. While this is to be encouraged in practice, the entries comprised of single line observations which reuires expansion and analysis to become meaningful to the reader.
- 5.34 The files held in the junior justice unit were more comprehensive and better maintained. Generally these were well ordered and held relevant material. Minutes of reviews on the files showed that most boys had been reviewed regularly. However in one case the reviews appeared to have petered out in May 1987. Some of the more recent minutes did carry a brief plan for further work to be undertaken by the boy's key worker and this was encouraging.
- 5.35 As with files elsewhere in St Patrick's, most of the recording in the junior justice unit concentrates on noting anything untoward. However brief reports written by the residential social workers were found on 2 files and these were of a good standard. Also 2 residential social workers, who were key workers for 6 boys in the unit, were keeping separate notes in a loose leaf binder which were more detailed than those on most of the files. It would appear that routine recording is developing well in the junior justice unit. However the Inspectors feel that the factual information which is recorded would be more relevant if it was used in the context of a well planned strategy for the care of individuals.

#### DAILY LIFE

5.36 There are slight variations in the timing of the daily routine between the junior and senior justice units. For example, the junior boys are called 15 minutes earlier, mainly because they need more assistance and direction in preparing for the day than the older group. There is also some staggering of meal times and visits to the surgery to allow some respite for the kitchen and nursing staff respectively. However all boys are expected to do some housework before breakfast and they are sent to school or to one of the vocational training departments at approximatley 9.15 am. There is a 15 minute break at 10.45 when a snack is provided and during this period the boys



senior justice unit for misbehaviour. The Inspectors support the training schools policy of providing separately for care and justice committals and do not consider that transfers between units for behaviour are appropriate. In any case each unit should be able to manage the boys who are placed there.

5.41 Many of the boys have already knowledge of the routine in St Patrick's before they arrive. Much information is gleaned from the gang culture in West Belfast and some of the boys may have had a previous admission to the school. The residential social workers make some contribution to the settling in of new arrivals and may help familiarise them with their surroundings. However, this is not undertaken in a planned or structured way, and as indicated above, new boys are often left to find things out from the other residents. However staff from the social work department do make contact with boys as soon as possible following their admission and if required, visit their homes. Sometimes this may just be to reassure both the boy and his family that matters are progressing normally. Should any boy feel dissatisfied about aspects of his care or treatment, he can see the director in his office at a mutually convenient time.

#### REVIEWS

5.42 Following admission each case is allocated to a key worker, a file is opened and 4 weeks later a case conference is convened to make an initial assessment of the boy's problems and needs. Thereafter reviews are held at least once in every 6 months. From the files examined it was apparent to the Inspectors that reviews take place "as required" ie: in many cases reviews are held more frequently, particularly in cases of some complexity. However there was little evidence of reports being tabled at reviews by key workers from the justice units or of any detailed operational planning for the future care and rehabilitation of the boys. Recommendations are made at paragraph 7.8 for the improvement in the organisation of the reviews and to make them more effective.

#### BEHAVIOUR/DISCIPLINE

5.43 While all of the young people arriving at St Patrick's may have similar general needs, their behaviour can be extremely variable and this is often the result of the quality of care received during their formative years. Some may have already spent years in care, frequently in a residential setting, and have a history of indiscipline and disorderly conduct. Within the training school, discipline is achieved mainly through having a structured regime and in which standards of behaviour which should be consistently applied by all staff. However, management expects the deputy directors of the justice units to see that their staff "run a tight ship" and if necessary to intervene by taking a firm line with any boy who does not conform.

5.44 Whenever a situation with potential conflict with authority, or at least withdrawal of co-operation with staff arises, then the young person can expect to be given a verbal reprimand. If matters deteriorate the boy may be restrained and/or removed from the group for a time, returning when he has regained his self-control. However the following sanctions are approved by the director for specific acts of misbehaviour:-

1. LOSS OF WEEKEND LEAVE

1

d

- a. For absconding when the boy is known to be at risk of offending;
- b. for persistently disruptive behaviour
- 2. DIMINUTION OF WEEKEND LEAVE

For returning late, bullying, persistent misdemeanours within the classroom or the residential setting.

3. LOSS OF MONEY

For persistent abusive language, fines for damage to school property; stealing items from another boy

4. LOSS OF PRIVILEGES

eg: television, outings, for lack of concern for the rights or others.

#### MARKS SYSTEM/POCKET MONEY

5.45 An incentive (marks) system is operated in the junior and senior justice units. Boys are awarded marks for good behaviour in both the classroom/workshop and the residential unit. Twenty marks, 10 from the teachers/instructors and 10 from the residential social workers, is the maximum which can be achieved in any week. The number of marks attained has an important bearing on the pocket money a boy will receive and will also determine whether or not he gets weekend leave. It is the view of the Inspectors that at least some pocket money should be given to each boy "as of right". As the present system operates it is possible for a boy to loose all of his rewards" for a particular week. Also the involvement of the teachers/instructors in the marks system could mean that for failing to behave/perform well in the classroom a boy could loose the opportunity of spending a weekend at home which might be an important part of his programme for rehabilitation. In view of the foregoing the Inspectors recommend that the marks system be reviewed to allow

## SPT-18388

all boys to receive some pocket money. A further recommendation is made at paragraph 9.6 for a review of the teachers involvement in the marks system.

- 5.46 The maximum amount of pocket money which can be earned in junior justice is £1.80. However in the senior justice unit a grading system operates whereby a boy moves from the lowest grade (grade 3) through grade 2 and ultimately into grade 1. Movement from one grade to the next depends on the accumulation of weekly marks ie: boys commence in grade 3, move up to grade 2 with 80 marks, and when another 180 marks are accumulated achieve grade 1 status. Maximum pocket money in grade 3 is £1.25, grade 2 £1.70 and in grade 1 £2.50. The actual amount given depends on the marks achieved ie: a deduction is made for every mark lost. However a bonus of £1 is given to boys in all grades who achieve 20 marks on any week and grade 1 boys also get an extra days home leave every 4 weeks. In general the Inspectors feel that the amount of pocket money given is meagre by today's standards and a review is recommended. It is also recommended that an amount of money should be made available to each boy on his birthday and at Christmas.
- 5.47 Regardless of the amount of pocket money awarded, boys are not allowed access to it unless they are going home on leave. In practice they are given credit up to the amount of pocket money received in the school tuck shop. Staff claim that if the boys were given cash there would be problems involving theft, bullying, etc. This is recognised by the Inspectors, but on balance they feel that young people need practical experience of managing their own finances and that this should be given priority over the other considerations.

#### CLOTHING

5.48 The Inspectors observed that many of the boys in the training school had an unkempt appearance and for the most part were dressed in clothing which was dull, institutional and showed signs of wear and tear. It was found that all clothing is bought in bulk by the matron or her assistant and held in a central store. New items may be issued to committed boys only when there is a need eg: when they have grown out of their own clothing. However secondhand articles are laundered and issued particularly to boys on remand. The matron explained that she finds bulk purchasing economical and fears having an overspend. However she did not know what amount the school budgets annually for buying clothes. The Inspectors were shown the clothing held in the store and found that some of it was unfashionable. The matron agreed that some items eg: shirts and jeans had to be restyled by the seamstress before the boys would wear them. Some materials and clothing had been held in the central store for many years and were gradually being disposed of through a charitable organisation. However there were other articles eg: ski

# SPT-18389

jackets which had been purchased recently at a keen price but issuing these to boys only perpetuates their look-a-like institional appearance. It was concluded that the present system of purchasing and allocating clothing should be reviewed and the following recommendations are made to assist this process:-

- an amount of money should be identified annually for the purchase of new/replacement clothing for each committed boy;
- ii. a boy's need for clothing should be identified by his key worker;
- iii. each boy should be taken by staff to shop for his own clothes and purchases should be made using cash within the constraints of the budget;
  - iv. secondhand clothing should only be used in an emergency or for rough work;
  - v. willful distruction pilfering and selling of clothing should be dealt with on an individual casework basis by the key worker

# SPT-18390

CARE 6

> The care component in St Patrick's comprises of 3 units. 6.1 Chalets 1 and 2, built in 1969/70, is a double unit and is located to the rear of the main school building on an elevated site, adjacent to the farm. Chalet 3, formerly a pre-release hostel, built in 1974, lies to the right-hand side of the main entrance to the school. At present these units have a further designation; Chalets 1 and 2 (junior care) and Chalet 3 (senior care). Although there are no specific policy statements for Care the general Policy Objectives as outlined at para 5.4 apply to this section of the school.

#### Organisation and Management

- 6.2 At present the senior deputy director, assisted by a deputy assistant director, is responsible for the day to day management of the care side of St Patrick's. However in practice Chalet 3, known as senior care, is managed by the deputy director (justice) and the staff are supported from that side of the school. The chalet is therefore seen as part of senior justice. This inappropriate method of management may stem from the days when the chalet was a senior justice resource. It is the view of the Inspectors that this present arrangement, not only departs from the policy of segregation, but is untidy in terms of accountability, confusing to staff and boys and to this and it is recommended that Chalet 3 becomes the management responsibility of the senior deputy director and that the division between care and justice be seen to be clear and unambiguous. The use of the sub-division of care into junior and senior is felt to be unnecessary and it is recommended that these terms be dropped and this side of the school should be known as Care. It will be necessary to supplement the senior management of care and this has been referred to in Chapter 3 of this report.
- 6.3
- Seemingly at present boys can be transferred between care and justice for varying periods of time mainly for disruptive behaviour. Although not widespread the Inspectors cannot accept this practice and indeed, after new legislation is introduced, it will not be possible to pursue this policy. The reasons behind the transfer and other aspects of the practice will be explored later, but is recommended that the present arrangements be reviewed and the issue of movement between the sections of the school be addressed as a matter of urgency.

### Staffing

The present staffing at unit level is as follows; deputy 6.4 assistant director, senior residential social worker and 14 residential social workers. These staff are supplemented by others working extraneous duties. Night cover is provided by a group of night supervisers; 1 in

SPT-18391

each unit. In addition domestic staff are attached to the unit.

The staff represents a wide range of age, skills and 6.5 qualifications. Of the group all but 3 are males and no female holds a senior management post. The night supervisors are all males. With the exception of the deputy director (education), the teachers and instructors performing extraneous duties are also male. The deputy director (education) performs a quasi management function in Chalets 1 and 2. Prior to reorganisation the deputy director (education) performed a dual role between care and education. At present she is responsible for, inter alia, admissions to the chalets, and general liaison between education and care. The Inspectors feel it is necessary to examine this post, within the overall review of the senior staffing structure, and reference has also been made to it in paragraph 9.9.

6.6 The present deputy assistant director acts in more of a senior residential social worker role, providing senior cover to Chalets 1 and 2. On the opposite shift this function is provided by a senior residential social worker. If the deputy assistant director is to satisfy a full senior management role, as his post suggests, it is recommended that a senior residential social worker be appointed and allocated to Chalet 1.

- 6.7 No member of staff in care has a job description. This makes the task difficult, in terms of accountability, decision taking and clarity of job functioning. To this end it is recommended that job descriptions for all care staff be drawn up by management.
- 6.8 Although there are no regular meetings between unit staff and senior management, twice weekly staff meetings are held on Tuesdays and Wednesdays. These meetings are used to discuss the boys progress/behaviour and any other general issues that may emerge. No minutes of these meetings were available for examination.
- 6.9 Staff feel they are well supported by their senior managers, although no formal system of professional supervision is in operation in the care units. The Inspectors would stress that professional supervision, together with a programme of in-service training are essential elements in staff development and enable staff to perform in a more confident and effective manner. It is recommended that a system of professional supervision of residential social workers, senior residential social workers and deputy assistant directors be introduced as soon as practicable. With training and preparation the Inspectors feel that professional supervision can be given on the basis of direct line management.

- 6.10 It is recommended that a programme of in-service training be developed within the school. Similarly, for new staff, it is essential that a structured induction programme be initiated and this is recommended. There are a number of methods of mounting in-service training courses and the Inspectors are available to discuss this when management is in a position to plan and implement such a policy.
- 6.11 In general terms the staff present, as a committed group who have had to adapt to changes in the past and who will have to accept many changes in the immediate future. The Inspectors feel there is a good level of skill, and ability in the staff group and, with encouragement and effective leadership, they are capable of delivering an effective service to the young people.

### The Needs and Problems of the Young People

- 6.12 At present all of the young people in care have been committed, or placed in this section of the school, on welfare considerations. Because of the present arrangements young people on Place of Safety Orders or Interim Fit Person Orders are mixed with boys who are the subject of Training School Orders. There are many disadvantages in this practice, in terms of disruption to the group and the problems of operating an effective reception and short-term care strategy. The Inspectors are aware of the director's plans to establish a Reception Unit for care boys in the main building, adjacent to the Assessment Unit. This proposal is welcomed and should do much to provide a more effective short-term care and pre-allocation service.
- 6.13 On the Census Day there were 34 young people on roll in Care. Of this number 28 were in residence, 3 were on extended leave, 2 on home leave and 1 temporarily resident in another training school. There were 29 committed boys and 5 were on a short-term care basis. Of the 29 comitted boys 10 were education cases. The age range of the young people was from 11 years and 10 months to 17 years and 10 months. In discussion with the staff they felt that most of the boys had been appropriately placed. Many of the boys displayed varying levels of disturbance and difficulty. Absconding and aggressive behaviour are problems that staff have to face on a daily basis. Many of the young people have previously been placed in children's homes and they were referred to the school from all H&SS Boards. The following is a breakdown of referrals by Social Services, Units of Management.

## Unit of Management Referrals North and West Belfast - 9

Lisburn		- 1
Antrim and	Ballymena	- 2

SPT-18393

Larne/Carrickfergus and Newtownabbey	- 1
Londonderry/Limavady and Strabane	
Omagh	- 1
Armagh and Dungannon	
Newry and Mourne	
Craigavon and Banbridge	- 2

#### Education

Belfast Education and Library Board - 7 South Eastern Education and Library Board - 2 Southern Education and Library Board - 1

6.14

The following vignettes prepared by the staff in all 3 care units are included to give the reader an indication of the nature of the problems facing staff.

was referred by the Social Services being the subject of a Fit Person Order at the time of admission. It was felt that he was beyond the control of his family, involving himself in various delinquent acts in the community. The social worker believed that his father was physically punishing in an attempt to control him within the natural family environment and subsequently the relationship between father and son was severely damaged. , like most adolescents, suffers from frequent mood swings, but in a subdued state, responds to counselling and can easily be controlled. In the unit is readily accepted now as a joker and has considerably substantiated his position in the peer group. 15 lacking in the various social graces and particular attention has had to be paid to his personal hygiene. His attitude to his personal attire is poor but may be a condition of his previous placements in care. There were problems with the home situation so much that when leave was first granted to he refused to go home. Strong efforts were made to strengthen the bond between and his father. The fact that his father spoke well of in court (offence previously mentioned) is a measure of the progress made in this area.

was admitted to St Patrick's school in June 1986 on a Place of Safety Order, following a serious physical assault on a female member of staff in a children's home. This assault was only one in a long catalogue of incidents where he had damaged property or persons. In the youngest of three children. His mother has been married twice, both marriages having broken down and for the past number of years she has been cohabiting with another man. presents as of a tall boy for his age. His large

build is usually hunched over, hands shoved deep into his pockets. He walks around with his head down, looking thoroughly unhappy and dejected. He is very untidy and generally his appearance could be described as scruffy. In the early period of his stay, continually tested staff to see what limitations would be placed on his behaviour, and he found it difficult to communicate his feelings or emotions. Gradually he began to accept that both he and his mother would have to work at tackling the problems of relationship building. His outbursts of aggression reduced both in frequency and duration and he began to exercise greater control over his temper. continues to find it difficult to sustain relationships with both his peers and adults, tending to be domineering and demanding, however his relationship with his mother has improved to such an extent that he is soon to begin mid week leave.

has 2 sisters, both older, and a younger brother. Mother and father are separated because of the father's excessive drinking and physical violence towards the family. For some time experienced a conflict of loyalty between his mother and father. This manifested itself in staying out late at night, demanding money and drinking. He was subsequently involved in a burglary, the outcome of which is still unresolved. After a continuance of this behaviour he was placed in St Patrick's on a Place of Safety Order and subsequently a Training School Order was imposed. Since early November he has been employed in a local YTP scheme. His response there has been generally fair and a possible transfer to another such scheme in the boy's local area feature in the future plans for him. Prospects for an early release seem possible. Relationships at home with his mother and the rest of the family are stable. Whether is capable of sustaining this pattern will remain to be seen. s maturity will be put to the test on his release in the near future. His inability to compromise in a group situation may be his undoing, but he has survived in the YTP scheme and hopefully will continue to do so in his local area.

6.15 In general terms, the boys present considerable problems of management. Young people in care are becoming more difficult to control and staff have had to develop a range of skills and, perhaps new tolerance levels to enable them to carry out meaningful intervention. It is hoped that the strategies suggested in paragraphs 6.10-6.11 will facilitate this process.

### **OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL**

....

SPT-18395

Appraisal of the Care Units

Chalet 1

- 6.16 Chalet 1, although part of the double unit referred to earlier, operates quite autonomously from Chalet 2. The staff team comprises of the deputy assistant director, 5 residential social workers and a domestic assistant. In addition the team are supplemented, from time to time, by 2 other members of staff who perform extraneous duties. The chalet has accommodation for 11 boys, and at the time of the inspection 7 were in residence.
- 6.17 Adjoining Chalet 1 is a staff house, which is now unoccupied and is used as additional office accommodation. Chalet 1 lies to the left of a large communal entrance hall, which has a central staircase leading to the upper floor. The accommdoation on the ground floor comprises of a lounge/dining-room, with a tiled floor and a carpet square surrounding an open coal fire. The walls are papered, well maintained and a long window gives panoramic views across the City and Lagan Valley. The dining area has 4 tables and chairs and an adjoining kitchen is adequately equipped. The lounge is furnished with a variety of easy chairs, TV and pictures. There is a laundry room which contains a washing machine, tumble dryer, iron and ironing board. An ablution area contains 2 wash hand basins, 2 urinals, 2 wcs and 10 lockers usually used for "outside" clothes. The ground floor accommodation is completed by a "quiet" or visiting room. This is a pleasantly furnished and carpeted room which is a useful resource for both boys and visitors.
- 6.18 The sleeping accommodation comprises of 2 single and 3 three-bedded rooms for the boys and a staff sleeping in room, complete with wc and shower. There is a washing/toilet area which has 5 wash hand basins, drinking fountain, 2 urinals, 2 wcs plus a bathroom and shower. There is also a heated towel rail. The bedrooms have built in wardrobes for each boy. The floors were carpeted and there were a few personal possessions in view. Each bed is new with matching duvet covers and pillow cases plus a bedside locker and chair.
- 6.19 Fire fighting equipment comprises of 2 fire extinguishers on the upper floor and an asbestos blanket and fire extinguisher in the kitchen. There was no key in the break glass container adjacent to the communicating door to the staff accommodation which is used as a fire escape route. It is understood that staff carry a key to this door at all times. Fire drills have not been held in recent years and this serious situation is referred to in detail in paragraph 14.5. However it is necessary to highlight again the need for regular fire drills, especially in settings where short-term children are accommodated and where this leads to a fairly frequent turnover in the population.
- 6.20
- There was no heating in Chalets 1 and 2 at the time of the inspection. This was due to a major defect in the hot

## SPT-18396

water system, which was under repair while the inspection was in progress. The coal fire in the lounge is a focal point for warmth, TV, games and conversation and it is to be hoped that the chalcts' heating system is now fully operational. Its non-operation in mid winter may point to the need for a more systematic approach to maintenance.

### Keyworker

6.21 Λ key worker system has been in operation for the past 4/5 months. Each boy is allocated to a particular member of staff and the concept is described in detailed in paragraph 5.27. Most of counselling is done on an individual basis and formal group work is not used.

### Records

All of the case records of the boys were examined. The 6.22 files are divided up in the same categories that are used throughout the school. The records were kept up to date and there was evidence of some good recording. In general the content, method of recording and format is satisfactory but much of the detail is factual rather than analytical. The skill of good recording can be acquired and developed and to this end it is recommended that recording be examined with a view to improving the quality of the work. There was little evidence of detailed written planning for the young people. Staff may have a general idea about treatment strategies but it is difficult to follow these through effectively in the absence of a clear statement of intent. The subject of planning and contracts will be returned to in the section dealing with reviews.

### Chalet 2

- 6.23 Physically this chalet differs little from Chalet 1. The range of accommodation is similar. On the ground floor there is a games room in place of the quiet room in Chalet 1. This room is used extensively and is considered to be a useful asset. The sleeping accommodation is similar to Chalet 1. The staff team comprises of a senior residential social worker, 5 residential social workers, a domestic assistant and 2 additional extraneous duties staff.
- 6.24 Adjoining the Chalet is a staff house which is occupied by a married couple. The decor in Chalet 2 shows some signs of wear and redecoration in the near future will be necessary. The decor in the lounge is green with matching curtains. There was a pleasant relaxed feel to this Chalet.
- 6.25 Upstairs the basic layout is similar to that in Chalet 1. In the ablution area some shower curtains were missing and need replacing. There is little evidence of personal

## SPT-18397

belongings in the bedrooms and not all of the rooms had chairs. These material details require attention and it is recommended that management examine the situation as a matter of urgency.

### Records

6.26 All of the records are maintained satisfactorily. There was evidence of some good recording and purposeful work. As with the records in Chalet 1 some improvements could be made and it is hoped that all staff will have the opportunity to avail of training in this area of work.

Chalet 3

- 6.27 Chalet 3 is the unit which is located just off the main driveway. It is referred to as the senior care chalet and the confused management arrangements, and unnecessary divisions, have been highlighted at the beginning of this Chapter. There are a number of anomalies in the operation and the day to day functioning of the unit. It is acknowledged that plans, which involve major refurbishing, are in train for this unit, when it is proposed that its role will change to that of a secure facility. Nevertheless, the management arrangements need to be reviewed. There is a need for the unit to function quite separately from justice, which includes such basic changes as the files being held in the chalet and the staff feeling part of care and not of the senior school.
- 6.28 At present this unit operates for only 4½ days per week. It is recommended that if a 7 day operation is necessary the unit should be staffed to facilite this rather than the present arrangements when young people are decanted to the senior school at the weekend.
- 6.29 Chalet 3 is a single, two storey unit with adjoining staff accommodation which is occupied. A games room and office open off the main entrance hall. Other ground floor accommodation includes a large lounge, dining-room, kitchen, locker room and laundry room. The accommodation is in a good state of decoration and is well maintained. There is a pleasant open and bright feeling to the unit. There are 3 single and 4 double bedrooms upstairs, together with a staff sleeping in room and a night superviser's office. In addition one of the Brothers lives in a staff flat. The bathroom area consists of 4 wash hand basins, 2 wcs and 3 shower cubicles.
- 6.30 In this chalet fire fighting equipment consists of 4 extinguishers and 1 break glass point inside the front door. There are no heat or smoke censors. No fire drills have been carried out in recent times. It is understood that a fire inspection has taken place recently and a modern alarm and fire fighting system will be incorporated into the refurbishing programme.

## SPT-18398

6.31 At the time of the inspection 8 places out of the 11 were occupied. All of the boys are regarded as senior, ie the age range is 15 to  $17\frac{1}{2}$  years. They were all the subjects of Training School Orders.

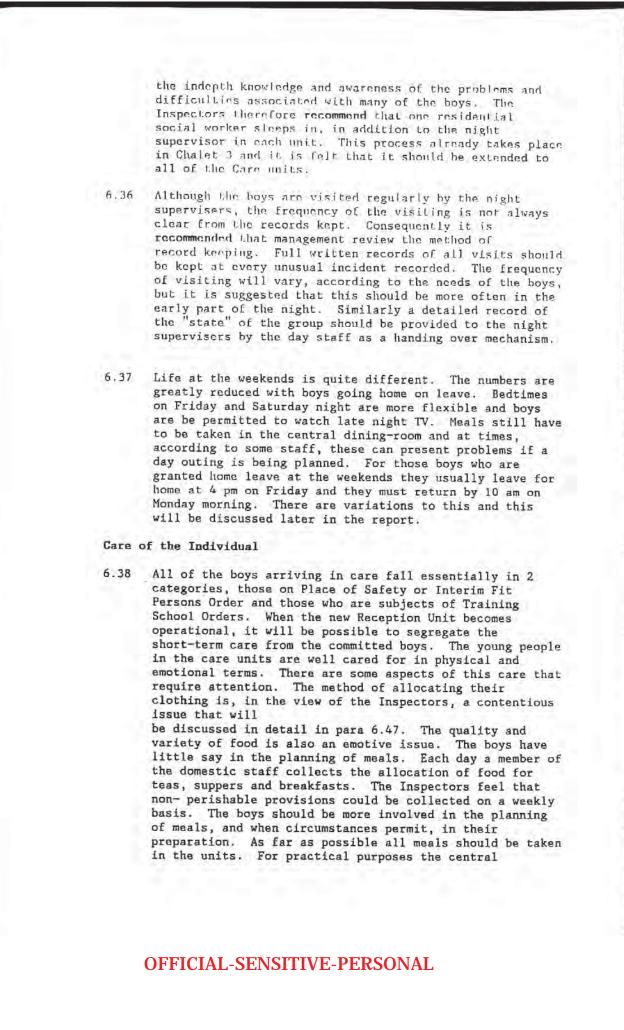
### Records

6.32 All of the case records were examined and found to be up to date. The same comments about factual, as opposed to analytical recording apply. Again there was an absence of an apparent plan for each boy. Some of the staff indicated that they knew what was being planned for the boys, but this was not apparent from the records. In terms of accountability and continuity clearly defined plans are an essential part of the residential task. Other records kept include, a record of release dates, transfers to Lisnevin and the senior school, and a diary which is a record of the staff and boys present.

### Daily Life

- In examining the daily life in care it should be borne in 6.33 mind that, although there are 3 separate units currently in operation, each with its own ethos and approach to the residential task, apart from slight adjustments in timings, the pattern of daily life is followed almost uniformly. In the case of boys on YTP schemes, who are called earlier, most of the boys rise at 8.10 am. Breakfast is served in the units at 8.35 am and afterwards the boys assist with the dishes and tidying and making beds. There are no standard rotas for duties. School commences at 9.10 am with "line up". There is a 15 minute break at 10.45 which is supervised, within the main building, by residential social workers. Lunch is provided between 1 and 2 pm and the meal is taken in the main dining hall. School finishes for the day at 3.30 pm.
- 6.34 Commencing at 4 pm there is a structured programme of activities which includes swimming, football and various activities are held in the games hall. Tea is taken in the Chalets at approximately 5.20 pm and after 6 pm there are further activities both on and off the campus. Suppers are served in the units and during the week bedtimes are between 9.30 and 10.00 pm. Most of the staff finish at 9.30 pm when the night supervisors come on duty although on most nights one of the day staff remains on duty until 10 pm.
  - 6.35 Night cover is provided by 2 night supervisers in Chalets 1 and 2 and 1 in Chalet 3. There are no sleeping in staff in Chalets 1 and 2. The Inspectors feel that, although it is important to have waking night staff, it is essential that there should be a sleeping in presence in each unit. The night supervisors provide adequate cover and appear to be well acquainted with their duties but they do not have

SPT-18399



dining-room is used everyday. It is recommended that this should operate as a school canteen during the week and much more flexibility should be permitted in preparing lunches in the care units at weekends. Apart from pursuing a process of normalisation in relation to food, there is much to be gained in terms of independence training. Similarly with laundry and ironing, there should be a programme which enables the boys to acquire, what has been termed, survival/life skills. Many of the boys being released have no home base to return to and it is essential that they are equipped with the necessary skills to enable them to function independently in the community.

#### Visiting

6.39 Every effort is made to maintain links between the boys and their families. Visiting by parents or relatives is not denied at any reasonable time. Maintaining links is a difficult aspect of residential care. With many of the boys going home at weekends, some travelling substantial distances, visiting, in the units is fairly infrequent, with the possible exception of the short-term boys.

#### Reviews

- 6.40 The subject of the review process is referred to in detail in paragraph 7.7 and 7.8. The need for an effective system of reviews cannot be emphasised too strongly. Although the committed boys are reviewed every 6 months it was evident, from a scrutiny of their files, that often reviews become a mechanical process. The recommendations made in paragraph 7.8 are drawn to the attention of management once again and the Inspectors feel that new arrangements must be put into practice as soon as possible. Until such times as it is, staff will be able to claim that their inaction is due to disagreement with plans or a lack of understanding of what was agreed.
- In paragraph 13.3 the duties of the Management Roard and 6.41 their role in licensing has been highlighted. The Inspectors feel that, in keeping with the practice in other training schools, the Management Board's sub committee on licensing could be extended, by way of co-option and their remit developed to act as an external review committee. For example, they should adjudicate on applications for extended leave and oversee a formal review of the young people at 12 months and at 3 monthly intervals thereafter. It should also be possible for the young person to attend their reviews so that the subcommittee would be aware of all aspects of the care of the young people in their charge. Such a forum would also guard against any suggestion that young people in training schools are being denied access to an independent body should they wish to draw any concerns to persons outside of line management. The establishment of a Licensing

SPT-18401

Committee with duties, as outlined above, is recommended.

### Behaviour/Discipline

- 6.42 Many of the boys come to care from situations where behaviour is regarded as uncontrollable, and where discipline is non existent or inconsistent. Discipline can only be maintained by close supervision, with boundaries being set and unacceptable behaviour confronted. There is no formal mark system in operation in Chalets 1 and 2 although such a practice exists in Chalet 3. A variety of sanctions are imposed for indiscipline. Boys may be denied the opportunity of watching TV, outings may be cancelled and sometimes all or part of weekend leave might be forfeited. Pocket money may also be forfeited for bad behaviour.
- 6.43 One worrying practice that came to the attention of the Inspectors, and reference has been made to it earlier in this Chapter, is the policy of removing children from care to justice for behaviour/disciplinary problems. This practice mitigates against the agreed concept of segregation and it must be pointed out that when the new Child Care legislation is introduced it will not be possible to do so. In order to prepare, for the post legislative changes, systems of control, including the use of secure accommodation in Chalet 3 when it becomes available, will need to be considered. Sadly, at present, the Inspectors discovered an attitude, amongst some staff, that removal, possibly off the campus was an all too frequent response. There is a need, through supervision, intensive and readily available support, to bring about an attitudinal change, where tolerance levels can be raised and greater emphasis placed on "staying with" the young persons through a particularly aggressive phase.

#### Marks System and Pocket Money

ŝ.

6.44 As has already been pointed out there is no marks system in operation in Chalets 1 and 2 but there is an allocation of marks in Chalet 3, possibly in line with that operating in senior justice. As far as possible staff in Chalets 1 and 2 try to reinforce good behaviour and reward it accordingly. A boy (junior) receives £1.90 per week. The allocation of money is divided between the school and the unit. A boy receives £1.00 from his unit and up to 90 pence from the school. This system is described in detail in paragraph 9.5. Again if the boys' behaviour/ performance in school is unacceptable he can lose all or part of his weekend leave. The Inspectors had difficulty in accepting the logic of this policy. It must be stressed that if a young person's behaviour in class is unacceptable he must be confronted with it and an appropriate response made. It is therefore

recommended that teachers explore alterantive methods of maintaining discipline in classrooms.

If, in a community setting, a young person misbehaves at 6.45 school, there is no requirement on parents to keep him in at weekends. Indeed appropriate responses ought to be taken by responsible parents. This begs the question why should a practice, different from that which pertains in outside schools, and even allowing for the specialist nature of St Patrick's, be permitted to operate in the residential setting? The Inspectors were made aware of incidents where unilateral decisions were taken involving pocket money and leave. The Inspectors see the key worker as being the central person in this area of practice. There should be a system of liaison which would ensure that teachers and residential staff are working towards a common goal. If the degree of behaviour or misconduct is such, that withdrawal of home leave is considered essential then, so be it, and the Inspectors would not disagree with that policy. What is evident is that, even if the problem is not as widespread as has been suggested, there is need for the boy to see that he is being fairly treated and is not being caught up in a system that leads to confusion and disagreement. If a boy is denied weekend leave possibly, when his key worker may have made family plans for the weekend, it might come as no surprise that the thought of absconding will be uppermost in his mind. A recommendation for change is made in paragraph 9.5 and the comments made in this section should be seen as a reinforcement for the need of a speedy resolution of this area of practice.

When a boy is allocated pocket money, apart from going 6.46 home, he does not have access to it. It is a paper transaction where the money is "put in the tuck shop" for him. The Inspectors accept that when money is around bullying, extortion and theft may take place. However, if boys are to be given a responsible attitude towards handling money, they must experience its use and the problems associated with it. The Inspectors feel that the present level of pocket money, both for senior and junior boys, is inadequate and that senior management should make appropriate representations to the Northern Ireland Office about this. Boys in St Patrick's are not given an allowance for birthdays or Christmas presents. This is rather sad. The level of money, allocated for such occasions, in other training schools, is not up to that received by young people in children's homes. However, as a start, the Inspectors recommend that the issues contained in this paragraph be examined, and that an appropriate level of funding, say £5.00 per person, be introduced for Christmas and birthdays.

## SPT-18403

### Clothing

6.47 The method of allocating clothing from a central store is dealt with in detail in para 5.48 of this report. It cannot be stressed enough that the Inspectors find this practice, irrespective of the economic arguments, to be totally unacceptable. Many of the boys in care have a scruffy and unkempt appearance. The clothes give the boys an institutional appearance and there is a suspicion that they have little pride in their appearance. The arguments about ownership, choice, fashion and current trends in clothing are well known. Clothing is such an important part of the adolescent culture and this is constantly reinforced by TV commercials. This ought to be seen as the day of the "trainers" and not of the "plimsoles".

#### Smoking

6.48 Many of the boys in care have well established patterns of smoking. The boys, irrespective of their age, are allowed to smoke as many cigarettes per day as their pocket money permits. The Inspectors would draw to the attention of management, that it is illegal to sell cigarettes to young poople under 16 years of age. The health education dimension must be examined. Concerns were expressed to the Inspectors by the medical and nursing staff about the level of smoking and the spread of infection (herpes) possibly from the sharing of cigarettes between the hoys. It is recommended that a policy on smoking be developed, with a programme of positive incentives to encourage a reduction or abstinence from smoking.

### Sex Education

6.49 There is no programme of sex education for boys in St Patrick's. This is an aspect of health education that, should be addressed, especially with the risk of AIDS or other sexually transmitted diseases, to say nothing of the encouragement of a more responsible and thoughtful approach by the boys to their girlfriends or any female. It is accepted that some staff would feel uncertain about discussing sex education. Concerns were expressed by the medical officer about the level of sexual activity that some of the boys are engaged in. There are many sources of information on sex education. It may be that management would wish to seek, in the first instance, information from the Catholic Marriage Advisory Council. Within the school the medical officer or the nursing staff could be involved in a programme of counselling or education. It is recommended that management initiate a programme of sex education within the school as suggested.

SPT-18404

#### 7. ASSESSMENT UNIT

- 7.1 The Assessment Unit in St Patrick's was first established in 1979 as a response to increase demands from the Juvenile Courts for a more detailed and comprehensive pre-committal assessment. Since the early 1980's there has been an increasing demand for a remand facility and work with short term care and remands has, apparently, expanded considerably.
- 7.2 The present Assessment Unit moved into its new refurbished accommodation in January 1987. The unit occupies a wing on the junior school side of the main building. It comprises of a general office, case conference room, 2 offices for the assessment staff, an office for the visiting psychologist, interview room and toilet. The decor is fresh, bright and welcoming and is well maintained. It contrasts with the adjoining parts of the school which tend to be rather drab and poorly maintained.
- 7.3 The staff team comprises of an assistant director and 2 social workers. All are professionally qualified. The team is assisted by a secretary who has clerical assistance of an ACE worker and a person on youth attachment.

#### Function of the Assessment Unit

- 7.4 In the Staff Handbook the function of the Assessment Unit is described as follows. "Members of the assessment team have an initial case load comprising referrals in both areas of care and justice. Their brief is to:-
  - Liaise with external agencies (courts, social services, probation and other agencies presently in contact with the young person).
  - ii. To designate assessment tasks and the support and development of staff engaged in assessment.
  - iii. To organise post referral meetings and case conferences on an ongoing basis.
  - iv. To ensure appropriate referrals and assessment in treatment to the medical, psychologists and psychiatric services at the training schools.
  - v. To compile a comprehensive post committal assessment report for each young person.
- 7.5 The assessment unit covers the areas of care, education and justice and it is not attached to any specific area of the school. It is felt by management that this form of centralised assessment ensures a system whereby staff can develop the necessary professional skills and competence, arrange the necessary back up from social workers, teachers, psychologists and other appropriate agencies.

## SPT-18405

The Inspectors feel, that although there are benefits to this approach, practice within the school suggests that there are inherent dangers in the centralised system of reviews and will suggest a major structural change later in this section.

#### Records

- -7.6 An efficient and well organised record system is maintained in the assessment unit. The record keeping is probably the best in the school. Each record file is divided into the following sections:- pre-admission, initial assessment, progress/behaviour, education, psychiatric/psychological and community care. This appears to be the format adopted throughout the school. In addition detailed court reports are prepared which covers the area of family composition, pre-admission information, response to placements, assessment and concludes with summary and recommendations.
- 7.7 A selection of files were examined viz senior and junior justice, senior and junior care and Place of Safety Orders. The files were well maintained, current and clearly set out the nature of the work undertaken. The files contain minutes of ongoing reviews conducted by the assessment unit staff, in conjunction with care and justice staff. The keeping of the minutes of the reviews requires attention. At present much of the written detail is almost conversational and often the proceedings reported bear little reference to decisions taken at the preceding review. There is little evidence of written reports being submitted by residential social workers, although it is understood that they do contribute verbally to the review. The structure and process of the reviews is satisfactory but, in terms of outcomes, plans and directions, the way ahead is not always clear.

#### Reviews

- 7.8 The fact that reviews are held and organised at a central point presents, in the opinion of the Inspectors, problems in terms of implementation of any agreed strategy. Therefore, in order to improve the effectiveness of reviews the following recommendations are made:-
  - Reviews should become the responsibility of the respective units/sectors within the school.
  - They should be chaired by a senior member of staff of that division.
  - iii. The minutes should clearly set out decisions reached, action to be taken and who is accountable for each part or all of the plan.
  - iv. Residential social workers should supply written reports to the review.

- Young people should be encouraged to altend their reviews and, if competent, contribute either orally or in writing to the review.
- vi. Copies of the review minutes should be held in each young person's file.
- 7.9 At present boys admitted to the school on Place of Safety Orders, or on remand for offences, are accommodated in either the junior chalets or, in the case of offenders, in the junior or senior school. Proposals for a reception unit, in the first instance for care cases, have been put to the Inspectors. This proposal is welcomed and endorsed by the Inspectors and to this end it is recommended that management examine the logistics of such a strategy and the role of the present assistant director (assessment) be reviewed so that he might become more fully involved in the reception and initial assessment of all young people coming into the school.
  - 7.10 The present reception arrangements are not totally satisfactory. It is recommended that the process of referral, intake and reception be vested in the existing assessment unit and that this aspect of residential care be divorced from the units dealing with committed boys. Consideration will have to be given in future to the development of a reception unit for boys on the justice side of the school.
  - 7.11 The Inspectors acknowledged the considerable skills and expertise that currently exists within the assessment unit. They recommend that the assistant director (assessment) becomes responsible for the training and skills development of the unit staff in structuring and management reviews and the general oversight of the process until such times as unit staff are competent to act independently.

SPT-18407

### FIELD SOCIAL WORK DEPARTMENT

8.

- 8.1 Paragraph 49 of the Training School Rules (Northern Ireland) 1952, provides that the Board of Management shall appoint "a suitably qualified person" to carry out the after care of pupils when they leave the school. Traditionally in St Patrick's this function has been carried out by the field social work department at the directors request. However the publication of the Report of the Children and Young Persons Review Group (Black Report) heralded a major policy change in St Patrick's training school, relating particularly to the length of time spent in residence care by boys sent there on a Training School Order. As a consequence, the role of the field social work department has developed to encompass the following areas of work:-
  - a. supervision/support of former residents who are on (1) extended leave, (2) licence, or (3) supervision;
  - representing St Patrick's training school and boys committed to the school in Court;
  - c. general welfare duties for boys on remand, detention or place of safety orders;
  - d. providing a through care service.

### Staffing

8.2 The field social work department is comprised of four staff ie a senior social worker and three fieldworkers. The senior and one of the team members are professionally qualified and another has applied for a place on a training course leading to the Certificate of Qualification in Social Work. The longest serving member of the team is unqualified. Secretarial support is provided by administrative and clerical staff in the general office.

#### Accommodation

8 3 The fieldwork team occupy one office in the administrative block located at the front of the school. Each has a desk and chair and access to one of the telephones. Two filing cabinets contain the files on all boys coming with the purview of the fieldwork department. It is held that the location of the office provides easy access to the fieldworkers by residential staff and boys, and by parents and relatives visiting the school. However, as there is seldom room in the busy office to hold interviews, these take place in the staff tea room whenever it is not in use. It was observed also that it can be difficult to carry on a telephone conversation in the office without tolerating considerable background noise. The Inspectors concluded that the office space and facilities for interviewing, currently used by the fieldwork department, were inadequate

and it is recommended that steps should be taken to expand it or if there is no other alternative the department should be located elsewhere within the St Patrick's complex.

#### Organisation of the Fieldwork Department

8.4 All cases are allocated to team members by the senior social worker who also carries a caseload. He is advised by the administration of new committals and each case is allocated at the weekly team meeting using the criteria set out below. Three factors are taken into account when new work is being distributed: (i) the boys location within the school, (ii) his home address and (iii) the case history. One fieldworker deals almost exclusively with senior boys, care and justice, while the other two share the junior boys. The senior social worker draws his work from every unit within the school, though he and the other qualified social worker share all cases where child abuse is confirmed or suspected. However each fieldworker also covers a territorial area roughly corresponding to the northern, southern, eastern and western parts of the Province with all four staff serving the greater Belfast. conurbation. While there were no complaints from the staff, it was noted that there was an uneven distribution of casework, although court and general family welfare work may compensate for this to some extent.

### Extended Leave

8.5 Extended leave is an administrative procedure used extensively by the training schools to enable the return of a young person to the community before he has completed one year in residential care. In St Patrick's this decision is normally taken at a case review following which, with the director's approval, the boy is allowed to go home on extended leave. The fieldworkers are party to the reviewing process and would advise on the suitability of the boy's home circumstances and accommodation. When extended leave is granted the boy and his parents are required to make a contract, written or verbal, with the fieldworker, which sets out the training school's expectations with regard to behaviour, school attendance and employment. The consequences of failing to comply, ie breaking the contract, with the school are also spelled out by the fieldworker.

#### Licence/Supervision

8.6 After a minimum period of 12 months has elapsed since the making of a Training School Order, boys already on extended leave, can be formally licensed from St Patrick's. Presently this function is carried out by the supervising fieldworker. He will ask the young person, in the presence of his parent or guardian, to sign an official licence form which the fieldworker countersigns. The form stipulates

SPT-18409

the conditions to the licence with regard to duration, place of residence, to whom he is licensed, and spells out the possibility of recall to the training school should the terms of licensing be broken. Licence is followed by a statutory period of supervision and together they can aggregate to a three year period during which the fieldwork department is involved. At the time of the Inspection there were 18 boys on extended leave, 39 on licence and 38 on supervision.

- 8.7 Reference has been made elsewhere in this report to the need for the Management Board to be involved in the formal licensing of boys from St Patrick's as required by the Training School Rules. However with the earlier release of boys on extended leave/licence from St Patrick's, the Inspectors feel that it is important that relationships, developed with residential staff should be maintained for a period following release. This should provide continuity of care for the young person during his first weeks in the community. Therefore it is recommended that, for a period of up to three months following discharge, the boy's "key worker" should continue to be involved, in conjunction with the fieldworker, in supporting him.
- 8.8 However the fieldworker will still retain responsibility for finding suitable employment for boys who are eligible for work and for ensuring that, where their home circumstances are unsuitable, alternative accommodation is found. In this regard the Inspectors saw a number of assessment reports made by the fieldworkers on premises vetted for lodging boys and the quality of the reports was excellent. Reviewing of boys on extended leave/licence is also the responsibility of the fieldworkers and presently these are carried out at their team meetings. The Inspectors feel that this is an important procedure which should be carried out formally at intervals of not less than three months and this is recommended. The review should be chaired by the senior social worker and minutes should be taken.

Court Work

8.9 The fieldwork department is responsible for providing court reports for boys on extended leave/licence from the school and this is considered to be appropriate. However, a great deal of the fieldworker's time is spent representing boys, committed to the school, in court when they are appearing on charges not dealt with previously. Providing this type of service to courts, throughout Northern Ireland, is onerous and time consuming. The senior social worker estimates that an aggregate of 20 hours weekly is spent in court by the fieldworkers, without taking into account travelling or preparation time. It is understood that this policy was introduced by management, so as to provide a consistent service to the courts and in order to maintain adequate levels of staffing cover in the training school. In view of the demands that service in the courts is placing on the fieldwork team it is recommended that their involvement in court work is examined by management, with a view to modifying this service and to involving, as far as is practicable, residential staff in some aspects of this work.

#### General Welfare Duties

- 8.10 The fieldwork team open a file on each boy as soon as he is committed to St Patrick's and his case is allocated. However the level of involvement with boys in the school varies according to the circumstances of each case. The senior social worker tries to ensure that the office is staffed on week days between 9 am and 5 pm, during which. period a general welfare service is provided for boys and their families. It is anticipated that in the future much of this work will be carried out by "key workers" in conjunction with the fieldwork team. One specific function, carried out for "senior boys" by one of the fieldworkers, is the administration of maintenance payments to their parents, guardians or relatives following periods of home leave. The Inspectors feel that this task could be undertaken by staff of the general office and this is recommended.
- 8.11 Providing for the after care of boys, including seeing that they are placed in suitable accommodation, that they are properly dressed and have sufficient funds for travelling and subsistence, is the fieldworker's responsibility. The Inspectors were surprised to find that the senior social worker was not made aware of the amount of finance available to his department for carrying out this work. Indeed, they were informed that there is considerable difficulty in having money made available for the purchase of essential items. It seems appropriate to inform the senior social worker of the annual budget for his department and to entrust him with setting priorities for its expenditure and this is recommended.

## SPT-18411

- 9. EDUCATION/VOCATIONAL TRAINING
  - 9.1 Compulsory education for all boys under 16 is available at St Patrick's. In addition, a range of vocational activities are provided for those boys who have achieved school leaving age. The education programme is managed by a deputy director and assistant director. Ten teachers, 5 instructors and 3 technicians are employed in the education centre. The deputy director is responsible to the director for the overall management of the education programme.
  - 9.2 The school is essentially divided into 2 parts viz junior and senior, a division that has its roots in the old training school system. The ethos is based on the primary school model, in that of the 35 periods of education that each boy receives weekly, 22 of them are spent with one teacher. This policy brings a more stable relationship to the school setting. Apart from specialist teaching, the boys have 10 periods of physical education. The junior school deals mainly with boys under 15 years of age with the emphasis on general subjects, metal work, woodwork, art and crafts and physical education.
  - 9.3 The senior school caters for boys in the 15 to 19 year old category and here the emphasis is on vocational training, and an element of remedial education is also available. In the senior school boys have the opportunity to attend courses in woodwork, engineering, building, painting and farming. The course of study can lead to GCSE craft certificate at "O" level and is comparable to the courses held at Government Training Centres.
  - 9.4 The school day commences at 9.10am with "line up". A break is taken for tea and biscuits at 10.45 am and lunch is served in the main dining room at 1.00 pm. School recommences at 2.00 pm and finishes for the day at 3.30 pm. During breaks the boys are supervised by the residential social work staff. From time to time residential social workers may assist teachers in controlling difficult boys, either in classrooms or by withdrawal.
  - 9.5 One of the instructors acts in the capacity of farm manager. He has a residence in the grounds, adjacent to the farm buildings at the north west corner of the campus. For many years the farm provided an important activity for boys, where skills in horticulture and animal husbandry were acquired. The activities at the farm continue, albeit on a much reduced scale, and it still provides a useful training for some boys.
  - 9.6 There is no formal structure of meetings between care staff and teachers but liaison takes place as and when necessary during free periods. In addition senior staff attend the marks allocation meeting. The present marks system operating within the school is complex. Each teacher, four in all, allocates a maximum of 10 marks per week and an

average figure is arrived at. To this figure a mark out of 10 is given by the specialist teacher and the total is divided by two giving the final mark of the week. The system appears to be cumbersome and a revised model is being considered. A junior boy is given £1.90 per week and this sum is awarded jointly between the residential social workers and the teachers; £1.00 from the residential social workers and 90 pence or 9 pence per mark (maximum of 10) from the teachers. The senior boys receive a sliding scale of pocket money based upon the grade that they have achieved.

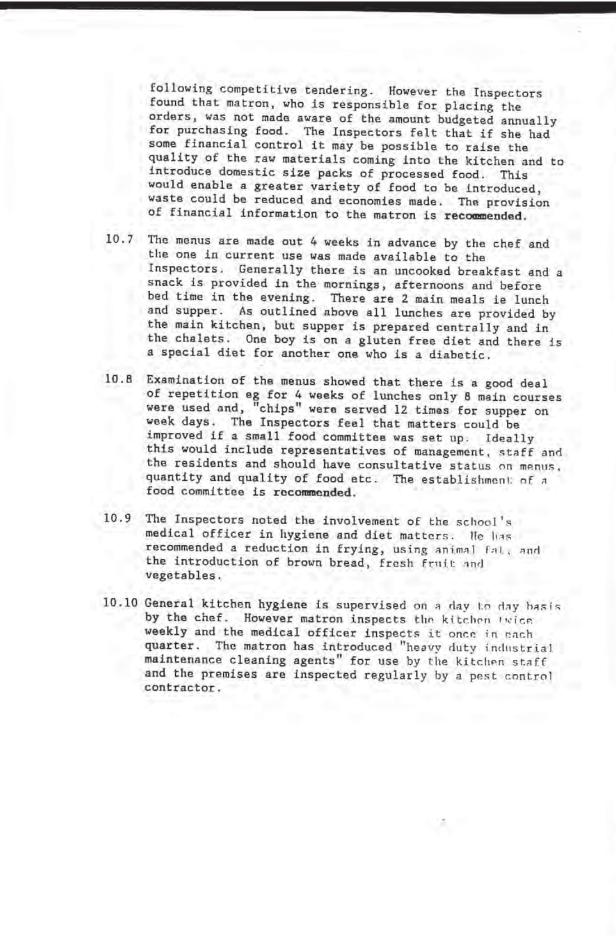
- 9.7 The Inspectors feel that the allocation of pocket money is a matter for care staff and the withholding of any part of it, apart for restitution for damage etc, should be discontinued. If a sanction for bad behaviour or poor performance at school has to be applied it should not have a monetary base. Indeed the withholding of leave or, using the school vernacular "stewed", is a matter of concern and it is recommended that the policy surrounding these two issues is pocket money and withholding of leave be reviewed as soon as possible.
- 9.8 The school also provides a "day boy" facility. At the time of the inspection there were 6 boys attending, 4 in the junior school and 2 in the senior school. The "day boy" has no legal requirement to attend St Patrick's, in that he is not the subject of a Training School Order. Some years ago senior staff at St Patrick's extended their education opportunities to boys from the local community who were "out of their normal school" and who were considered to be at risk of receiving a Training School Order for non-attendance at school. Referrals to St Patrick's for this service is usually made by Educational Welfare Officers. Whereas this innovative policy is to be welcomed as a preventative step, it is recommended that the practice be reviewed and clarified as to the continuing need for the service. An assessment should be made to ascertain if the day attender concept could be extended to include more boys in St Patrick's, who might readily live at home and attend the school if social conditions permit.
- 9.9 The assistant director (education) has a dual role with care, which seems to stem from 1984 when she was appointed to the post of a senior assistant. At that time she spent 2 days in school and 3 days in care plus some weekend work. After reorganisation of the school in 1987, because of educational demands, she now spends the weekdays in school and occasional weekends providing senior management cover in Chalets 1 and 2. Seemingly all new admissions to care are handled by the assistant director. This experienced, senior member of staff is an obvious asset to the school and undoubtedly there are many practical spin-offs to the boys because of her dual role. However, the Inspectors feel that there is role confusion in the minds of some staff in Chalets 1 and 2 and even the assistant director

SPT-18413

(care) appeared to be in some doubt as to her executive function. There is need to clarify the role of the assistant director (education) in management. It seems that her educational duties keep her fully occupied and together with the proposed changes in the senior staffing structure, made elsewhere in this report, the Inspectors recommend that her role and function be reviewed.

### 10. CATERING AND DIET

- 10.1 A large, fully equipped kitchen is located on the ground floor, mid way between the junior and senior wings of the main school building. To the rear there are a number of dry goods stores and a small staff dining room. There is a tradesmans entrance at this end were supplies are delivered and through which waste is removed. The kitchen is centrally placed, ic there are dining rooms on either side, and the food is distributed through serveries with heated cabinets underneath. There are plans to replace much of the kitchen equipment during 1988.
- 10.2 The boys are seated at tables of 4 in the diving rooms where they are supervised by the residential social workers. The reduced population of the school in recent years means that large areas of the diving rooms are unused and it is understood that consideration is being given to reducing their size.
  - 10.3 On weekdays breakfast and the evening meals are provided in the chalets for boys placed there, though the mid-day meal and all weekend meals have to be taken in the main building. The Inspectors feel that all of the young people should be able to enjoy their meals in the comfort of their living accommodation, especially at the weekends, and this is recommended. Alternatively the central kitchen and dining area could be used as a school canteen is to provide lunch on weekdays only with all other meals taken in the units.
  - 10.4 In relation to meals taken in the chalets staff from these units have to call at the central kitchen daily for supplies of food. The Inspectors felt that this exercise was wasteful of the residential social workers time and recommend that at least one week's supply of food stuffs, in accordance with a planned menu, should be made available to the chalets at the beginning of any week.
- 10.5 Responsibility for the oversight of the kitchen has been delegated by the director to a matron/deputy matron who are Sisters from the Franciscan Missionaries of Mary. The kitchen is staffed by a chef, assistant chef and 8 cooks/kitchen assistants. They work on shifts and covered the kitchen between 7.30 am and 8.00 pm on weekdays and between 8.30 am and 8.00 pm at weekends. A minimum of 4 staff are on duty at any one time, during the week but this is reduced to 2 at weekends. The residents are not involved in the preparation or serving of meals.
  - 10.6 Food is purchased in bulk from approved suppliers. The chef makes out a requisition, and if matron approves, an order is placed. Bread and milk are delivered daily and fruit and vegetables are supplied weekly. There is little room for flexibility in the purchasing of provisions for the kitchen as most of the suppliers are appointed



11. HEALTH CARE

11.1 A suite of rooms in the main building is provided for the health care of residents and staff. These include an examination room for use by the doctor, a well equipped dental surgery, and a treatment room used mainly by the nursing staff. In addition there is a sick bay, capable of accommodating 6 patients in 2 3-bedded wards with associated bathroom, toilet, kitchen and staff room. In practice it is seldom used and then only during the day time, by boys requiring bed rest and observation. The kitchen is equipped with a refrigerator for the storage of vaccine but drugs are held in a locked safe in the doctor's room.

### Medical Records

- 11.2 The nurse on duty is based in the doctor's room where the boy's medical records are held. In some cases medical information arrives with new admissions and this is filed and added to, where appropriate. However a medical form and a treatment chart, devised by the nursing staff, are used until full medical records are obtained through the Central Services Agency.
- 11.3 A local general practitioner has been appointed, medical officer to St Patrick's by the Board of Management. His duties are prescribed by Section 50 the Training School rules which includes making:-
  - a thorough examination of each boy on admission and before leaving the school;
  - ii. a quarterly inspection of each boy;
  - iii. a quarterly general inspection of the school from the hygiene point of view and advice as to dietary and general hygiene;
  - iv, the examination of all sick and ailing boys;
  - v. the keeping of medical records;
  - vi. the making of reports/certificates as required by the Board.
- 11.4 The doctor is available in the school between 2.00 pm and 3.30 pm on Mondays for the examination, diagnosis and treatment of boys who are ailing. He also attends by arrangement at other times and will come to see sick boys as required. The doctor makes brief notes on patients in a diary which are transferred to individual files by the nurse on duty. Boys who have been admitted to the school for the first time are seen by a nurse, who makes a brief record of their medical history, following which they are

taken to the doctor at his private surgery for an initial examination

- 11.5 Once a boy is committed to St Patrick's on a Training School Order then his case is transferred to the medical officer's panel of patients. His medical records are obtained through the Central Services Agency and held in the school. Thereafter he is given a full medical examination at 3 monthly intervals. However soon after committal all boys are vaccinated for polio and tetanus. If they refuse to be vaccinated, or to have any other form of medical or dental treatment, they must sign a declaration to that effect in front of a witness.
- 11.6 Boys admitted to the school on short term arrangements ie Place of Safety Orders/Interim Orders should have been examined beforehand and a "free from infection certificate" obtained. Prior to leaving the school they are seen by the medical officer again for a discharge medical examination.

### Sex Education

11.7 Sex education is seen as a medical matter and as such it is left to the school doctor to provide it as required, ie there is no general service but the doctors speaks to boys on this matter if they have a history of sexual activity. Indeed the medical officer advised the Inspectors of his concern that AIDS may emerge as a problem amongst the type of boys placed in St Patrick's in the near future. In view of the foregoing, the Inspectors recommend that general sex education, appropriate to the age of the boys, is provided by the teaching staff with individual counselling on sex related problems dealt with by the residential social workers. This should assist the young people to regard sex in a social and moral context and free the doctor to attend to related health issues eg sexually transmitted disease. The Inspectors wish to commend the medical officer for the assistance given to them and for his contribution to the health care of the boys in the school.

### Denta1

11.8 A dentist has been appointed by the Management Board to examine and provide treatment for boys placed in the school. He hold a regular surgery at noon on Thursdays each week. All boys receive a dental inspection each school term following which preventive dentistry and treatment are carried out as required.

### Nursing Staff

11.9 Two part-time nurses see to the health care of the boys on week days when they are available between 9.00 am and 2.00 pm and 4.00 pm and 7.00 pm. The nurse on duty treats minor ailments and provides first aid up to 3 times daily ie before school begins, at lunch times and after supper in the evenings. However if a boy is on regular medication this is given by the nurse to his key worker, with instructions for its appropriate use. The nurse will make a follow-up check to see that it is being administered properly. The nurses are "on call" at weekends but in practice the matron and her deputy cover for them when they are off duty.

SPT-18419

12. RELIGION

- 12.1 St Patrick's was founded by the De La Salle Order for Roman Catholic Boys. Its Board of Management is presided over by a Bishop and the membership is comprised of priests from the Roman Catholic Diocese of Down and Connor. A Christian ethos prevades the school and due attention is given to prayer and corporate worship. Members of the religious community live adjacent to the training school and some of them serve on its staff. The boys are encouraged to say morning and night prayers and grace is said before meals.
- 12.2 A priest is the appointed chaplain to the school. He celebrates Mass in the school chapel for the staff and boys on Wednesdays at 12.30 pm and on Sundays and Holy Days at 9.30 am. During religious festivals he takes the lead in the formal ceremonies. The chaplain also celebrates Mass for chalet or class groups, together with the boys parents or teachers, once or twice each year. When necessary he will prepare boys for receiving their first Holy Communion or for Confirmation. He ministers the Sacrament of Reconciliation on the first Wednesday of each month to boys who wish to attend voluntarily. The chaplain also arranges for the diocesan religious advisers to visit the school.
- 12.3 Aside from his formal duties the chaplain takes an active part in life within the school. He sees all recently admitted boys soon after their arrival to explain his role and to try to allay their fears and apprehensions. When visiting St Patrick's the chaplain takes his meals with the boys and may join them for games and activities. He also organises visits by small groups to places of religious significance or of general interest and afterwards leads a discussion group. Occasionally a boy will choose to confide in the chaplain if something is worrying him and with his permission the chaplain will bring the matter to the attention of management or staff. The chaplain seeks to improve communication between himself and the boys and through example hopes that they may come to value religion in the same way as he does.

SPT-18420

- 13. OFFICIAL VISITORS
  - 13.1 Senior personnel from the Northern Ireland Office visit the school to discuss policy and administrative matters. Support and advice on professional matters is given by an Inspector from the Social Services Inspectorate. When capital projects and major maintenance work is undertaken at the school, technical staff from the Estate Services Division of the Department of Health and Social Services supervise the contracts.
  - 13.2 Rule 10(3) of the Training School Rules (SRO) 1952 No.132 requires that the school be visited by at least one member of the Board of Management, who shall satisfy himself regarding the care of boys and the state of the school and shall enter his conclusions in the log book or other convenient records kept in the school. The Inspectors understand that one Board member in particular is a regular visitor to the school and the director relates to him in matters of urgency or importance. However the requirements of Rule 10(3) are not being satisfied and it is recommended that a formal system of visiting be introduced as soon as possible.
  - 13.3 The Inspectors would wish to draw attention to the Management Board the full duties as outlined in Rules 4-10 and in particular the composition of the Board, the frequency of meetings and the Licensing function outlined in Rule 46. It is recommended that these several issues be addressed as a matter of urgency.
  - 13.4 In October 1983 the Department of Health and Social Services issued a circular on the monitoring of residential homes for children provided by Area Boards and Voluntary Organisations. Management within each Agency was requested to introduce procedures for the regular and ongoing scrutiny of the range and quality of the service which it provided. Thereafter Area Boards and Voluntary Organisations were expected "To introduce annual monitoring statements outlining the elements monitored, the methods used, the trends observed, the areas of concern identified and action taken to remedy deficiencies".
  - 13.5 The persons involved in monitoring includes members of Management Boards as well as senior members of staff. Within the training schools there is already a system of reporting to Board members and a scrutiny by them of statutory records. However, the Inspectors perceive a need for a formal system of monitoring to be adopted akin to that which is used within the Health and Social Services Board in respect of their residential child care services and this is recommended. A copy of Circular HSS(CC)6/83 is attached at Appendix B.
  - 13.6 In order to assist Board members with their regular visits and the structure of monitoring reports, the Social

...

Services Inspectorate would be prepared to make guidelines available to the Management Board and if requested would be available to meet with the Board to discuss the recommendations in the preceding paragraphs in more detail.

SPT-18422

- 14. OFFICIAL RECORDS
  - 14.1 Rule 53 of the Training School Rules (SRO) 1952 No.132 states that, "The Management Board shall arrange for the keeping of all registers and records required by the Ministry and shall cause to be sent to the Ministry such returns, statements and other information as may be required from time to time".

### Admissions and Discharges Register

14.2 An admission and discharge record of all boys entering and leaving the school is maintained in the main office. The member of administrative staff concerned maintains a variety of records which ensure that information on all boy movements, both remand, committed and place of safety is available on a daily and weekly basis. In addition each unit within the school also keeps a record of all admissions and discharges.

### Major Incident Book

14.3 Rule 19(2) requires the Manager (Director) to maintain, inter-alia, a Log Book in which shall be entered every event of importance connected with the school. This record is not maintained and it is recommended that this be introduced as soon as possible.

### Punishment Book

14.4 As corporal punishment is not carried out at St Patrick's, no punishment record book is kept.

### Record of Fire Drills

- 14.5 No fire drills have been carried out recently at the school and no record is maintained. This matter was drawn to the attention of the senior staff verbally during the course of the inspection. It is recommended that a system of regular fire drills be initiated immediately. A record of these drills must be maintained and should include details of the staff and the young people participating and the time taken to evacuate the building. The importance of regular fire drills cannot be emphasised too strongly.
- 14.6 Rule 14 outlines the functions of the Management Board in relation to fire precautions. No details of recent fire inspections were available to the Inspectors. It is not within the competence of the Social Services Inspectorate to comment on the technical aspects of fire precautions and improvements. Indeed it is understood that in the main building a programme of rewiring and updating of the fire alarm system is due to commence in January 1989. The concerns regarding fire precautions were drawn verbally to the attention of the NIO and the Inspectors were reassured to learn that the situation has already been discussed

with the director of St Patrick's. It is understood that, following the formal notification, arrangements have been made for an inspection. In addition the director has been encouraged to commence a Health and Safety Committee for the school and the designation of a Fire Officer from within the senior staff.

### Licensing Certificate Book

14.7 Every young person leaving the school on licence is given a formal certificate of licence, usually signed by a member of the After Care Team on behalf of the Managers. The keeping of this record is satisfactory. As already has been pointed out in Pargraph 13.3 the Inspectors would wish to have the keeping of this record overseen by the Management Board as part of the Licensing Sub-Committee function.

# 15. PSYCHOLOGICAL/PSYCHIATRIC SERVICES

Psychological Service

- 15.1 A service is provided by 3 psychologists from the Adolescent Psychological and Research Unit on a total of  $4\frac{1}{2}$  days each week. The psychologists provide a diverse range of forensic, educational and clincial skills in the assessment of the child and their family as to -
  - (1) asssessement of optimal placement; and
  - (2) treatment or intervention.

The psychologists also preform roles of research, training, management consultancy and staff support/development. As well as involvement with children and young persons, the psychologists contribute professional advice and support to each of the Care and Justice units. Their professional independence makes a valuable contribution to the residential task at the school. The APRU psychologists provide interagency contact with the various networks of Probation, Social Services, Health and Education and specific specialist resources within these agencies, for example, special education and adolescent psychiatry.

15.2 At the time of the inspection one of the psychologists had commenced a series of short training exercises for residential staff. The Inspectors had an opportunity to observe this experiential session in operation and commend the APRU for taking this initiative in the development of staff skills. It is felt that psychologists have an important contribution to make to some of the training initiatives that have been recommended.

### Psychiatric Service

- 15.3 Dr McEwen, Consultant in Adolescent Psychiatry spends approximately one day per fortnight in St Patrick's. The focus of his work is essentially working with staff regarding the management of difficult young people throughout the school. He relates, in the main, to the Assessment Unit as his main point of contact. Dr McEwen feels few of the children actually suffer from mental illness but considerable numbers experience varying degrees of disturbance.
- 15.4 In the absence of a unified key worker system and a clear line of accountability, Dr McEwen has difficulty in relating to identifiable staff within the school, who will ensure that any treatment strategy agreed upon will be followed up and implemented. In some ways this leads to a waste of a scarce resource. It is recommended that in the restructing exercise, highlighted earlier in this

# SPT-18425

report, a clear point of contact for Dr McEwen be established.

**OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL** 

. .

### 16. INTEGRATION WITH THE LOCAL COMMUNITY

- 16.1 The De La Salle Brothers' have been educating Roman Catholic children in West Belfast for many years and have the respect of the local community. Their apostolate extended to caring for under privileged boys in the old Milltown Reformatory, which closed soon after they moved about 2 miles away to St Patrick's in 1957. Although in recent years the training school has catered almost exclusively for boys sent there by the courts, it is still fondly referred to by the local people as the "Boys Home". Indeed this tradition is so strong in the Falls Road area that boys are not stigmatised for having spent some time being "educated" by the Brothers in St Patrick's.
- 16.2 The Brothers have also been involved in the development of gaelic sports ie: football, hurling and handball at primary school and parish team level. When there were greater numbers of boys in St Patrick's competitive teams were entered in competitions organised by the Gaelic Atheltic Association. While this has been difficult to sustain in recent years individual boys are encouraged by the staff to join and play for clubs within the area. Some of these and the local primary schools make use of the indoor training facilities and the football pitch at St Patrick's.
- 16.3 Reference must also be made here to the stressful conditions under which St Patrick's has continued to operate over the past 20 years. During this period the local community has been torn apart by civil disturbances and commotion which forced many people to leave their homes and move elsewhere. Throughout St Patrick's has remained a peaceful haven where many young people were able to shelter from the "troubles". Also the swimming and sports hall have been made use of by groups of parents and children from some local housing estates at times when it was unsafe to travel to civic amenities. Elderly people stroll in the grounds of the school, where they feel safe away from the traffic on the busy streets.
- 16.4 The wider use of St Patricks school and its extensive grounds by the community in West Belfast is an important consideration. Over the years the school management have achieved a delicate balance between being part of the community whilst being able, because of the task of dealing with seriously disordered boys, to provide a sanctuary for these young people in extreme need. The fact that there is a physical distance between the school and the surrounding housing estates has enabled the school to function in a difficult, and at time dangerous, environment. It is understood that plans to provide a specialist re-settlement housing scheme, adjacent to the school boundary are being considered. The creation of such a scheme, however worthy, so close to the school

could present additional problems of absconding from and incursions into the grounds of St Patricks.

- 16.5 Through their work with teenage boys the De La Salle Brothers were aware of a chronic non-school attendance problem in West Belfast. A former director of St Patrick's instigated a scheme whereby a number of secondary schools could, by voluntary arrangement, send some of their disaffected youths to the training school for their education. The scheme is still in operation and occasionally, whenever there is a need, boys from St Patrick's may also go out daily to neighbouring schools. Indeed boys who are committed to St Patricks frequently go out to Youth Clubs and participate in specialist schemes eg: the West Belfast Auto Project.
- 16.6 There is also a long tradition of community service carried out by St Patrick's residents. The training schools workshops have produced equipment for community play groups and have successfully converted an old bus into a modern play bus for the use of pre-school children. At another level a group of boys from St Patrick's assist patients in the nearby Musgrave Park Hospital each Sunday morning.
- 16.7 Working parties from the school have also tackled much larger projects eg: assisting with the repairs. plastering and the interior decoration of Kilmore House. Kilmore House is a large property owned by the school and located in the magnificent setting of Glenariff. The house has recently undergone a major programme of refurbishment in which many of the boys and staff of the school were involved. Kilmore provides an effective alternative for the boys where they have the opportunity to participate in a range of outdoor activities. Additionally community groups and uniformed organiations make use of the valuable resource.

SPT-18428

CONCLUSION 17.

- During the very difficult times of the past 20 years the 17.1 De La Salle Order has continued to provide a residential service in West Belfast for Catholic boys in trouble, from all parts of the Province. At times this has been a very difficult service to sustain and it is to the credit of all the staff, through their commitment and by the leadership given by the Brothers and successive directors, that it has been possible to sustain the quality of care provided for the young people.
- 17.2 The Inspectors have highlighted in this report their concerns about the state of the physical provision, especially in the main building, and of the need to tackle the policy issues that stem from the extent of the present provision relative to the considerably reduced numbers of boys being admitted to the school.
- Since the segregation of the school into care and justice 17.3 the staff have had to adjust to new roles and implement new policies. They have gone a long way towards the absorption of change and the Inspectors are confident that skills, experience and ability exist within the staff group which will enable them to move towards a completely segregated campus. The implementation of the recommendations in this report will make increased demands upon staff. Changes will come with new legislation and the Care staff, in particular, must be prepared to accept the challenge of the next decade and demonstrate that they are capable of providing a quality service which is appropriate to the needs of the young people who are placed in their care and acceptable to Social Services Departments.
- 17.4

The Inspectors have made a number of recommendations that is hoped will bring about a change in emphasis in the residential task and lead to an enhancement of the quality of care provided at the school. Some of the recommendations can be implemented with little difficulty, whilst some will require more time. The Inspectors are aware that many of the recommendations contained in this report have already been implemented prior to publication and commend the director and his senior staff for addressing the issues with a sense of urgency.

# SPT-18429

### 18. RECOMMENDATIONS

- 18.1 Each unit should be managed by a senior residential social worker, who should lead a team of residential social workers. (Para 3.4).
- 18.2 The staff job descriptions should be issued as a matter of urgency. (Para 3.4, 6.7).
- 18.3 The capacity of the school should be calculated using the criteria set out in paragraph 3.5. (Para 3.5).
  - 18.4 If a capacity of 76 places is agreed, there should be the whole time equivalent of 44 staff at senior residential social worker and residential social worker level. (Para 3.9).
  - 18.5 Management should formulate individual training profiles for all staff and seek ways of developing a policy of positive action on training. (Para 3.11 and 3.17).
  - 18.6 It is recommended that management should make every effort to employ female residential social workers. (Para 3,12).
  - 18.7 The Management Board should review the role, function and structure of the senior management team. (Para 3.15).
  - 18.8 Regular staff supervision should be introduced for all professional staff and the supervision sessions formally recorded. (Para 3.16, 5.8 and 6.9).
  - 18.9 Formal meetings of groups of senior staff are essential and it is recommended that these should be established. (Para 3.18).
  - 18.10 At least one residential social worker should sleep in each unit during the night. (Para 3.20 and 6.35).
- 18.11 It is recommended that in future each of the justice units should cater for boys sent to the training schools for offending, regardless of age. (Para 5.2).
  - 18.12 The transfer of boys between justice and care should be addressed as a matter of urgency. (Para 5.3 and 6.3).
  - 18.13 The boys' toilet areas in the "senior" side require total renovation. (Para 5.20).
  - 18.14 Key workers should attend review meetings of their individual young people. (Para 5.27).
  - 18.15 The role of the key worker should be developed in accordance with the suggestions made in paragraph 5.29. (Par 5.29).

# SPT-18430

- 18.16 It is recommended that a more detailed system of recording be introduced for boys sleeping in overnight in the units, (Para 5.39).
- 18.17 The mark system should be reviewed to allow all boys to receive some pocket money. (Para 5.45).
  - 18.18 It is recommended that levels of pocket money and allowances for birthdays and Christmas presents be reviewed. (Para 5.46 and 6.46).
  - 18.19 Regarding the provision of clothing, a number of recommendations are made to assist this process. (Para 5,48).
- 18.20 The senior management arrangements for Chalet 3 should be reviewed and the sub-division of junior and senior care should be discontinued. (Para 6.2).
  - 18.21 It is recommended that a senior residential social worker be appointed to Chalet 1. (Para 6.6).
  - 18.22 A programme of induction and in-service training should be developed within the school. (Para 6.10).
  - 18.23 It is recommended that case recording be examined with a view to improving the quality of the work. (Para 6.22).
  - 18.24 Some of the fabrics in Chalet 2 require attention. (Para 6.25).
- 18.25 If a full week operation is to be developed in Chalet 3, sufficient staff should be allocated to facilitate this policy. (Para 6.28).
- 18.26 Records of visits to the boys by night supervisors should be more clearly recorded. (Para 6.36).
- 18.27 The main dining room should operate as a school canteen during the week and a more flexible approach should be adopted towards the provision and consumption of food in the care units at the weekends. (Para 6.38, 10.3).
- 18.28 A Licensing Committee comprising of members of the Management Board should be established. (Para 6.41).
  - 18.29 Teachers should find alternative methods of maintaining discipline in classrooms without resorting to the withdrawal of pocket money or weekend leave. (Para 6.42 and 9.7).
    - 18.30 It is recommended that the management develop a policy on smoking, (Para 6.48).
    - 18.31 Management shoud initiate a programme of sex education within the school. (Para 6.49 and 11.7).

18,32	The recommendation contained in paragraph 7.8, regarding reviews should be implemented. (Para 7.8).
18,33	The role of the assistant director (assessment) should be reviewed. (Para 7.9).
18,34	It is recommended that the process of referral, intake and reception be vested in the existing assessment unit. (Para 7.10).
18,35	As part of his new role, the assistant director (assessment) should be given the responsibility for the training and skills development of unit staff in managing and overseeing reviews. (Para 7.11).
18.36	The accommodation needs of the fieldwork department should be reviewed. (Para 8.3).
18.37	The key worker should continue to be involved with the boy for a period of up to 3 months following discharge in conjunction with the fieldworker. (Para 8.7).
18.38	Boys on licence and extended leave should be formally reviewed at intervals of not less than 3 months. (Para 8.8).
18.39	The involvement of the fieldwork team in courts should be reviewed by management. (Para 8.9).
18.40	The administration of maintenance payments should be undertaken by staff in the general office. (Para 8.10).
18.41	The senior social worker, in charge of the fieldwork department, should be appraised of the annual budget for his team and he should be entrusted with the setting of priorities for its expenditure. (Para 8.11).
18.42	The policy of day attenders should be reviewed and the possibility of more committed boys attending on a day basis should be explored. (Para 9.8).

- 18.43 The dual role and function of the assistant director (education) in education and care should be reviewed. (Para 9.9).
- 18.44 Chalets should be given non-perishable supplies of food on a weekly basis, instead of the present arrangement of daily collection. (Para 10.4).
- 18.45 The matron should receive financial information to enable her to be more effective in the purchase of food. (Para 10.6).

- 18.46 A food committee should be established. (Para 10.8).
- 18.47 A formal system of visiting by a member of the Management Board, as required by Rule 10(3) should be introduced as soon as possible. (Para 13.2).
- 18.48 It is recommended that the several issues contained in Para 13.3 be addressed as a matter of urgency. (Para 13.3).
- 18.49 A formal system of monitoring by the Management Board should be established. (Para 13.5).
- 18.50 A record of Major Incidents, as required by Rule 19(2) should be maintained by the director. (Para 14.3).
- 18.51 A system of regular fire drills should be initiated immediately. (Para 14.5).
- 18.52 The key worker system should be developed and restructured so that a clear contact point for Dr McEwan can be established. (Para 15.4).

SPT-18364

#### 3. MANAGEMENT AND STAFFING

- St Patrick's Training School provides for the education and 3.1 vocational training of boys who are accommodated on the premises in one of 5 residential units, ie 3 care and 2 justice. An assessment service is provided to the courts and to the residential units by a team specialising in this work. The training school is also responsible for a number of former residents who are living with parents, relatives and guardians while on extended leave, licence or supervision. It discharges this responsibility mainly, though not entirely, through a group of fieldworkers (aftercare) who operate from the school. In order to obtain a comprehensive view of the management and staffing structure of this complex facility the inspectors used a questionnaire to collect information on the sex, age, designation and qualifications of all those contributing to the residential task, and to the aftercare function. This survey was extended to include those teachers and instructors who perform extraneous duties outside of school hours.
- 3.2 Seventy-three returns were made and the table below classifies them according to the respective designations.

Table 1

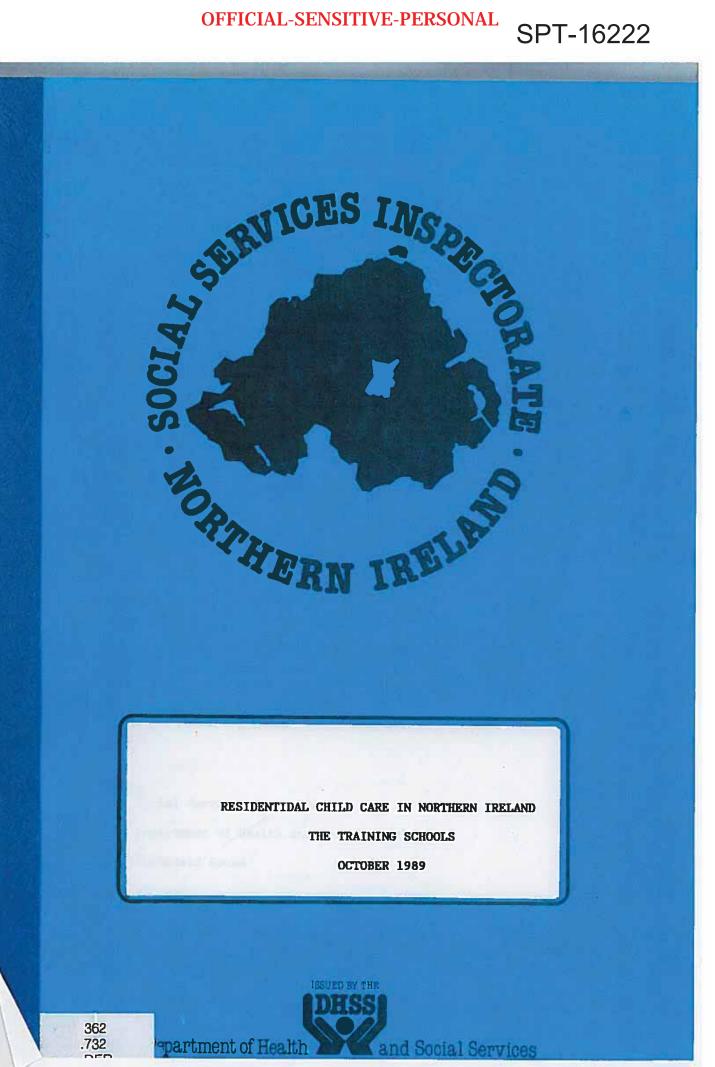
DIRECTOR	1
SENIOR DEPUTY DIRECTOR	1
DEPUTY DIRECTOR	2
ASSISTANT DIRECTOR	4
DEPUTY ASSISTANT DIRECTOR	2
SENIOR ASSISTANT	1
SENIOR RESIDENTIAL SOCIAL WORKER	5
RESIDENTIAL SOCIAL WORKER	30
SENIOR SOCIAL WORKER (AFTERCARE)	1
SOCIAL WORKER (AFTERCARE)	3
TEACHER/INSTRUCTOR (EDA)	16
NIGHT SUPERVISOR	7
	1000

### TOTAL

A number of the senior staff, is the director, deputy directors and two of the assistant directors do not work directly with the young people in the units on a regular basis. This holds also for two residential social workers engaged in assessment and for the four staff providing the Aftercare Service. The night supervisors take over from the unit staff in the evenings after the boys have been settled for the night. This leaves 38 staff providing care at unit level with the assistance of 16 teachers and instructors who have a part-time commitment through undertaking extraneous duties.

73

3.3 The deployment of the full-time staff at unit level is set out below:-



# SPT-16223

9143707 5

456

PET



DHSS Library Room C.3.29 Castle Buildings Stormont Belfast BT4 3PP Telephone 5 / 20735

### Please return by

1/6/12		
1/6/12		••••••••••••••••••••••••••••••••••••••
61614		· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·
*****		
***************************************		***************************************
		*********
***********	*********	
******	*************	*************
***************************************	*******	*******

CPU A09531

RESIDENTIDAL CHILD CARE IN NORTHERN IRELAND THE TRAINING SCHOOLS OCTOBER 1989

### PREFACE

This report is based on a programme of inspections of the Training Schools in Northern Ireland which was carried out at the request of the Northern Ireland Office by the Social Services Inspectorate of the Department of Health and Social Services. The inspections took place between May 1987 and April 1988. The Inspectors wish to place on record their sincere thanks to the Chairpersons, Members of the Management Boards, the Directors and staff of the Training Schools for their wholehearted co-operation in the exercise.

A special word of thanks is due to the children and young people in the schools for the manner in which they received the Inspectors and for their participation.

Social Services Inspectorate Department of Health and Social Services Dundonald House Belfast

October 1989

# SPT-16225

COl	VTENTS	PAGE
1.	Historical Perspective	1
2.	Methodology	11
3.	Aims and Objectives	14
4.	The Children and Young People Resident	18
5.	The Staff	29
6.	The Premises	36
7.	Daily Life and Care of the Individual	46
8.	Education/Voluntary Training/Employment	58
9.	After Care	62
10.	Health Care	66
11.	Regulations and Records	71
12.	Monitoring Arrangements	73
13.	Conclusions	78
	Appendices	

SPT-16226

# 1. HISTORICAL PERSPECTIVE

- The past decade has seen major changes in the policy and 1.1 practice of the Training Schools in Northern Ireland. These changes have come about as a result of the influence of social work practice, of the changing needs in the population of the Training Schools, of socio-economic changes in the community and the publication of the Report of the Children and Young Persons Review Group. The recommendations of the Black Report, relating to the provision of residential care brought about far reaching structural changes in the schools. Numbers in the schools have greatly reduced but those being admitted, in keeping with other areas of residential care, tend to present more acute problems of management. These changes have brought about a complete re-think about the approach to care of children in Training Schools.
- 1.2 There are four Training Schools in Northern Ireland and with the exception of Lisnevin all have grown out of the old industrial schools and reformities founded in the mid l9th century. In addition to the four Training Schools there is an outdoor pursuit centre at Runkerry near Bushmills and a day assessment facility at Whitefield House on Blacks Road, Belfast. These two facilities lie outside the remit of this overview.

1.

# SPT-16227

### St Joseph's School

- 1.3 The Sisters of St Louis came to Middletown on 21 June 1875. Mother Genevieve, the Irish Foundress had, in 1859 led the first group of Sisters to Ireland. The Sisters came to Ireland at the request of the Bishop of Clogher to open a reformitory in Monaghan town to care for deprived children. At the time the problems of child neglect and juvenile delinquency were serious in an island broken by landlordism, emaciated by famine and demoralised by poverty.
- 1.4 The foundation stone of St Joseph's was laid in 1876 and the Industrial School/Orphanage was opened on 25 June 1881. It was the second Industrial School in Ireland. On the opening day the Sisters received the first 8 girls committed to the newly finished Industrial School/Orphanage. In those days the school drew children mainly from the ancient province of Ulster but the original group of girls came from as far apart as Dublin, Belfast and Donegal. Records of the first group of children admitted to the school show the reasons for the committal, the time spent in the school and some of the early comments give a vivid picture of the social history of the day. Most of the children were described as "destitute orphans" found begging, and many of these were as young as 4 years

2.

old. Historical documents show that there was extensive development in the first 50 years. On the same campus, sharing the same facilities, were an exclusive boarding school, industrial school/orphanage and a primary school. With the Partition of Ireland the admissions of children coming from the South virtually ceased.

SPT-16228

- 1.5 The need for change was recognised and in 1942, the Sisters of St Louis, who are radical and enlightened in their thinking, decided to close the boarding school and to concentrate their efforts on the industrial school/ orphanage.
- 1.6 In 1950 the then Ministry of Home Affairs invited St Joseph's to become a training school, within the terms of the Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1950. This invitation was accepted and the orphanage closed. In 1965 the late Cardinal Conway and the Superior General of the St Louis Order met officials of the Ministry of Home Affairs to plan the reorganisation of St Joseph's. The outcome of these discussions included a commitment by both sides that they would honour a Deed of Covenant drawn up in 1950. From its creation as a training school in 1952 the trustees of the school were drawn from the Order of St Louis.

### St Patrick's

1.7 In the Staff Procedural Manual provided as background

3.

SPT-16229

information to the inspection the historical perspective was traced. "St Patrick's Boys Home, as it is familiarly known in Belfast, was first established as a Catholic Boys Home in 1862 and was housed in premises in Donegall Street. In 1872 it moved to the premises at Milltown and in the following year it was certified by the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland as the first industrial school in Ireland. During all those years it catered for 100 boys and was operated by Lay Masters under the control of the Bishop of the Diocese. In 1917 at the request of the late Cardinal MacRory, the school was placed under the care of the De La Salle Brothers and, in that year, a staff of 5 Brothers took over the work. In 1921 a further change took place due to the partition of the country. As the only Industrial School for Catholic Boys in Northern Ireland was Milltown and as there was no Catholic institution for the reception of Reformitory boys who previously were sent to Glencre, County Wicklow, the Brothers, at the request of the Bishop extended their work to cope with this type of boy. As a result of this change the school, which had provided for 100 boys, had now to deal with 160 and the question of providing adequate accommodation became urgent. Consequently, in 1941, the Bishop of Down and Connor purchased a farm of land on the Glen Road with a view to transferring the school from Milltown. In 1957 the new St Patrick's Training School was opened on a 100-acre farm spanning the Glen Road and the Springfield Road."

4.

### Rathgael Centre

- Rathgael, as with St Joseph's and St Patrick's, had its 1.8 beginnings in the old Reformitories and Industrial Schools of the mid 19th century. In 1956 the Malone and Whiteabbey Training Schools Act led to the amalgamation of existing Junior School (Balmoral Training School) and the Senior School (Malone Training School). The effect of the Act was to place the Boys School and the Girls Training School at Whiteabbey under the control of a new board of management. The original membership of the Board consisted of 4 members of Belfast Corporation, because of the previous control of the old Balmoral Training Schools, several members of the principal religious denominations and members of the trade unions and business community. In addition there were representatives from the, then, Welfare and Educational agencies. The Board of Management was appointed by the then, Ministry of Home Affairs and this responsibility today rests with the Secretary of State for Northern Ireland.
- 1.9 From 1956 the Board was responsible for the management of a 2-site operation, the Boys School at Rathgael and the Girls School at Whiteabbey on the North side of Belfast Lough. In 1985 a decision was taken to amalgamate, the training school concept in Northern Ireland with the closure of the Girls School and the relocation of the school on the Rathgael campus. The amalgamation was based on a more effective use of existing resources and in pursuit of the

5.

concept of normalisation by enabling boys and girls to share the same facilities and to take part in co-education. Today the facility is known as the Rathgael Centre for Children and Young People as the Management Board felt the name more accurately reflected the nature of the work carried out there.

SPT-16231

### Lisnevin Training School

- 1.10 Lisnevin School was formerly located in Newtownards, County Down, where in 1973 two separate units offered secure residential assessment facilities for 20 boys and long-term facilities for another 20 committed boys. In 1977 the residential assessment unit moved to Blacks Road in Belfast and commenced day assessment and continues to do so today. In 1981 the long-term treatment or Special Unit, moved to Millisle to its present location.
- 1.11 In 1985, Lisnevin opened a 10-bed secure remand unit, to service the courts, following the closure of the Juvenile Remand Unit at the Young Offenders Centre in Belfast. Whilst it seemed likely that the demand for secure remand spaces would not exceed 10, in practice the number of places sought actually increased to almost three times that number. As a direct consequence of this demand for spaces, the Remand Unit now offers 25 bed spaces with a proportionate decrease in Special Unit spaces to 15.

1.12 Lisnevin School is a secure establishment located on the

6.

outskirts of Millisle, County Down. The buildings used by the school were designed for, and formerly used as a secure Borstal. Several attempts have been made to modify the buildings to meet the needs of the present client groups.

- 1.13 The Ministry of Home Affairs in a handbook for guidance entitled "Juvenile Offenders and those in need of Care, Protection or Control", defined training schools as residential establishments approved by the Ministry under Section 137 of the Act for boys and girls whom the courts consider to need not only removal from home, but also a fairly long period of residential training. The primary aim of the training school programme is to restore the child or young person to society better equipped mentally and emotionally to cope with the environment from which he came and to accustom him to the habit of work. It is a process of re-adjustment and social re-education. This process of rehabilitation is based on an understanding of the personality, history, abilities and aptitudes of each boy or girl and a knowledge of the family situation, and is promoted by (a) a stable environment which enables remedial influences to be brought to bear and progressive training to be given, (b) by contact with the home and (c) by help and supervision after the girl or boy leaves school.
  - 1.14 The handbook goes on to describe the admission procedure to the schools. On a boy's admission to a training school he passes through a reception procedure which incorporates,

7.

among other administrative functions, a medical examination, intelligence and educational attainment tests and observations of the boy in a classroom or work department and in the social interaction during recreation and leisure periods. The test for the senior boys also include performance tests which gives some indication of a boy's practical ability and assist in placement in an appropriate work department. All staff are encouraged towards objective observation of the boys in all situations.

### Girls in Training Schools

- 1.15 The number of girls sent to training schools is small and this presents its own particular problems. Girls from insecure home backgrounds, often committed as being in need of care, protection and control and in moral danger present very real emotional problems which must be sympathetically understood. The admission procedure for girls is basically similar to that at the boys training schools. The most salient features are an educational test; observation of the girl in her new environment, and examination by a psychiatrist who continues psychiatric treatment in the more disturbed cases.
- 1.16 It should be remembered that the training schools are also registered remand homes and as such receive boys and girls remanded in custody for the purposes of obtaining information and those remanded for one month under

8.

Sections 74(1)(e) and 75 of the Act or 6 months under Section 8(2) of the Northern Ireland (Emergency Provisions) Act 1973.

1.17 Although the procedures and philosophy described above may seem by today's standards as rigid, institutional and lacking in sensitivity, many of the assumptions underpinning the policy appear to be flawed. Perhaps it is worthwhile reflecting on the welfare thought that permeated the residential sector at that time. In the Interim Report of the Northern Ireland Child Welfare Council on Juvenile Delinquency published in 1954 the Committee addressed inter alia, such issues as Mothers at Work, the Lack of Religious Training, Lack of Parental Control, the Influence of Comics and the Cinema. The Committee concluded that "Mothers with children of school or pre-school age should not undertake full-time employment outside the home. The removal of the necessity to train the child for at least some part of the day tends, we feel, to develop in the mother a sense of lessened responsibility for the child's character and his general well-being; and for the very young child, the lack of a definitive and unchanging "mother figure" for its entire day can cause profound emotional disturbance. From the point of view of present day delinquency, however, it is the child of school age who is most affected by the mother's daily absence at work". The comics and the cinema did not escape censure. "We would urge that prompt and determined efforts be made by all responsible for children's welfare to prevent the spread in this country of

9.

the type of comics which glorifies and stimulates violence and sexual appetite and encourages racial prejudice". Of the cinema the Committee concluded "The question of the directly harmful effects of some cinema shows upon children's conduct is still being closely observed, but most enquiries so far have failed to establish any direct connection between cinema attendants and juvenile delinquency. We would strongly support continued research into such matters as the physical and mental effects on children of frequent cinema attendances. We are unanimous in the view that excessive visits to the cinema, with its emotionally exciting and vitiated atmosphere, are harmful to children and that attendance of children under 12 at late performances should be discouraged.

1.18 One can only speculate at the response of the Committee in relation to today's video libraries and the range of material now freely available.

#### 2. METHODOLOGY

- Prior to the commencement of the inspections the Social 2.1 Services Inspectorate requested a range of information from the Directors of training schools. Copies of policy documents, setting out the aims and objectives of the school, directives to staff, procedural guidelines and any other significant papers that were available to staff to assist them in their day-to-day working in the schools was sought. Information on all care staff, employed in the school at the time of the inspection, was also requested. This information was collected by way of a Staff Form, (see Appendix A), and the information was computerised to aid analysis.
- Detailed information on each child resident in the school 2.2 was also requested. A Resident's Form in respect of each child was completed on an agreed Census Day for each school. This was necessary because of the turnover in residents and in fact the Census Day was usually set one week before the commencement of the inspection. Details of the residents' forms are given at Appendix B and as with the staff the information was also computerised with the details of the child being coded for purposes of confidentiality.
- Following receipt of the information, the Inspectors met 2.3 with representatives of the Management Boards, Senior

11.

Management and Staff to discuss the logistics of the inspection. A number of agenda notes were provided for the meetings with the different groups of staff.

SPT-16237

- 2.4 The main methods of gathering information was by way of staff meetings, group and individual, observation and general discussion. The Inspectors spent between 2 and 3 weeks in each training school and as far as possible sought to evaluate the quality of care provided over a 24 hour period. This necessitated being in the schools when the young people were called in the morning until bedtime. Visits were paid to the schools on Saturdays and Sundays where attendance at divine worship was carried out.
- 2.5 A number of ancilliary and other staff were seen. The kitchens were visited, meals were seen under preparation. Time was spent with the Chaplins, Gardeners, Handymen and the classroom and workshop situations were observed. The purpose of the classroom visits was to assess behaviour in the classes, to discuss the liaison arrangements between teachers and care staff in relation to the children. No aspect of the educational component was examined as this was beyond the competence of the SSI's and outside the inspection brief.
- 2.6 The young people were seen mainly in informal group settings as experience has shown that, by and large, many adolescents are reluctant to participate in formal group meetings

12.

# with relevative strangers. The Inspectors found participation with the young people during their leisure time as being the most fruitful ways of eliciting information and opinion. The Inspectors took part in games, swimming sessions, attended discos and generally sought to assess the feelings of the young people and the ethos that permeated the environment by the use of these methods.

- 2.7 At the completion of the inspection a brief verbal feedback was given to the Directors and Senior Staff. Before the completion of the draft report a more formal, detailed verbal presentation was made by the Inspectors. When the draft report of the inspection was prepared it was sent to the Directors and Management Board for comment.
- 2.8 The comments and observations of the Management Board and Senior Staff Team were considered by the Inspectors and where appropriate were embodied in the final inspection report. The Inspectors feel that the present method of sharing and openness between those involved in the inspection greatly enhances the rapport, mutual trust and the quality of the work undertaken.

13.

# SPT-16239

#### 3. AIMS AND OBJECTIVES

- 3.1 Training Schools are defined in Section 137 Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1968 and are approved by the Secretary of State as residential establishments for boys and girls for whom the court considers that removal from home is necessary. Training Schools act as Remand Homes and are deemed to be a Place of Safety under the Act.
- 3.2 For many years the schools fulfilled the role as defined for them by statute. The numbers of children being admitted to the schools probably peaked in the early 1970s when, at one stage, some 450-500 young people were in residence in the Training Schools. At that time numbers meant, that in effect, routine programmes of education, vocational training and counselling were being pursued in a fairly institutional way.
- 3.3 As the spirt of the Black Report began to permeate the criminal justice system, coupled with changes in child care policy, social work thought and the need to ensure a more effective use of resources, training schools management began to approach the task of dealing with young people in a more constructive, thoughtful and systematic way. This necessitated the definition of aims and objectives, clarification of role and the introduction of a range of activities, eg: extended leave, the use of professional

14.

fostering, landlady schemes, all of which contributed to young people returning to the community much more quickly than had been the case previously.

SPT-16240

- 3.4 Prior to the inspection, Directors were asked to set out the aims and objectives for their establishments. All of the schools set out a general statement of philopsy and aims. There were similarities between the schools in very general terms.
  - 3.4.1 "The aim is to meet the needs of individual children. This includes the provision of care, taking into consideration the personality, stage of development and particular difficulties. It also considers the needs of each child for security in the form of personal respect and control".
  - 3.4.2 "To provide the best possible service of education, care and treatment for each child whose needs are not being appropriately met within their social environment. To develop education and care programmes, based upon the identified needs of each young person and to foster in each a belief in their ability to make changes in their lifes and experience success within the framework of society".
  - 3.4.3 "To provide for adolescent girls whose emotional needs, behavioural problems and/or acute educational problems cannot be met or catered for suitably and adequately within the range of options or facilities available in Northern Ireland".

15.

- 3.5 Although all of the objectives have a broad common theme it is in the implementation of these objectives in the individual schools that brings a richness to the quality of care being provided. Just as each establishment has a general objective many of the house units, within training schools, have examined the special contribution they can make to the amelioration of the problems of the young people in their care.
- 3.6 At present the schools are following the concept of the segregation of care and offenders. Those young people defined as being offenders are referred to as "Youth Treatment" or "Justice". Care cases tend to include educational cases and the latter terms described youngsters who have been adjudicated as offenders. Fortunately the management of the schools, whilst ensuring that segregation is followed as far as possible, tend to apply a uniform approach to the care of the young people. Because of the remit of some of the establishments, for example Secure Remand at Lisnevin, the emphasis is on benign/humane containment where the young people are enabled to take part in educational, vocational and recreational programmes. Because many of them have not been adjudicated on by the Courts, no programme of assessment or treatment can be undertaken. In the case of the units in the open training schools who have been designated as Assessment/Reception/Short-term Care, the thrust of the work is geared towards the reception assessment and in

16.

increasing terms, diversion. This has already been referred to in Chapter 1.

SPT-16242

- 3.7 The role of the reception/assessment units is vital within the training school system. The quality of reception often sets the tenor of behaviour and attitude of the young people. The comprehensive and sympathetic assessment ensures that young people are allocated to the most effective setting within the school. Considerable care is taken in this process so as to ensure that, when allocation to a house unit is made, the young person will remain there, benefiting from the security, the skills and strengths of the staff who may be the most suited to meet their needs.
- 3.8 It was evident that the objectives for training schools can be divided into 3 categories (i) School objectives, (ii) Unit objectives, (iii) Individual objectives and that those at (i) and (ii) have to be meaningful and appropriate if (iii) is to be achieved. The more structured setting of objectives by staff has meant a clearer understanding of the needs of the young person and the role that the training schools will be expected to play when the new child care legislation becomes operational.

17.

#### 4.0 THE CHILDREN AND YOUNG PEOPLE RESIDENT

4.1 In this chapter details of the children and young people resident will be given by individual establishments. It should be noted that the inspection of the training schools commenced in May 1987 and the programme was completed in April 1988. As the school populations tend to fluctuate quite quickly it is not possible to give details of the numbers in absolute terms. Details of the residents will be as those returned on the Census Day for each school. The proportion of care, justice and education cases will be examined as well as the number of Place of Safety Orders and finally an indication will be given of some of the general characteristics of the young people who are sent to training schools.

### ST JOSEPH'S TRAINING SCHOOL

4.2 On 15 May 1987 St Joseph's had on roll 32 girls aged between 12 years and 11 months and 17 years and 9 months. Two of the girls were sisters. There was a concentration of 22 young people of 16 years or over at the upper end of the age range with 9 others aged between 14 and 16. One girl was under 14 years of age. Twenty-five were in residence on the above date, 6 were on extended leave and one was spending the week-end away from the school.

18.

4.3 Twenty-nine girls were the subjects of Training School Orders, 2 of Interim Detention Orders and one had been admitted to St Joseph's on a Place of Safety Order. One girl was a juvenile offender and 3 others had been committed for non-school attendance.

SPT-16244

4.4 Twenty-five girls were deemed to be in need of "Care, Protection and Control" and were sent to the training school under Section 95(1)(a) of the Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1968. In the case of this group, and 3 others who were in St Joseph's on short term orders, the proceedings had been instigated by the Health and Social Services Boards. All 4 Boards had been involved, ie: Eastern - 11, Southern - 9, Western - 6 and Northern - 2. Some of this group of girls had experienced several placements during their careers in care. Ten had come to St Joseph's from their own homes, one from hospital and another from a hostel. However 16 girls had been living in children's homes just before their admission to the training school. Of these one girl had been held in St Joseph's on an Interim Detention Order while a full assessment was undertaken. Ten others had been in training school at some other stage in their careers and prior to having been committed on Training School Orders. However 5 girls had been sent directly to St Joseph's by the Court following proceedings brought by Social Services.

4.5 Nine girls (28%) had been living in St Josephs for 6

19.

months or less including the most recent admission who had been their for only one day. Fourteen others (45%) were there for more than one year including 4 girls (12%) who had been admitted for more than 2 years prior to the inspection. However, of the girls who were there the longest, 2 had been recalled to the training school from licence and one was in the hostel preparing for a placement where she could live independently. The home circumstances of another girl made it impracticable for her to return home and she was going out each day to work on a training scheme.

# RATHGAEL CENTRE FOR CHILDREN AND YOUNG FEOPLE

- 4.6 On 7 September 1987 there were 147 young people on the Rathgael roll. However at the time only 85 boys and girls were in residence and another 6 boys, who were participating in an outdoor pursuits course at Runkerry Centre, Co Antrim, were temporarily absent. Thirty-nine young persons were living with relatives while on "Extended leave", and one girl was boarded-out with foster parents. Four boys had been transferred to the Secure Unit at Lisnevin Training School and 4 others, who were absent from Rathgael without permission were deemed to have absconded. A further 8 young people (6 boys and 2 girls) were living at home and travelling to the Centre on weekdays and were classified as "Day attenders".
  - 4.7 One-hundred and twenty-seven boys and girls were the

20.

# SPT-16246

subject of Training School Orders, 5 of Interim Detention Orders and 11 had been admitted to Rathgael on Place of Safety Orders. Four others had been Remanded pending a court appearance.

- 4.8 The Centre had responsibility for 41 girls and 106 boys, whose ages ranged from 12-18 years. However the majority (114) were between 15 and 17 years old. Prior to being placed in Rathgael 92 of the young people were living at home, 40 were in children's homes and 3 were in foster care.
- 4.9 The Youth Treatment side of the Centre was responsible for 66 boys all of whom had been committed to Rathgael for offending and 4 boys who were charged with offences and remanded in custody. However the Care Side had responsibility for 41 girls and 36 boys of whom only 2 of the girls were committed for offences prior to coming to the Centre. Sixteen of this group came to Rathgael following court proceedings instigated by the Education and Library Boards for non-school attendance. Twenty-one girls and 22 boys had previously been in the care of one of the Health and Social Services Boards and another 9 girls and 7 boys had been sent to Rathgael by the courts following proceedings instigated by Social Services. All 4 Boards had been involved ie: Eastern - 33, Northern - 21, Southern - 3 and Western - 2.

21.

SPT-16247

#### ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

4.10 On Census Day, 15 December 1987, there were 95 young persons on St Patrick's roll. However, only 61 boys were in residence. Twelve were temporarily resident in another school (Lisnevin), one was boarded-out, 3 were in hospital, 8 were on extended leave, 8 were absconders and there were 2 others (one at home on leave and one sick at home). The 8 boys on extended leave were living at home with relatives or guardians.

4.11 The legal status of the boys was as follows:-

Training	School	Orders	-	85
Place of	Safety	Orders	-	4
Fit Perso	on Orden	s	-	2
Remands				3

and one was on a one month's commital. The latter sentence is now a seldom used disposal in the juvenile court.

4.12 The ages of the boys range from 12 to 18+ years, with the main concentration (59) in the 16-17 year category. The second largest group (26) was in the 14-15 year group. Prior to placement in St Patrick's 63 of the boys had resided at home, 22 had come from children's homes, 3 were admitted following foster home breakdown and one had been

22.

in hospital, one in an assessment unit and 5 others were in a variety of settings which included transfer from Care to Justice and returning from the Lisnevin Remand Unit.

4.13 Of the population of 95, 34 were in the Care Side of the school. This number includes education cases and the remaining 61 were attached to the justice division of the school. Seventeen boys were already the subject of Training School Orders. All of the Health and Social Services Boards had referred young people to the school on Care grounds either by way of Place of Safety Orders or through committal proceedings. The breakdown was as follows:-

EHSSB - 10 SHSSB - 7 WHSSB - 4 NHSSB - 3

Education and Library Boards had instigated court proceedings, which had led to the commital of 10 young people to the school for non-attendance. The breakdown of these figures was as follows, Belfast and Education Library Board - 7, South Eastern and Education and Library Board - 2 Southern Education and Library Board - 1.

4.14 All of the young people were engaged in education, employment or voluntary work. The analysis is as follows:-

23.

# SPT-16249

Education/Vocational	- 71
Full time employment	- 3
YTP Schemes or similar	- 19
Voluntary work	- 2

4.15 The length of stay in St Patrick's has come down significantly and this may be due to the development of the policy of extended leave. Despite the efforts of management there are still a few boys who stay in the school greatly exceeding the norm. The following table gives details of the length of stay of the total population.

LENGTH OF STAY

LENGIR OF DIAL	
	29
l year	
l year	35
2 years	25
3 years	4
4 years	1
8 years	1
1	

TOTAL 95

NUMBER OF RESIDENTS

# LISNEVIN TRAINING SCHOOL

4.16 On 15 April 1988 there were 41 boys on the Lisnevin roll.However, 3 had failed to return from home leave and another2 had been remanded to prison by the courts leaving 36 boys

24.

on campus. The majority (36) were between 14 and 16 years of age though 2 boys were over 18 years of age, and at the other end of the scale 2 boys were just 13 years old.

- 4.17 Sixteen boys were the subjects of Training School Orders and 25 had been removed to Lisnevin by the Courts under Section 51 of the Children and Young Persons Act 1968. However 19 of the remandees had previously been committed to training schools and their Training School Orders were still extant.
- 4.18 Ten of the Special Unit boys had been admitted from St Patrick's Training School and 6 from the Rathgael centre. All but one of them had previously been in Lisnevin Remand Unit. Two had been initially sent to training schools on "Care" grounds and they had resided within the Eastern Board's North and West Belfast Unit of Management. Nine others had home addresses in Belfast with one each coming from Bangor, Antrim, Craigavon, Fintona and Ardglass.
- 4.19 Eight boys had been less than one year in the Special Unit, including one who had been there for just 2 weeks. Another 2 had been approximately 9 months in residence but 5 had been in the Special Unit for more than one year. One boy had spent 2 years in security. Eleven Special Unit boys had been reviewed by the Lisnevin Licensing Committee during the 12 months prior to the inspection. There were plans to licence 12 boys to live with relatives and 2 others were being prepared to live independently in the community.

25.

4.20 Ten boys had been residing in one of the training schools immediately prior to being remanded in Lisnevin by the courts. Another 5 were absconders from the training schools when they were sent to the Remand Unit. The Hydebank Young Offenders Centre had transferred 2 others to Lisnevin at the court's direction. Seven others had been living in their own homes, and another was said to have been "Living rough", before admission to the Remand Unit. The courts remanding boys to Lisnevin were Belfast (9), Antrim (3), Killyleagh (3), Craigavon (3), Lisburn (2), Londonderry (1), Limavady (1), Bangor (1), Newtownards (1) and Cookstown (1).

SPT-16251

4.21 Most of the remandees had previous convictions eg: 19 had previously been committed to training schools. Thirteen were currently charged with offences relating to motor vehicles ie: 10 taking and driving away and 3 "allowing themselves to be carried". Several boys were charged with theft and in one case this was in conjunction with causing grievous bodily harm. The most serious offences were attempted murder (1), rape (1), arson (1) and possession of fire arms (1). Two boys had been in remand for 6 months, one for 4 months, 3 for 3 months and 3 for 2 months. The remainder had been in the Remand Unit for one month or less including 5 who were there for less than one week.

#### SUMMARY

4.22 Over the period of the inspection 102 children had been committed on care grounds, 136 were classified as offenders and 43 were committed for non-attendance at school. It

26.

should be noted that complete segregation into one of these 3 categories is not possible in absolute terms. For the purposes of categorisation the legal "ticket" by which the young people were admitted to school has been used.

- 4.23 In attempting to describe some of the characteristics of the children and training school it must be said that the "typical child" could not be identified. The majority of the boys and girls on the care side of the training schools had previous histories of being in care. Some had been admitted from children's homes, where the problems of behaviour presented such acute management difficulties that a Training School Order seemed to be the only means of dealing with them. There appeared to be few adjudicated female offenders in the system. It is difficult to say to what extent care proceedings were instituted instead of the police becoming involved. It may be that the Courts still view girls as being at greater risk in terms of moral danger than boys.
  - 4.24 Many of the girls had been the subject of sexual abuse. The length of stay of, for example, the girls in St Joseph's may be an indication of the considerable amount of time and effort that has to be spent in dealing with such cases.
  - 4.25 Homelessness now features prominently in the lives of many of the young people in training schools. Many come from fragmented families or indeed situations were they have

27.

experienced family rejection and the possibility of re-intergration is remote. The subject of homeless and the changes in the socio-economic structure of society, coupled with the problems of social security entitlement will be explored in detail in Chapter 9 of the report on After Care.

# SPT-16254

### 5. THE STAFF

- 5.1 In training schools, there are 2 main categories of staff involved in the residential task; residential social workers and teachers. There is also a range of support staff, aftercare or community care social workers, night supervisors, administrative, finance, nursing, cooks, domestic, gardening and maintenance.
- 5.2 Through the use of a questionnaire the Inspectors collected information on the sex, age, designation, length of service, previous career experience, training and qualifications, of the social workers involved in community care and staff who contributed to the residential care task. Included in the latter group were teachers and instructors who performed extraneous duties in the residential units outside of school hours.
- 5.3 For many years the use of extraneous duty staff formed a substantial part of the caring process. Teachers, who received an additional allowance (Extraneous Duties Allowance), usually worked a total of 60 hours per month. This was not a universal policy as one school saw education and care as 2 quite separate entities. The same applied to the use of night supervisors. In 3 of the establishments a core of night supervisors take over the supervision of the young people after 9.30 pm. In the remaining facility the

29.

staff perform sleeping in duties in much the same pattern as that followed in the Area Board and voluntary children's homes.

In total 239 returns were made and the following table 5.4 indicates the total staffing establishment for all training schools at the time of the inspections, but excludes ancillary staff, night supervisors and those teachers not performing extraneous duty. TABLE 1

Directors	4
Senior Deputy Directors	3
Deputy Directors	5
Assistant Directors	9
Dep Assistant Directors	7
Senior Assistants	2
Unit Administrators	2
Principal Social Worker (Community Care)	1
Senior Residential Social Workers	22
Residential Social Workers	121
Wardens	7
Housemothers	11
Senior Social Workers (After Care)	2
Social Workers (After Care)	6
Intake Social Worker	1
Teachers/Instructors (ED)	36

TOTAL

239

30:

5.5 It will be seen from Table 1 that there is not a totally uniform staffing structure. One establishment has posts of Warden and Housemothers, another, Unit Administrators and Senior Assistants. Since the inspections a process of rationalisation is being undertaken and over a period of time it is likely that 2 main categories of residential staff will emerge ie Senior Residential Social Workers and Residential Social Workers. The title of some of the posts are an amalgam of social work terms and some have their roots in the old Approved School System. The senior staffing structure has also been considerably rationalised in the past year.

#### 5.6 TABLE 2

DESIGNATIONS		LENGTH OF SERVICE						
		2-5	6-9	10-14	15-19	20-24	25+	TOTAL
Directors	0	1	0	0	1	1	1	4
Senior Dep Directors	0	0	0	2	0	0	1	3
Dep Directors	0	0	0	0	3	1	1	5
Assistant Directors	0	0	0	4	2	3	0	9
Dep Assistant Directors	0	0	0	4	2	0	1	7
Senior Assistants	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	2
Unit Administrators	0	0	0	0	1	0	1	2
Sen Res Social Workers	0	2	3	12	5	0	0	22
Residential Social Workers	27	37	30	24	3	0	0	121
Wardens	0	0	0	5	2	0	0	7
Housemothers	2	1	2	4	1	1	0	11
Principal SW (Comm Care)	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	1
Sen SS (After Care)	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	2
SW (After Care)	0	0	2	3	1	0	0	6
SW (Intake)	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	1
Teacher/Instructor (ED)	1	3	8	13	8	2	1	36
	30	44	45	77	29	8	6	239

31.

5.7 Table 2 indicates the length of time spent in the training school service. It is clear that there is a low staff turnover, 87% of all staff have more than 2 years service, 69% had more than 6 years and 5% have more than 20 years service. There is also a high correlation between staff length of service and the length of time spent in residential care. A greater mixture of male and female staff would have been more desirable. In St Joseph's few male staff were employed and in St Patrick's the opposite is the case. In terms of female representation at senior level, ie Deputy Assistant Director upwards, Rathgael had 2 women, St Patrick's one and there were no women senior staff in Lisnevin. In St Joseph's all of the senior staff were female.

#### 5.8 Level of Qualified Staff

DESIGNATIONS		LEVEL OF QUALIFIED STAFF						
	CQSW	css	CRCCYP ETC	CERT ED	ISSC/ISCSC	PCSC		
Directors Senior Dep Directors Dep Directors Assistant Directors Dep Ass Directors Senior Assistants Unit Administrators Principal SW Sen Res SW Res SW Wardens Housemothers Sen SW (After Care) SW (After Care) SW (Intake) Teachers/Inst (ED)	1 1 5 21 2 6 1	25	2 1 4 4 1 1 11 15 6 1	3 2 5 1 1 2 6	3	1		
TOTALS	38	7	46	41	3	1		

32.

5.9 The professional qualifications of all training schools staff are set out in Table 3 against the designation. Ninety-one staff (39%) have qualifications in social work or residential child care (38 CQSW, 7 CSS, 46 SRCCYP and CRCCYP, 3 ISSC, IPCSC, and 41 (17%) of all other staff involved in extraneous duties had educational qualifications. In addition a number of staff hold nursing qualifications and a variety of degrees. Several senior staff have also completed the Post-qualifying Social Work Course at Queen's University, Belfast. All staff have detailed job descriptions.

SPT-16258

#### TRAINING

- 5.10 Most of the schools have a policy of recruiting professionally qualified staff to fill vacancies as they arise. When untrained staff are recruited they are encouraged to obtain professional qualifications and may be seconded to full-time training courses. In the late 1970s and early 1980s there was an extensive programme of full-time training. This has slowed down in recent years for a variety of reasons; finance and the availability of more trained staff seeking employment.
- 5.11 Every opportunity is taken to send the residential child care staff on relevant short courses, organised by the DHSS, H&SS Boards, voluntary organisations and the universities. However Management have also found it beneficial to make arrangments for in-service training courses. In some cases the services of recognised

33.

trainers/organisations have been brought in and several courses have been arranged by the Adolescent Psychological and Research Unit. The courses cover such subjects as Sexuality in a Child Care Setting, Child Sexual Abuse, Staff Supervision and Handling Aggression and Conflict.

#### SUPERVISION

- 5.12 The professional supervision of staff in the training schools is somewhat fragmented. A variety of models are in operation. One establishment is in the process of introducing a structured supervision programme. Two use a mixture of formal and informal supervision and another uses an amalgam of individual, group supervision with the additional element of an external consultancy service. All of the schools are progressing towards a system of professional supervision from senior staff downwards and a method of staff appraisal is also about to be introduced.
- 5.13 In calculating the staff requirement of the schools the Castle Priory method was adopted using the following equation.

Child waking weekxCapacity of unitsStaff Working weekNumber of Children requiring<br/>one staff

A ratio of staffing per child was used as follows:

Open Units 1:4 Assessment Reception Units 1:3.5 Closed or Secure Units 1:2.

In addition to the basic formula account was taken of staff leave entitlement and extra staff hours required during the school holidays.

34.

5.14 In general staffing levels were satisfactory. There was some shortfall which required overtime being worked and part-time temporary staff being used in some establishments. An important consideration in arriving at a requisite staffing level was the capacity of units, a vexed question in some establishments with the ever decreasing number of young people being admitted to the schools. Although the present pattern of admission is downward it is difficult to forecast when there may be a change and staffing must be maintained at a level which will enable adequate cover to be provided.

SPT-16261

#### 6. THE PREMISES

6.1 The 4 training schools represent a variety of architectural styles which reflect the current thinking in design of residential establishments covering the period from the early 1950s to the mid-1970s.

#### St Josephs

- 6.2 St Josephs is located about 10 miles south-west of Armagh City on the fringe of the village of Middletown. The school occupies a large open site and is surrounded by farm land. It stands unobtrusively behind a small wood and is approached by a winding tree-lined drive. The centre piece of the site is a 3-storey Convent of the Sisters of St Louis. A chapel, with a distinctive round chancel is to the left of this building.
- 6.3 Complementing the Convent and in a juxtaposition is the main school building/administrative block. In the past this building contained dormitory accommodation for the residents but in recent years the interior was adapted to provide school, office, cooking/dining facilities.
- 6.4 The young people are accommodated in 4, 2-storey house units. There are 2 blocks each containing 2 houses which are linked together by a connecting corridor at ground and first floor level. Each house is a self-contained unit for

36.

8 girls, which can be extended to 9 or 10 in an emergency. All 4 units have the same architectural features and interior design. The units are bright, airy, clean, comfortable and tastefully decorated throughout. Each girl has her own room which has fitted wardrobes, cupboard space, vanity unit, dressing table and mirror, a chair and a bed.

- 6.5 A modern bungalow, situated on an elevated site, to the rear of the campus, is used to provide independence training for girls who are preparing to leave St Josephs. Known as the Hostel it can accommodate 8 girls and the amenities provided include a sitting room, dining room, reception room, bathroom and toilets. In addition there are 4 self-contained flats which can be used for a variety of reasons, staff sleeping in, emergency admissions following recall or at times of crisis in the young people's lives when a period of respite care is required.
- 6.6 A swimming pool and games hall complex is sited centrally between the hostel and the house units and is within easy reach of the school. The games hall is equipped for gymnastics and with a stage at one end, is suited for concerts, discos and other community functions.
- 6.7 The living accommodation for the young persons in St Josephs meets adequately the standards for space, size of bedrooms, set out in the Community Homes Design Guide.

37.

Some of the features for example the fireplace, and furniture together with the tasteful use of ornaments, pictures, photographs and the style of the interior decoration creates an atmosphere which could best be described as "homely". As there are no domestic staff in the house units the upkeep of the premises falls mainly to the girls living there. Clearly these tasks are performed to a very high standard. Furthermore although on occasions there have been outbrusts of very disturbing behaviour when property, furniture and fittings can be vulnerable, there were no obvious signs of damage anywhere on the site.

6.8 The question of the suitability of the location of St Josephs was considered carefully. Few of the girls come from homes within a convenient distance of the school and therefore a lengthy journey has to be undertaken by families and friends. Also those girls who have become involved in Youth Training Programmes normally have to travel by bus into Armagh. However, as St Josephs is providing a service for girls from all over the Province there is no ideal location, ie wherever the school is placed it will not be close to every girl's home.

#### Rathgael Centre

6.9 Rathgael Centre is located on the outskirts of Bangor about 3 miles from the centre of the town. It occupies a large site of some 75-80 acres. The campus is surrounded by a

38.

non-secure fence of hedges, wire netting and a brickwall in places. The House Units spread throughout the grounds, are modern flat roofed structures built in the 1960s style. The site contains an administrative complex, chapel, main school block, workshops, garages, swimming pool and a games hall.

- 6.10 The site, in pursuance of the concept of segregation of Care and Justice is naturally divided by the main drive that runs through the school grounds. To the left of the main drive are 6 care units and these can provide accommodation for 75 boys and girls. Two assessment/reception units known as Short Term Care are located alongside a 10 place Close Supervision Unit (Shamrock House). Also in this section of the school, but to the rear of the site are the 3 recently refurbished units known as the Adolescent Care Units.
  - 6.11 On the opposite side of the main drive is the Youth Treatment section of the campus. This accommodation comprises of 2 double units which incorporate a reception unit and 3 main residential units. A secure self contained unit known as Fox Lodge is also located on this part of the site.
  - 6.12 The 3 Adolescent Care Units have recently been refurbished as has the secure unit Fox Lodge. At present the Close Supervision Unit on the site is also being refurbished.

39.

This is part of a rolling programme of repairs and refurbishment which will modernise all the units bringing the accommodation up to the standard that is in keeping with current thought.

SPT-16265

#### St Patricks

- 6.13 The school occupies a 100 acre site fronting on to the Glen Road, with the Springfield Road to the rear and the Monagh Road to one side. The school is located in a built up area of West Belfast close to the housing estates of Turf Lodge and Andersonstown.
- 6.14 There is a Gate Lodge beside the Glen Road entrance from which the school is approached. The main building which is of a block design and constructed of rustic brick, occupies and elevated site and dominates the local landscape. From its front steps a magnificent panorama of Belfast can be observed. To one side of the building is a substantial house where the religious community is domiciled. Four staff houses are also located on the site just off the main driveway.
- 6.15 A single storey administrative building juts out beyond the site line and is connected to the school by a chapel and gymnasium which enclose a small garden. The complex comprises of a 3 story building running the length of the school with wings at right angles to each side. At the

40.

extremities the wings are joined by classrooms which turn inwards to provide 2 enclosed yards which are separated by the central kitchen and dining room.

SPT-16266

- 6.16 The ground floor provides changing and showering facilities, toilets, recreational and leisure areas and office accommodation for residential social workers. The first and second floors are comprised mainly of cubicles in which the young people sleep and associated living rooms, washing and toilet facilities. One of the first floor wings provides an assessment unit of conference and interview rooms. The sick bay, medical and dental rooms are situated centrally on the second floor with a laundry, sewing room and clothing store located beneath on the first floor.
  - 6.17 Other facilities include 3 Chalets, 1, 2 and 3. Chalets 1 and 2 can accommodate 11 boys each and the units have staff maisonettes attached. Chalet 3 has recently been refurbished and upgraded to provide a secure "Care" facility. Completing the range of resources on the site is an outdoor football pitch, 2 small all weather playing surfaces and handball alleys in close proximity to the indoor sports hall. The sports hall complex has an integrated 25 metre swimming pool with associated changing areas with toilets and showers.

6.18 The ground rises from the rear of the sports hall and

41.

Chalets 1 and 2 towards the Springfield Road exit. Most of it is farmed by boys from the school under the supervision of a qualified instructor. The instructor has a residence close to the rear exit as are a number of outbuildings including 2 Dutch barns, a storage shed for machinery, a garage and 2 loose boxes.

SPT-16267

#### Lisnevin School

6.19 Lisnevin Training School is located on the coast of County Down, approximately 2 miles from Millisle. The building presently occupied by the Training School, stands within the grounds of the former borstal training establishment at Woburn. In the early 1970s a decision was taken to build a secure provision adjacent to the open Borstal. The secure unit was built to Penal Category 3 standards and the building in the extensive grounds is enclosed within a 7 metre high perimeter fence. Following a change in penal policy in Northern Ireland, Borstal Training was dispensed with as an option to the courts, with the opening of the Young Offenders Centre at Hydebank. Shortly after this policy change, and as a result of a public enquiry, the Lisnevin Management Board were required to vacate the premises occupied by them at Newtownards. A Feasibility Study Group reported upon the 2 available buildings at Woburn and they opted for the use of the vacant secure borstal as the new home for Lisnevin Training School.

42.

- 6.20 Because the secure unit was built on penal lines, it was, in many ways, unsuitable for use as a Special Unit for adolescent boys, where the philosophy was based upon child care considerations and the environment was not conducive to the furtherance of those principles. However, a major programme of refurbishing brought about considerable improvements to the building, in terms of colour scheme, use of fabrics, carpeting and the covering-in of the heavy iron doors which were a feature of the original building. Although the decor has been softened there are still problems left with the physical provision.
- 6.21 Pedestrian access to the building is via an entrance hall which is constantly manned between the hours of 7.00 am and 10.00 pm. Beyond the electronically controlled doors the reception area, dining room and a suite of offices which includes the offices of the 2 deputy directors. On the ground floor are 2 wings of sleeping accommodation, which are occupied by the Remand Unit. Associated with the ground floor accommodation are 2 common rooms, classrooms, snack kitchen and other offices. To the rear of the building, adjoined by an interior corridor, is the gymnasium and games room.
- 6.22 On the first floor are 2 wings of sleeping accommodation. These are used by the boys in the Special Unit. Other accommodation on the first floor comprises of office space, living rooms, hobbies room, TV room and classroom accommodation.

43.

- 6.23 Outside the main building, but enclosed within the perimeter fence there are extensive workshops which provide such crafts as joinery, heavy craft, metal work and brickwork. To the rear of the main building is the chapel; a modern hexagonal structure built of matching red brick and the interior is finished in Norwegian Pine. The grounds within the fence are extensive and a full size football pitch is laid out.
- 6.24 The building with all its architectural shortcomings is in a very good state of repair. The use of bright paint, coloured tiles and fabrics does much to soften the institutional feel of the place.

#### SUMMARY

6.25 In general terms most of the accommodation is of a satisfactory standard. Some of the older property is beginning to show signs of wear and the need for a major programme of refurbishment has already been brought to the attention of the appropriate Government Department and the School's Management Board. The newly refurbished units have been upgraded in accordance with the Community Homes Design Guides and Health and Safety considerations. In the secure accommodation the latest fabrics, fittings and safety considerations have been embodied. Although the schools accommodate some of the most difficult young people in the Province, the buildings have not suffered unduly.

44.

6.26 Lisnevin has had a number of major incidents when substantial damage was caused. Fortunately such incidents are rare and it is a tribute to all staff that not only do they exercise careful supervision of the young people and the premises but they have managed to engender a sense of "ownership" and pride in the minds of many of the young people in their care.

# **OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL**

45.

#### 7. DAILY LIFE AND CARE OF THE INDIVIDUAL

- 7.1 In evaluating the daily life of children in training schools it has to be borne in mind, that although the routine of the day is basically similar, there is a considerable degree of difference between the schools. Indeed there are many differences in ethos and emphasis between units on the same campus.
- For most children, during the normal school term, the day 7.2 begins around 7.30 am. Those young people in employment or on YTP may rise earlier. Before breakfast there is the normal ablutions, tidying rooms and some communal duties have to be performed. These include clearing out and setting the fires, cleaning carpets, washing dishes etc. In some of the schools where all the meals are provided centrally there are fewer chores to be undertaken in relation to dishwashing. This is particularly true of Lisnevin where many of the domestic duties are undertaken by staff because of the secure ethos of the establishment the young people do not have access to the kitchen or cleaning implements as many of the latter could be used as weapons.
- 7.3 During term time the normal school timetable is followed, with breaks morning and afternoon, during which time the young people return to their units or places of accommodation for a cigarette. Further reference will be

46.

made to smoking later in this Chapter. After school a range of recreational activities are available and in addition to the use of the swimming pool, games hall etc, many off-campus activities are available. These include visits to leisure centres, museums, forest parks and other places of interest. Again Lisnevin is the exception to this rule, particularly those young people being held there on secure remand.

- 7.4 Supper is served usually between 8.00 pm and 9.00 pm and bedtimes follow between 9.45 and 10.00 pm. Again there are many variations in bedtimes between schools, especially at weekends, where late night television may be watched and rising times on Saturday and Sunday are more flexible. Some of the schools strive for a more normal approach to bedtime with cups of tea or cocoa being taken around an open fire, with the young people in sleeping attire and this period is used as a time of winding down at the end of the day. A time for reflection, quiet conversation and sometimes, the occasional heated argument.
- 7.5 Perhaps it was the question of bedtimes that the Inspectors were most concerned about. There was a tendency to organise bedtimes in a way that ensured that all of the young people, irrespective of age or the time of the year, were in bed before the night staff commenced duty, in other words that the day staff had to settle the young people before they went off duty. Again there were variations

47.

between the schools, and the issued referred to was less of a problem in those establishments where staff performed sleeping-in duty.

SPT-16273

Care of the Individual

- Although many of the young people coming into training 7.6 schools are no strangers to residential institutions, nevertheless considerable importance is placed on their reception. Sympathetic and sensitive reception does much to allay anxieties and fears and the attitude and the response of many boys and girls is moulded by the experience of the first few hours and days in a training school. Of course there are administrative procedures to be followed, records completed and medical examinations carried out but it is the opinion of the Inspectors, based on observation and discussion with the young people, that in general, these procedures are handled with tact, care and understanding. Not all children are fearful and concerned. Some young people arrive in a highly agitated state, being brought from courts by police and absconding as quickly as possible may be the primary aim of many.
  - 7.7 Over the years staff in the schools have developed skills of control and sensitive handling of the young people. Many of the children in training schools are there because other settings have failed and in the case of Place of

48.

Safety Order these are often taken as a response to violence towards staff or property in children's homes. Control and management of difficult behaviour becomes a paramount consideration.

SPT-16274

7.8 The past decade has seen an increase in the identification of young people being subjected to child sexual abuse. For many staff this phenomenon presents them with situations that they have had little experience of. New skills have to be developed, staff support systems have to be reviewed to enable the residential task to be performed with this special group of children and for the staff that their own values and attitudes have to be revised, protected and challenged.

#### Key Workers

7.9 The key worker or primary worker system is in operation throughout the training schools and although this works well it is necessary, because of the staff shift system and the fact that in most establishments the young people are supervised by separate night staff, to ensure that there is always someone on duty who is prepared to act in a key worker role to the young person.

#### Visiting

7.10 Every effort is made to maintain links between the young

49.

people and their families. Visiting varies slightly between schools but in the main the weekends are the time for visits by parents and relatives. Distance from the boys or girls home can be a problem, not peculiar to the training schools, but every effort is made to assist parents with travel arrangements. Parents may visit at most times, outside of school hours, by arrangement. Because many of the young people are granted home leave most weekends, parental visiting is minimal. However, it is a truism that despite the efforts of staff to encourage ongoing parental involvement many young people have few visitors.

#### Reviews

- 7.11 A comprehensive system of reviews of the young people in training schools is in operation. The quality of the reviews vary considerably but most are multi-disciplinary, with residential social workers, psychologists, teachers and where appropriate, nursing staff taking part. Some schools have a format based on Hoghughi's Problem Profiling and renamed Assessment Treatment Profile. This system provides possibly the most comprehensive method of identifying problem areas, allocating tasks and delineates the follow-up action to be taken. Further reference will be made to reviews in Chapter 11 of this report.
- 7.12 It was pleasing to find that in some establishments the young people were encouraged to play a full part in their

50.

reviews. There was an openness and trust between key workers and the young person with reports being discussed freely and the young person being given the opportunity of writing their own contribution to the reviews if they so wished. There are times that the ability of children to set out their own feelings and the perceptions of their lives is greatly underestimated. The quality of the review process has been greatly enhanced by the young people's participation. The Inspectors strongly supported the participation of the young people in their reviews if they so wished and stressed the need for the schools to re-examine their own review procedures.

SPT-16276

#### Behaviour/Discipline

7.13 Many of the young people come to the training schools from situations where their behaviour was deemed to be uncontrollable and where they were not made amenable for breaches of discipline. The issue of control and management of difficult behaviour is a vexed area. It involves staff confidence, adequate support systems, confrontational skills and often physical skills when young people have to be restrained so that they do not damage themselves or others. Damage is frequently caused to furniture and fabrics and unacceptable behaviour has to be confronted. There is power under Schedule 5 of the Children and Young Persons Act (Northern Ireland) 1968 to deal with young people who are deemed to be "so seriously

51.

unruly or disruptive" that they have to be removed from the school. In recent years this power has been used less and less and perhaps this is an indication of a change of attitude among staff. Sadly for some young people locking up is still an option that has to be used.

SPT-16277

- 7.14 There are few sanctions that can be used as control mechanisms, eg withdrawal of privileges, cancellation of leave, fines and early bedtime. However the Inspectors found that some establishments were more successful in controlling behaviour. The importance of maintaining a relaxed informal milieu was emphasised with good communication being seen as a priority. When good communication has been established it is easier for staff to influence the young people. Discipline and order in one school was maintained by:-
  - A framework in each unit which the young people and staff clearly understand.
  - ii. Care, supervision and vigilance of staff.
  - iii. A unity between staff and the young people and a mutual support in implementing policy.
    - iv. Contractual arrangements with the young person.
    - Weekly meetings to assess individual and group progress.

52.

- SPT-16278
- vi. Loss of privileges, in terms of pocket money which is related to the marks system.

#### Marks System

- 7.15 All of the schools operate a marks system, which has its roots in the old Approved School system. Again the systems differ from one establishment to another. In most schools the young people earn marks for behaviour, attitude etc in the house units and in the educational setting. Allocation meetings are held weekly and pocket money, privileges and leave depend upon the level of marks obtained. The marks are allocated by a consensus of the staff and usually the young people are informed at the time of any infringement and that marks have been forfeited and the episode discussed with them. Marks are awarded for general behaviour, language, consideration, politeness, care of the individual's room and personal behaviour. Additional marks can be awarded which lead to bonuses being paid.
- 7.16 The marks systems has been examined on a number of occasions and its validity questioned. In general terms it points up aspects of life where there had been improvement in individual behaviour and those areas which require attention. At an individual level it is the method used by

53.

SPT-16279

management to assess

- i. the young person's weekly progress;
- ii. of helping the young person to see themselves within the group context;
- iii. of setting limits for individuals and of implementing sanctions for inappropriate behaviour.
- 7.17 The Inspectors had the opportunity of seeing the allocation of the marks system in operation, and while recognising that any such system has limitation in assessing individual performance and behaviour, they conclude that in general the arrangement works well.

#### Pocket Money

7.18 Pocket Money is allocated to the young people having regard to a number of factors, including age and marks obtained. Additional sums can be earned by the undertaking of some extra "chores". In practice for many of the young people the allocation of pocket money is essentially a paper transaction when the pocket money is held for them, to reduce the possibility of theft etc. However, they are given their pocket money or savings when they go home on leave. In addition they receive allocations of money for Christmas presents, birthdays and holidays.

54.

7.19 Generally children in care of the Health and Social Services Boards receive a higher rate of pocket money - on an age related scale - than those residing in the training schools. They also receive their pocket money as a right ie without reductions as a sanction. However Rule 29(a) of the Training School Rules advocates "forfeiture of rewards or privileges (including pocket money) for minor acts of misbehaviour". The amount of pocket money paid to children in the training schools is set by the Northern Ireland Office and may be reduced as a disciplinary measure in accordance with the Training School Rules. The different approaches of the Health and Social Services Boards and the Training Schools may need to be addressed at some time in the future before new child care legislation is introduced.

#### Smoking

7.20 Many of the young people in training schools are regular smokers. In general smoking is strictly controlled by staff and limited to 5 cigarettes per day. Cigarettes are usually allocated at fixed times throughout the day. As with other aspects of daily life there are many variations between the schools. Some schools require parental consent for those young people under 14 years of age to smoke and some appear to have no restrictions at all. In some cases the young people can smoke as many cigarettes per day as their pocket money permits.

55.

- 7.21 The Inspectors drew attention to some of the issues involved in smoking and these can be summarised as follows:
  - The law in relation to the sale of cigarettes to young people under 16 years of age.

SPT-16281

- ii. The well documented health hazards associated with smoking.
- iii. The possible spread of infection (herpes) from the sharing of cigarettes between young people.
  - iv. The double standards of staff smoking on duty when the young people are not permitted to smoke.
  - v. The need to review policies on smoking and the introduction of a scheme of incentives for non-smoking.

#### Clothing

7.22 The method of purchasing clothing for the young people is broadly similar to that in Statutory and Voluntary Children's Homes. An allocation of money is set aside monthly and when clothing is to be purchased this is usually done in collaboration with the young person's key worker. In Rathgael Centre the boys and girls wear a

56.

uniform to attend school and casual clothes thereafter. The girls in St Joseph's wear casual clothing but the wearing of jeans to school is not permitted. Lisnevin and St Patrick's boys usually wear jeans and sweaters to school. There were some examples of bulk buying and clothing being held in a central store. As with the levels of pocket money the policy regarding the allocation of funds for clothing also needs to be addressed.

#### **OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL**

57.

#### EDUCATION/VOCATIONAL TRAINING/EMPLOYMENT 8.

- Compulsory education for boys and girls, under 16 years of 8.1 age, is available at all of the training schools. In addition, those young people, who are over 16 years and still in residence, have available to them a wide range of vocational opportunities. In addition a regular programme of social and life skills training is followed. In two of the schools a number of young people attend as day pupils availing of specialist education programmes whilst remaining in their own homes. A feature of the day attenders is that many travel a considerable distance and the attendance rates remain high.
- In educational terms the usual range of general subjects 8.2 are available plus art, physical education, craft design and technology. In some of the schools the educational component is divided into a junior and senior school format. The junior school deals mainly with young people under 15 years of age, with the emphasis on general subjects. In general the primary school model is used in that of the 35 periods of education that each child receives, 22 of them are spent with one teacher. It is understood that this policy brings about a more stable relationship in the school setting.
- The senior schools cater for boys in the 15-19 year old 8.3 category where the emphasis is on vocational training

58.

and an element of remedial education is also available. Boys have the opportunity to attend courses in woodwork, engineering, building, painting and farming/horticultural pursuits. Most of these courses can lead to GCSE Craft Certification.

- 8.4 Other subjects are taught at the schools including wallpapering, decorating, motor engineering, specialist projects with a community emphasis, social studies, typing, commercial subjects and the programme is such that any specialist subject can be provided relative to the needs of the young person. If, for example, on admission to the school, a young person is following a particular course of study arrangements are made for these to be continued either on or off the premises.
- 8.5 Most of the schools have a general aim "to promote learning and enhance the pupil's skill and competence". There are special problems that teaching staff have to cope with. In the training schools education is provided in group situations which are completely different from those prevailing in a normal school setting. There are behavioural, confrontational situations which create stress for both pupils and staff. It is a truism that in many cases the young people see themselves as a captive audience and not always a co-operative one. Many of the young people have had a long history of school absenteeism and consequently are educationally immature and at times can

59.

SPT-16285

be hard to motivate.

- 8.6 Education in the special setting of the training schools requires close liaison with the educationalists and the residential care staff. Problems arising in the school setting or in residential units can be easily carried over into one or the other and consequently mechanisms have had to be established to ensure that as far as possible communication between the 2 sets of staff is open and comprehensive. In some schools this works better than others.
- 8.7 For many years it was the policy of the training schools' management to ensure that, as far as possible, suitable employment was found for a young person before they were licensed or discharged. In the Ministry of Home Affairs "Handbook for Guidance Juvenile Offenders and Those in Need of Care, Protection or Control", Paragraph 80, it sets out the Manager's statutory duty ....."to ensure that the person under supervision is visited, advised and befriended and they are required to give him assistance (including financial assistance if necessary) in maintaining himself and finding suitable employment".
- 8.8 Unfortunately because of the present level of unemployment in the Province, it is not always possible to find "suitable employment". Indeed if a child were to be detained until a suitable long-term job could be found many would not be licensed or allowed home on extended leave as

60.

early as is otherwise desirable. Nevertheless, job finding is an important consideration in the planning for discharge of a young person from training school.

8.9 Considerable use is made of YTP and other Government schemes by the training schools. Despite the low level of unemployment opportunities in many areas, considerable success has been achieved, particularly by the After Care staff to whom the task of finding employment usually falls. Further reference will be made to this activity in Chapter 9.

SPT-16287

9. AFTER CARE

- 9.1 Paragraph 49 of the Training School Rules (NI) 1952, provides that the Board of Management shall appoint "a suitably qualified" person to carry out the after care of pupils when they have left the school. All of the schools have staff who are designated to carry out this task. The numbers involved consist of one staff member in the smaller schools to a team organisation in Rathgael and St Patrick's.
- 9.2 For many years the after care function followed a well established traditional role. This role covered a number of functions such as obtaining suitable employment, accommodation, finance and giving general support to young people on licence. While these functions are still an integral part of the after care role the nature and content of the work has changed significantly. New perspectives in social work thought in relation to young people in institutional care, alterations in the socio-economic structure, demographic changes and developments in related fields of social legislation have all combined to bring about a much wider dimension to the after care function in the training schools. The use of the term after care is now really a misnomer.
- 9.3 A recently published report by the After Care Staff in Training Schools has clearly set out the changing face of

62.

after care. "While the work of the after care departments has developed differently in each training school there are a number of features which are common to all and a number of constraints within which they have to work. These can be summarised as follows:-

- i. Since the publication of the Black Report (December 1979) and in keeping with recent research findings, training schools have developed a greater awareness of the importance of viable family and community links for young people in care.
- ii. Young people in training schools now receive frequent and prolonged leave periods with their families where appropriate. Return to the community is much quicker than was formerly the case, particularly in relation to those young people in the justice sector of the schools.
- iii. Many young people are working out of the training schools and local employment schemes and some attend the schools by day only.
- iv. This increased community orientation has obviously placed more demands on after care departments who are frequently entrusted with the task of monitoring home leave, finding job placements, encouraging family and community links, planning and supervising early release schemes.

63.

In the care field, in keeping with recent developments in 9.4 child care practice and shifts in the focus of social work scrutiny, the typical young person entering training schools is inclined to be seriously maladjusted. These include children who, prior to committal, may have experienced a series of residential or fostering placements which have not met their needs. For these young people rehabilitation within a family is impossible and often undesirable. As such very selective alternative accommodation has to be found. This work obviously necessitates time-consuming searches for appropriate placements which if found require careful and intensive monitoring and support. Placements sought include Barnardos Professional Fostering Projects, specially selected landladies, hostels and members of extended families.

SPT-16289

- 9.5 Changes in the social security system which has the clear policy objective of throwing young people back on dependency on their families, has put increased pressure on after care departments, trying to rehabilitate these young people who, for the reasons outlined, have no family contacts or have contacts which are potentially damaging to their physical, emotional and moral well-being.
- 9.6 As is the experience of many Social Services Departments the problems of alienated, homeless young people will probably be one of the main problems facing training schools in the coming years."

64.

9.7 On the positive side there have been a number of very constructive initiatives emerging, the most notable being the Eastside Project. This joint Rathgael Centre/Eastern Health and Social Services Board initiative, began as a project whose raison d'etre was to establish a more speedy return to the community of those young people living in East Belfast and Castlereagh Unit of Management. From the early beginnings the project has grown and developed as a substantial plank in the Unit of Management's strategy for dealing with difficult adolescents. The project attracted national recognition in 1987 when it was awarded second prize in the Social Work Today competition.

SPT-16290

9.8 The after care staff in training schools feel that the role has now a much stronger "community" orientation and that their designation should reflect that change. They conclude "that this role has extended to encompass a throughcare function and that the task of re-integration of the young person in the community has to commence on the day of admission. "Although the number of young people entering training schools has fallen the extent of the problem behaviour, presented by some, has placed additional and differing demands on staff and resources".

65.

### SPT-16291

#### 10. HEALTH CARE

- 10.1 All training schools have Medical Officers appointed to carry out duties prescribed in Section 50 of the Training School Rules, these include making:-
  - a thorough examination of each child on admission and before leaving the school;
  - ii. a quarterly inspection of each child;
  - iii. a quarterly general inspection of the school, from the hygiene point of view and advice as to dietary and general hygiene;
  - iv. the examination of all sick and ailing children;
  - v. the keeping of medical records; and
  - vi. the making of reports/certificates as required by the Board.

In pursuance of the duties set out above doctors attend the schools regularly. They hold their surgery in the medical rooms which are provided on all sites. The Medical Officers compile a quarterly report for the Department of Health and Social Services where it is seen by the Chief Medical Officer and by a Social Services Inspector.

66.

10.2 The Medical Officers are General Practitioners and the children in the schools are normally transferred to their lists following their admission. When they are the subject of short-term orders, temporary transfers are arranged but full registration is completed for all children on Training School Orders.

#### Medical Records

10.3 If a child is admitted to a training school who has previously been in the care of the Health and Social Services Board then in some cases the Certificate of Health/Free From Infection Certificate is sent to the school. Social Services may also have obtained "parental consent to medical treatment and/or vaccination/immunisation". Following admission to the school the child is seen by the nurse who asks about the medical history, takes the height and weight measurements and notes this information on Medical Record Form RHM. This proforma is also used by the Medical Officer to record his observations when making a general medical inspection and to make clinical notes at the onset of an illness and its treatment etc. A completed Form RHM is held for each child residing in the training school and is kept in a filing cabinet in the medical sector of the school.

#### Nursing Care

10.4 The day to day oversight of the children's health is

67.

provided for by the employment of qualified nursing staff. Most of the schools have a suite of rooms in which basic health care and medical examinations are carried out. Some of the schools has an area known as the sick bay where minor ailments are cared for and this includes the provision of a few beds. In practice should circumstances require urgent treatment the Out Patient facilities of local hospitals are used. The nurses have been used, from time to time, to assist with the programmes of general health and sex education.

#### Dental Care

10.5 Three of the four schools have fully equipped dental surgeries and the dentist visits once or twice weekly. The young people have a dental examination soon after admission and have regular examinations at 6-monthly intervals or more frequently if necessary. The full range of dental and orthodontist services is also available should children require specialist treatment.

#### Psychological Service

10.6 A service to training schools is provided by the Adolescent Psychological and Research Unit. The psychologists provide a diverse range of forensic, educational and clinical skills in the assessment of children and their families as to (1) assessment of optimal placement; and (2) treatment or intervention. The psychologists also perform roles of

68.

research, training, management consultancy and staff support/development. As well as the involvement with children and young persons, the psychologists contribute professional advice and support to all of the schools and have a direct role in evaluating potential admissions to the secure units at Rathgael and Lisnevin. Their professional independence makes a valuable contribution to the various models of inter-disciplinary assessment in the schools as well as providing an independent sounding board for staff and management. The APRU psychologists provide inter-agency contact with the various networks of Probation, Social Services, Health and Education and specific specialist resources within these agencies, for example, special education and adolescent psychiatry.

10.7 The skills of the psychologists are particularly valuable in that they have a major impact on the development of a professional ethic within the training school system. The quality of psychological input to the various schools is unanimously acclaimed and each of the schools seemingly would welcome more psychological time. By virtue of training and experience the APRU psychologists, as individuals and as a group, possess skills which are not found, or at least not developed, in other professional groups. These include skills in psychometrics, in the observation, scaling and measurement of behaviour, in research and evaluation and in the application of psychological principles to the management of behavioural

69.

SPT-16295

problems at an individual level and/or family level and to management at an institutional level in terms of the development of systems or policy. Among specific areas of work coming to the attention of the Inspectors were research on self-injurious behaviour and the development of a pro-forma record form for such incidents, treatment of sex offenders, diversion of care cases and offenders to the community following psychological assessment and an inter-agency treatment package, social skills training making use of video. Neuropsychological investigation (where there was a suspicion of minimal brain damage), measurement and management of adolescent depression, staff training in the handling and management of aggressive behaviour, intervention in cases of child sexual abuse, assessment and consultancy concerning potential admissions of children to secure units, educational assessment and research forms part of the work of APRU. In addition the psychologists have frequently organised training seminars and workshops and the Inspectors feel they have an important contribution to make to the development of training initiatives within the schools.

#### **Psychiatric Services**

10.8 The full range of psychiatric services are available to the training schools. Dr Ewan McEwan, Consultant in Adolescent Psychiatry also provides a service to the schools. In some situations he has a regular scheduled arrangement to visit and in others he is available to accept appropriate referrals.

70.

SPT-16296

- 11. REGULATIONS AND RECORDS
  - 11.1 The Training School Rules SR0132/1952 sets out the regulatory framework for the administration of the Training Schools. Rule 53 of the Direction states that "The Management Board shall arrange for the keeping of all registers and records required by the Ministry and shall cause to be sent to the Ministry such returns, statements and other information as may be required from time to time".
  - 11.2 All of the schools maintained the records required by the Rules. These records include an Admission and Discharge Register, Major Incident Book, Record of Fire Drills and a Licensing Certificate Book. The latter record refers to the formal Certificate of Licence that each young person receives upon their formal licence from the School. The Certificate of Licence gives details of the conditions as to residence and date of release.
  - 11.3 Detailed case records are kept on each young person. The young people are reviewed every 3 months and after one year in residence they are reviewed by the Licensing Committee. The Licensing Committee is a sub-committee of the Management Board whose function is to review individual children and approve their licence. Some Licensing Committees act as an internal review body and some are supported by co-optees or resource persons who may have

71.

a particular contribution to make to the review process for example, managers of YTP Schemes or headmasters of local schools.

- 11.4 The review process differs considerably between the schools. One establishment concentrates all reviews centrally with residential staff in attendance and providing written reports. Another school invites the young people to contribute to their reviews in writing if they wish and the boys and girls are given an opportunity to attend the reviews.
- 11.5 The records kept on the children were comprehensive and well kept and the general standard of recording throughout the schools was satisfactory.

72.

#### 12. MONITORING ARRANGEMENTS

- 12.1 The duties of the Board of Managements are set out in Rule 10 of the Training School Rules.
  - 10(1) The Board of Management shall maintain an efficient standard throughout the school and for this purpose they shall take into consideration any report that may be communicated to them by or on behalf of the Ministry.
    - (2) It shall be the duty of the Board of Management to ensure that the condition of the school and the training, welfare and education of the boys and girls under their care are satisfactory, and for this purpose they shall pay frequent visits to the school.
    - (3) The school shall be visited at least once a month by at least one member of the Board of Management, who shall satisfy himself regarding the care of the boys or girls and the state of the school, and shall enter his conclusions in the log book or other convenient record kept at the school.
    - (4) The Board of Management shall exercise an effective control over all expenditure.

73.

12.2 It was clear that the schools were being visited regularly by Board members. These visits were not limited to the requirements of the Rules ie monthly. However the quality of the records of the visits indicated that perhaps too much attention was paid to the physical condition of the buildings and the general fabric of the accommodation. Over the years the quality of the recording of the visits had improved somewhat.

SPT-16299

- 12.3 The Inspectors felt that the general quality of visiting by Board Members on a formal basis could be improved if a system of monitoring, similar to that suggested in the Department of Health and Social Services Circular HSS(CC) 6/83 were introduced. The Inspectors recommended the adoption of a system of monitoring akin to that used within the Health and Social Services Boards in respect of their residential child care services.
- 12.4 Following the completion of the inspection programme formal discussions took place with all of the Management Boards and a framework for monitoring visits by Board Members was discussed. Board Members carrying out the monthly visits will:-
  - ensure that as far as possible, that the needs of the young people in the Training Schools are properly met; and

74.

ii. that this will involve the visitor gradually getting to know each young person and the particular programme of care or plans that have been drawn up for him/her.

SPT-16300

- 12.5 The Members have been asked to concentrate on the quality of the young person's social/emotional care and will seek to examine issues such as:-
  - general arrangements for the care of the young person;
  - ii. supervision of the young people within the unit;
  - iii. the relationship between the young people and care staff;
  - iv. methods of control and discipline used and sanctions imposed;
  - arrangements for religious observance other than on campus;
  - vi. social and recreational activities undertaken;
  - vii. contact with the local community.
- 12.6 The quality of physical care will be examined and the

75.

### SPT-16301

framework will include:-

- i. general condition of the unit;
- ii. standard of furnishing;
- iii. arrangements for fire precautions;
- iv. safety standards within the Unit;
  - v. arrangements for medical care and hygiene;
- vi. the standard of catering;
- vii. the standard of clothing;
- viii. arrangements for pocket money.
- 12.7 The records required by the Rules will be examined and at the completion of the visit a report will be made available to the meeting of the Management Board and signed by the Chairman. Such detailed visiting and reporting is probably too much to ask of any one Board Member, having regard to the size of the facility, and consequently it is envisaged that the areas of work to be monitored will be undertaken by all Board Members over a period of time. Hopefully a pattern of the work being undertaken in the Schools will emerge and for the future a clearer statement of monitoring

76.

will be available to the Board itself and to the Northern Ireland Office.

#### **OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL**

77.

#### 13. CONCLUSIONS

- 13.1 The past 5 years has seen a period of unprecedented change within the training schools. Even the term training school no longer accurately reflects the nature of the work being undertaken. Management of the schools have embodied new thought and practice into the day to day operation of the facilities and this has reflected favourably upon the quality of care being provided.
- 13.2 For some staff the period of change has not been without its problems. New skills have had to be acquired, a openess in sharing with the children and young people in the schools have made new demands upon staff. For some the changes have been too great and they have sought employment elsewhere or taken early retirement. For many years the training schools were considered residential establishments where a "no nonsense approach" was adopted and they were often used as a threat to children misbehaving in other children's residential facilities.
- 13.3 Although some of the old ideas and terminology still prevails within the system, in general the staff in training schools are much more professional in their approach and have been prepared to adapt to change and in some circumstances are expert in their field. It is to the training schools that the organisation of secure accommodation have fallen. The emotive subject of locking

78.

up children has often created much debate within social work. It has created much double think and has had obvious implications for practice. The training schools management have faced these issues and through the development of gatekeeping mechanisms have ensured that only those children absolutely requiring secure care are admitted. Although at this time secure accommodation is not covered by regulations, every effort has been made to follow the general guidelines that are a statutory requirement in other parts of Great Britain. When there have been incidences of the inappropriate use of security these have been highlighted by the Inspectorate and policy and practice has changed.

13.4 Training schools have come along way since the days of the Industrial Schools and the use of a tall ship moored in the Musgrave Channel. Those were the days when perhaps 2 staff had the responsibility for the care and supervision of up to 100 children at a time. As one old member of staff, now long since retired said, "When I started in the training schools I was given a table-tennis bat, a whistle and a bunch of keys and told to get on with it". That was leisure, control and security in the 1940s and not a social worker in sight.

79.

## SPT-16305

APPENDIX A

#### Inspection of Training Schools

#### STAFF FORM

SECI	CION A: PERSONAL DETAILS	OFFICE USE ONLY
1.	Name of Training School	[]
2.	Name of Staff Member	i I
з.	Date of Birth//	[/]
4.	Age	[]
5.	Sex:	
	(a) Male [ ] (b) Female [ ]	[]
6.	Designation: (a) Director [] (b) Senior Deputy Director [] (c) Deputy Director []	[]
	<ul> <li>(d) Assistant Director</li> <li>(e) Deputy Assistant Director</li> <li>(f) Senior Assistant</li> <li>(g) Senior Residential Social Worker</li> </ul>	
	<ul><li>(h) Team Leader (Warden) [ ]</li><li>(i) Residential Social Work [ ]</li></ul>	
	<pre>(j) Housemother [] (k) Field Social Worker (After Care) [] (l) Teacher/Instructors (Those</pre>	
	(m) Night Supervisor [] (n) Other []	
7.	Length of time in this Post (years)	[]
8.	Length of time in the training school service (years)	[]
9.	Length of time in residential child care (years)	[++]

## SPT-16306

SECT	ION C: QUALIF	ICATIONS		OFFICE USE ONLY
10.	Does this person already possess: (Tick as many options as appropriate.)		[]	
	(d)	CQSW or Equivalent CSS SRN/SEN NNEB PCSC/PCCC/PCRC/PRC		[]
	(f) (g) (h)	CRCC/CRCCYP/SCRCCYP DEGREES (BA BSc BSocSc) ICSC/ISSC Cert. in Education		
	(i)	(& other teaching quals) Please Specify Other		
	(k)	Please Specify	[-]	
11.	Has this pers	on completed a post qualifying cou	irse in:	[]
	(b)	Management Studies Child Care Another Subject		
	(d)	Please Specify None of These	[]	
12.	Other signifi	cant information:		[]
	(a)	Employed previously in Children's Homes/Training School	[]	[]
	(b)	Employed previously in Mental/Physically Handicapped Homes	[]	
		Employed previously in OP Home Clerical jobs only Employed previously in nursery/ primary/secondary schools		
	(h)	Youth Clubs Nursing Other Please Specify		
	(j)		[ ]	

## SPT-16307

SECT	ION D: TRAINING	Office USE ONLY
13.	Is this person currently studying for: (Tick as many options as appropriate.)	[]
	(a) CQSW or Equivalent [] (b) CSS []	
	(b) CSS [] (c) NNEB []	
	(d) PCSC/PCCC/PCRC/PRC []	
	(e) CRCC/CRCCYP	
	(f) DEGREES (BA BSc BSocSc) []	
	(g) ICSC/ISSC [ ]	
	(h) Cert in Education	
	(& other teaching quals) [ ]	
	Please Specify	
	(i) Other []	
	Please Specify	
14.	Is this person currently undertaking a post-	[]
	qualifying course in:	
	(a) Management Studies []	
	(b) Child Care []	
	(c) Another Subject []	
	Please Specify	
	(d) wone of these	
15.	Is this person currently receiving In-Service Training or Day Release to attend courses/seminars.	[]
	(a) Yes [ ] (b) No [ ]	
16.	Please list all courses attended by this staff member in the last twelve months excluding those mentioned in questions 13 and 14.	[]
	• • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • • •	
SECT	ION E: DETAILS OF OFFICER COMPLETING THIS STAFF FORM	
17.	NAME OF OFFICER	
18.	DESIGNATION	
19.	TELEPHONE	
20.	SIGNATURE	
21.	DATE	[/]

## SPT-16308

APPENDIX B

Inspection of Training Schools

#### RESIDENT'S FORM

SEC	TION A: PERSONAL DETAILS	OFFICE USE ONLY
1.	Name of Training School	[]
2.	Name of Child/Young Person	[ ]
з.	Date of Birth//	[/]
4.	Age years months	
5.	Sex:	
	(a) Male [ ] (b) Female [ ]	
6.	Unit of Management responsible for child: (Care Cases	E 1
7.	Please indicate where the young person is on Census Day <pre>(a) In this Training School [] (b) Temporarily resident in another Training School [] (c) Boarded Out [] (d) In Hospital [] (d) In Hospital [] (e) Extended leave [] (f) YOC [] (g) Absconder [] (h) Other [] </pre>	

## SPT-16309

SECI	ION B: RESIDENTIAL DETAILS	OFFICE USE ONLY
8.	Legal Status:	
	<pre>(a) Training School Order [] (b) Place of Safety [] (c) Interim Fit Person Order [] (d) Interim Detention Order [] (e) Remand [] (f) Other [] Please specify</pre>	[ ]
9.	Immediate Previous Placement:	
	<pre>(a) Own Home [] (b) Children's Home [] (c) Foster Home [] (d) Assessment Centre [] (e) Hospital [] (f) Other (specify)[]</pre>	[]
10.	Date of Training School Order//	[//]
11.	Date Admitted to this School//	[/]
12.	Date of last Review//	[/]
13.	Has this Child/Young Person been admitted to Training School previously	[]]
	(a) Yes [ ] (b) No [ ]	

# SPT-16310

SECTION C: EDUCA	TION AND EMPLOYMENT	OFFICE	
l4. Is this Child	d/Young Person currently:	[	1
(c)	Employed Part-Time [] On a YTP scheme or similar [] Voluntary work []		
5. Is this Child	d/Young Person receiving Education:	į t	]
(c) (d) (e)	Secondary/Grammar School [] Technical College [] Training School day pupil []		
SECTION D: FUTUR	E PLANS (Tick as many options as appropriate)		
l6. Is this child	d/young person:		]
(a) (b)	relatives []		
(c) (d)	In preparation for Fostering [ ] In Preparation for independent Flat/Accommodation [ ]		
(e) (f)	Transferring to other children's home/hospital/institution [] None of these []	i (	]
.7. Other signif:	icant information:		
(a)	Lives with relatives for		
(b)	Physically/Mentally handicapped or requires other special care []		
(c)	Other [ ] Please Specify		
(d)	None of these [ ]		
SECTION E: DETAIL	LS OF OFFICER COMPLETING THIS RESIDENTS FORM		
8. NAME OF OFFIC	CER		
19. DESIGNATION			
20. TELEPHONE	•••••		
	•••••		

#### HIA Inquiry

Page 64 1 What I want to talk to you now about is the external assistance that you were given. We were -- again you 2 cover a long period in St. Patrick's. 3 So if I can take the period up to \_\_\_\_, when you are 4 5 on the senior side, and the Ministry of a 6 Home Affairs is in charge of regulating the training 7 schools, you have recollections of Ms Forrest and 8 Dr Simpson I think coming in to assist. Can you give 9 the Panel some recollections of that type of engagement? 10 When they visited the school, they took a tour of Α. 11 virtually every part of it and then they would have had 12 a long conversation with the principal at the time, you 13 know, maybe lasting all -- the exercise might last a 14 morning or an afternoon and apparently they were very 15 helpful, and particularly in the case of Miss Forrest, she was readily available for consultation, available to 16 17 the principal for consultation, and she would be a very 18 frequent, shall we say, informal visitor. 19 So again the point we were looking at in a different 0. 20 context was there actually would have been historically 21 a lot of work going on in this area as well, but there's 22 not necessarily documents and, in fact, we don't have the inspection file at all, but even if we had, there 23 24 would be a formal inspection report, but what you are 25 saying is you can recollect her being -- as well as the

# SPT-10420



NORTHERN IRELAND OFFICE ROYSTON HOUSE UPPER QUEEN STREET BELFAST BT1 6HV

The Most Reverend Anthony Farguhar Chairman St Patrick's Training School 73A Somerton Road BELFAST BT15 4DE

12 March 1990

iles Body Frequence,

ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

I have recently assumed responsibility for the NIO division which encompasses Training Schools Branch and I have been looking forward to meeting you and your St Patrick's management team at an early date. I regret that before doing so, I am obliged to write to you in the following terms.

You will recall that an inspection of the School was carried out by the Social Services Inspectorate of DHSS on behalf of the Secretary of State in January 1988. The report contained 52 recommendations and was issued in February 1988. On 24 January this year, SSJ carried out a follow-up inspection. I enclose a copy of their report. You will note that the Inspectorate is far from satisfied with progress in implementing its earlier recommendations and is deeply concerned about a number of problems. In forwarding the report to me the Chief Social Services Inspector has commented:-

Davi Con

"In general terms the follow-up report presents a picture of a facility which is in serious physical decay, is poorly managed, suffers from low staff morale but most importantly provides a standard of care for children which has little or no regard for human dignity and which is unacceptable by modern standards".

SPT-10421



He has told me that unless action is taken on some of the key points within a matter of days, he will have no alternative but to advise the Health and Social Services Boards not to send any children to St Patrick's.

Clearly this is a most serious situation and, whatever the long-term future may hold, both the management of St Patrick's and the Northern Ireland Office must consider what we can do <u>now</u> to address the problems.

On the question of improving the physical state of the property, there are, as you know, difficulties in committing major sums of public money until the long-term future of the School has been decided. However certain measures can, and must, be taken right away. For our part we have put in hand an urgent study of what remedial action of a "first-aid" nature can be taken quickly and I hope to have details of this within a few days. Some other problems are of a "housekeeping" nature and no doubt you will take these on board.

Fire safety is obviously of the utmost importance and you have written to us about this following Mr McKeag's survey which I understand took place just after the DHSS inspection. As Mr Ireland has informed you, we have asked Brother O'Riordan for copies of previous fire inspection reports but as yet none has been received. However, Fire Authority advice has been sought and while we have not yet received a written report, I am advised that:-

a. the list of defects prepared by Mr McKeag is not accurate; and

b. the defects which do exist do not constitute an immediate threat to health and safety. Accordingly, the Fire Authority is prepared to accept the continued use of the chalets on the understanding that refurbishment and modernisation is not long delayed.

SPT-10422



I understand that while there is no automatic fire alarm system in chalets 1 and 2, there is a manual one, and that although there is no immediate access to emergency lighting, there is a site emergency generator which becomes operational within 60 seconds. Similarly the existing electrical wiring was installed to the standard of the 14th edition of the IEE regulations and is in a satisfactory condition. All these systems are considered adequate for the moment, but should be modernised at an early opportunity. We are advised, however, that many of the existing light fittings, especially in the bedroom areas, present a potential safety hazard and that a number of socket and power outlets have become broken, dislodged or scorched. Appropriate remedial action for these will form part of our first-aid plan.

The other major area of concern, arises from continuing inadequacies in childcare practice and the Inspectorate advise that immediate attention must be given to the areas of staff supervision, night supervision of children, institutional practices, poor management, fire drills and security arrangements. The Chief Inspector has placed on record his willingness to provide professional help and guidance on an on-going basis to facilitate the dramatic improvements considered necessary in this field.

Such is the seriousness, and urgency, of the situation that I think we ought to meet at an early date to consider the report, and agree a programme of action. I would be happy to come to St Patrick's for that purpose, and the Chief Inspector of Social Services, Dr Kevin McCoy, would be happy to accompany me. Perhaps when you have had a chance to digest the findings, and discuss them with your colleagues, you would get in touch.

SPT-10423

----Se . 1 . 14 1.1 -4-BR 98 We have sent a copy of the report to in his capacity as School Yours sincerely Alm A D SHANNON ENC

ID/ADS1

للمسسط

SPT-10424

### COMMENTS FROM THE BOARD OF MANAGEMENT OF

ST. PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL

SUBSEQUENT TO THE FOLLOW-UP INSPECTION REPORT

FORWARDED TO THE CHAIRMAN BY MR. SHANNON ON

12TH MARCH 1990

.

A special meeting of the Board of St. Patrick's Training School took place on Friday, 23rd March. The planned meeting for 2nd April was also held.

The special meeting was called to discuss Mr. Shannon's letter to the Chairman and the follow-up Inspection Report. These were further discussed at the meeting of 2nd April. Both documents were fully discussed in an attempt to ascertain areas:-

- where the recommendations of the General Report had been satisfactorily implemented
- (2) where the Board had shown undue delay in implementing recommendations for whatever reason
- (3) where the Board and Management had no control over what had not happened
- (4) where the Board considers that true progress made since the General Inspection had not been clearly acknowledged
- (5) which had only arisen since the time of the General Inspection.

Various members were asked to investigate different areas.

It was thought that some areas e.g. references to the long-term strategy for St. Patrick's Training School, should best be left to the forthcoming meeting of Mr. Shannon with representatives of the Board,

The long discussion of the two documents took place against a background of dismay at the difference between the tone of the original report and the follow-up report accompanied by Mr. Shannon's letter.

The original report, Section 17.1 said: "During the very difficult times of the past 20 years the De La Salle Order has continued to provide a residential service in West Belfast for Catholic boys in trouble, from all parts of the Province. At times this has been a very difficult service to sustain and it is to the credit of all the staff, through their commitment and by the leadership given by the Brothers and successive directors, that it has been possible to sustain the quality of care provided for the young people".

In contrast with this the Chief Social Services Inspector now comments: "In general terms the follow-up report presents a picture of a facility which is in serious physical decay, is poorly managed, suffers from low staff morale but most importantly provides a standard of care for children which has little or no regard for human dignity and which is unacceptable by modern standards".

The Board also found surprising the contrast between the reference to the 'full assistance' offered throughout the original inspection and the recurrent use in the follow-up Inspection Report of 'apparently', 'seemingly', 'I was told', 'I do not know but if' etc. which might be taken to indicate that answers were not given to questions asked about such areas rather than, as was the case, such questions were not asked.

Indeed, on re-studying the documentation, members of the Board were worried lest information had been less readily made available to the Inspector than at the time of the original inspection. Members were reassured that this was not the case, and that every co-operation was indeed given.

SPT-10425

SPT-10426

		- 2 -					
18.1 18.2 18.3 18.4	Implana	Pote					
	Impleme	inted.					
18.5	that the	raining: The Board understands that the Inspector accepts steps taken so far should ensure that suitable training f will take place in the near future.					
18.6	female s deemed Mr. Don short lis Equal O	ns the policy of St. Patrick's Training School to appoint staff when suitable candidates apply. It had not been suitable to shortlist the two candidates referred to in anell's report. To include these two applicants in the st would have been inconsistent with the principles of pportunities legislation to which we in St. Patrick's y committed.					
18.8	'in hand and man within s the Lisn	pervision: As stated to SSI, this recommendation is Considerable progress has been made in recent months agement are confident that it will be fully implemented ix months. Management will gladly avail of any assistance nevin model of staff supervision can provide and approaches ready been made to Mr. McCloskey for assistance.					
18.9	Impleme	nted.					
18,10	"At least one residential social worker should sleep in each unit during the night".						
	While we do not have a sleeping-in arrangement in each unit as suggested, we have the following arrangements:-						
	(i)	RSW sleeps in Slemish House					
	(ii)	RSW sleeps in Chalet 2, also covering Chalet I.					
	(iii)	BR 94 who has overall responsibility for the Justice area, sleeps in Slemish House - adjacent to his unit					
	(iv)	Mr. Murphy, Sen. RSW, who is responsible for the Reception area, lives on the school campus.					
	(v)	The Director, Senior Deputy Director, Bro. John Sen, RSW and BR 96, RSW, also live on the campus.					
	These an telephon	re all connected to all units in the school by an internal e system. (Appendix 1)					
	The record of the school in answering emergencies, day or night, over the past 70 years speaks for itself.						
	presence However unsatisfa	rd was disappointed that the high level of on-campus on the part of the Brothers was not acknowledged. , if the NIO thinks that the present arrangements are actory and would wish to provide a more comprehensive management would be happy to comply.					
18.11 & 18.12	Implemen						

- 3 -

SPT-10427

18.13

Renovation of toilets etc.: The Board is pleased that the NIO accepts its responsibility in this area. If the situation is such that the Environmental Health officer "might have been forced to have taken drastic action", then the Board does not feel that this problem can be left to the long-drawn-out process of a feasibility study. The delay in dealing with this problem can be documented to 1986 and, even in the revised plan of work, this was to have been carried out in 1988/89. The Board is confident that all that can be done at school level to provide cleanliness is being done. (Appendices 2A and 3A)

#### 18.14 & 18.15 Implemented.

The recently established Licensing Review Committee has, management believes, provided the Key Worker with a higher degree of accountability for the care programme of each boy. The Key Worker is obliged to provide a written report to this Committee and, when possible, appear in person before the Committee to explain his/her plan and answer questions about his/her role. The chain of professional responsibility is assured by having the Team Leader comment on the care programme, as described by the Key Worker, to the Committee. This heightening of the profile of the Key Worker will obviously encourage a more direct role in the review process.

It will be possible to advance further along the road of implementation when proper facilities are provided other than in the Assessment Unit.

18.16

The Board accepted that this recommendation was now implemented but expressed concern that night supervisors should be invading the privacy of residents by opening bedroom doors. It would ask, as a matter of urgency, that doors with sliding panels be fitted to the rooms to facilitate night supervision without entering the bedrooms.

18.18

18.19

Pocket Money/Special Allowances: Training Schools are not yet in a position to implement this. All boys do now receive some remuneration. Within our financial constraints we have taken on board a system whereby birthdays, bonus systems, etc. can merit additional pocket money.

Information to hand would indicate that, in this respect, allocations to Training Schools fall far short of that recommended by EH&SSB. This also applies to allocations for clothing.

Recommendations regarding clothing are being addressed along the lines suggested by the Inspectorate and will be operational early in the new financial year.

An attempt has been made to balance value with individualism. The use of second-hand or rather used laundered clothing is now confined to rough work as was suggested in the original recommendations.

The Board agreed that it is very difficult to ascertain the dividing line between defeatism and a realistic awareness of the problem of pilfering where access to rooms is recommended for the boys. While it is not nearly as widespread as the Report suggests, it is hoped that the long-awaited provision of single rooms will further reduce the incidence of pilfering. (Appendix 4).

SPT-10428

÷		- 4 -
	18.20 & 18.21	Implemented.
	18.22	Much good work had already been done by APRU (Mr. G. Cunningham and Mr. Swainston) and it is envisaged that this work will be ongoing.
18	18.23	The Board agrees that the area of case files was of great importance. The Director reported that considerable improvement has been made. The Board was surprised to hear that the Inspector was 'told' that little change had taken place. Members found it difficult to understand why a request was not made to see the files once such a claim had been made.
		In view of their experience and expertise in this area, Fr. McCann and LN 34 were asked to look at a random selection of case files and report back to the Board. In their report they state that: "The files we examined in Reception and Assessment were, in our opinion, of the highest standard". (Appendix 5)
	18.24	(Par. 23-26 of the Follow-up Report). It was accepted that the deterioration in fabric and furnishing has progressively worsened in recent months. Management accepts its share of the blame for allowing the deterioration. It also accepted in good faith that the priority work programme of 88/89 would have been implemented. Our experience of working with the NIO over the years could have justified this faith and trust. Now, at last, it is happy to report that an emergency face-lifting programme is presently in progress pending implementation of an agreed renovation schedule.
		Some of the furniture referred to in the Follow-up Report has been stored awaiting the carrying out of this face-lift and will be in position as soon as that face-lift is completed. (Appendix 2C)
		The members of the Board were assured that at no time has any member of management alleged religious discrimination in the allocation of funds. No one at Board level has done so. Certain questions have been asked as to why work on the chalets and similar work has been repeatedly postponed while other similar schools have had such work done. A request for parity of treatment for schools of similar nature cannot be interchanged with allegations of religious discrimination. The Board would resent any attempt to do so.
		Reference to maintenance is incomprehensible given the physical state of the school. In the opinion of the Board, the inference that a major part of the decline of the condition of Chalets 1 and 2 is due to poor management is manifestly untrue.
		The Board noted the comments on financial arrangements for the school, particularly how the report treated questions of underfunding capital and revenue monies for upkeep. These are dealt with at the common level of maintenance. (Appendices 2B, 2D & 2E)
	18.25 18.26 18.27	Not applicable
	18.28-18.29	Implemented
	18.30	Management is conscious of the necessity to reduce the incidence of smoking and would welcome further assistance in this area.

- 5 -

SPT-10429

18.31

Given the background of the client group, it has been management's tradition to approach this sensitive issue on an individual basis. Staff from ground level to the Director are involved in what is in some cases intensive counselling.

There is very close liaison between teaching staff, social work staff, school chaplain and medical staff where cases of high risk have been identified. All staff are acutely aware of the many risks incurred through promiscuous behaviour but management can confidently state that the issues raised by the Inspector are being professionally addressed. Moreover, the advice and support of the Down and Connor Marriage Advisory Service has been sought to structure this ongoing programme.

The Inspector's Follow-up Report gives little recognition to the work that is done in this field on an individual basis with our residents, i.e. the work that has been done other than in a structured educational way. As regards the latter, it was agreed that consideration should be given to programmes in use in schools elsewhere in the Diocese. The Down and Connor Diocesan Religious Advisors have agreed to assist in this.

18.32-18.35 Role of Assessment and responsibility for reviews, etc.: Progress to date has been slow in the implementation of these recommendations. However, steps are being taken to ensure their full implementation and new structures will be in place in the near future. This will entail some training for Sen. RSW in the management of meetings. The Licensing Review Committee will also be monitoring reviews/ progress reports.

> Mr. McKenna welcomed the recent arrangements made for reviews in the Units and the role of his department in same. This will enable him to "become more fully involved in the reception and initial assessment of all young people coming into the school" (SSI Report 7.9)

#### 18.36 18.37 18.38 18.39 18.40 Implemented,

18.41

Role of Field Social Work Department: Management are awaiting a response from NIO to a submission from the Training Schools Community Care Teams regarding future funding arrangements before implementing this recommendation. Meanwhile the Senior Social Worker is aware of the annual budget for his department.

The Board would be interested to know if the Senior Social Worker was in agreement with the comments that "little has been done regarding this recommendation".

- 18.42 & 18.43 Implemented.
- 18.44 Facilities are there for the storage of food but are under-used. This will be discussed further in conjunction with the MMRD recommendations.
- 18.45 This statement is inaccurate. Documentary evidence could have been provided to show that Matron had been given this on 1st December, 1989.

6 -

SPT-10430

18.46	The food committee has been expanded to include representatives from each unit. Boys will also be consulted and their wishes will be catered for, as far as possible. In future Board members will examine the Men'u book as part of their area of inspection. (Appendices 2D, 2E, 3A and 3B)
18.47	The Board acknowledged that there has been undue delay in establishing a regular and documented system of visiting. With the widening of the Board's membership this is now being implemented.
18.48 & 18.49	Implemented.
18,50	The Chairman of the Board has personally examined and signed the Record of Major Incidents at each Board meeting. For that reason the Board found it difficult to understand why the implementation of this recommendation should be deemed 'apparent'.
18.51	The Board acknowledged that undue delay had taken place in carrying out fire drills. A series of fire drills recently carried out have clarified certain areas of difficulty and enabled us to rectify these. The Board acknowledges its recently?
	The Board acknowledges its responsibility to ascertain that the fire safety situation is carefully monitored. The Board would have wished to receive copies of the Fire Authority's written report on its investigation, particularly in the light of Mr, McKeag's report.
18,52	Implemented.

Discussion then took place on one area not mentioned in the original report, namely security and keys.

Par. 53 & 54 This is a new issue and was not included in previous recommendations. Traditionally staff have been considered sufficiently responsible for the safe keeping of their keys and we see no reason to change a system which has stood the test of time.

> However, in Slemish House, keys are not removed from the premises. The Board felt that the areas of the school, other than Slemish House, should be regarded as a school much more than as a high security unit.

Slemish House itself is of a different nature. Keys required by staff on duty are signed for on arrival. Staff also 'sign-in' their keys on completion of duty. Only the Director has a key to that unit on his person.

This fact could easily have been ascertained by the Inspector. Thus could have been avoided the outlining of the hypothetical flaw and the horrific hypothetical scenario which followed it.

The Board is worried that this paragraph, combined with the previous one, might leave an impression of a highly irresponsible management, unconcerned about the security of premises and of staff.

SPT-10431

.....

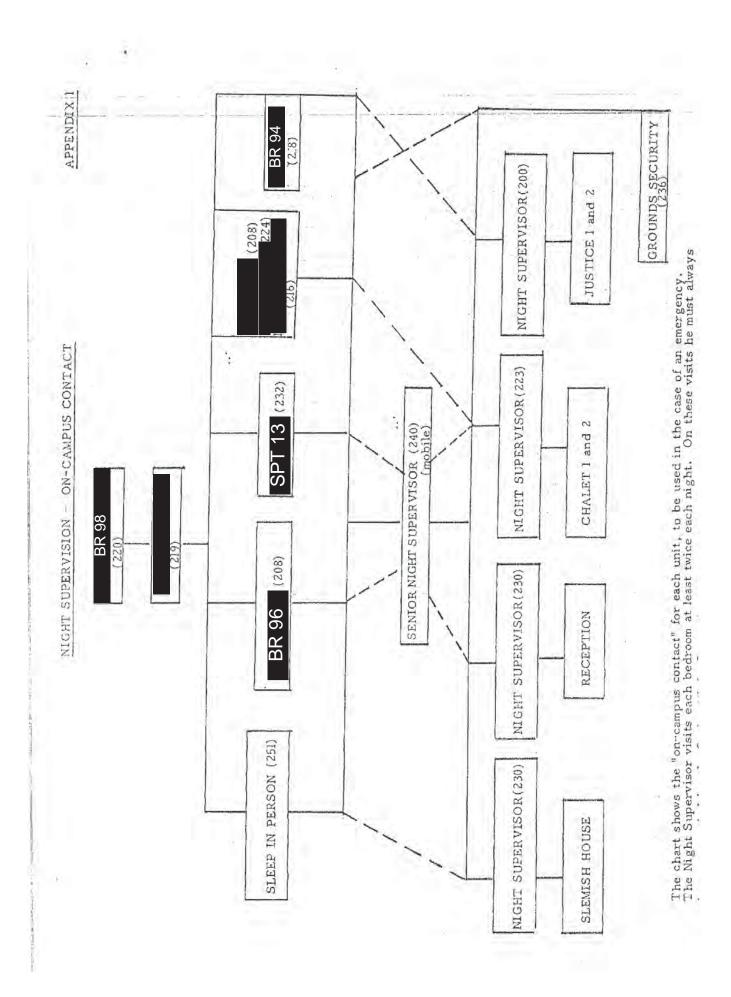
- 7 -

In conclusion, the Board has tried to acknowledge and rectify as a matter of urgency those areas where undue delay in the implementation of the recommendations had taken place.

At the same time it is hoped that this approach will be matched with a similar sense of urgency by others sharing responsibility for the well-being of the children and young people entrusted to our care.

It does not feel that these areas of urgency can be shelved in the name of a prolonged Feasibility Study.

# SPT-10432



#### APPENDIX 2

SPT-10433

On 5 February 1988 St. Patrick's wrote to the Northern Ireland Office to express their concern about these toilets. They had raised similar concern on numerous occasions before and have done so many times since.

In paragraph 18.13 of the Inspector's report dated 23 February 1990 he said regarding the ablution area in the main building: "I have no immediate or quick solutions to these problems" even though in paragraph 5.20 of the February 1988 Report the Social Services Inspectorate said that there was a short term need to improve the showers and toilets.

The Northern Ireland Office's whole attitude in this matter appears to be guided by their total obsession with costs savings in contrast to health and sanitation standards. Indicative of this is the comment contained in the Chief Engineer of the DHSS' letter to the Northern Ireland Office dated 22 May 1989 regarding "Mechanical Services Installation (Showers)" namely: that the Northern Ireland Office's suggestion indicating that St. Patrick's should just replace the mixer valve on a like for like does not comply with present day (1989) standards or acceptable codes of practice for installation. Even though the Chief Engineer went on to recommend to the Northern Ireland Office on or about 22 May 1989 that "depending on the number of boys currently in residence", 3 or 4 shower positions should be completely renovated and the remainder removed from service, the Northern Ireland Office have still not allocated funds for either such renovation or such removal from service.

Even though St. Patrick's wrote to the Northern Ireland Office as recently as the 20 March 1990 the Northern Ireland Office does not appear to have made any helpful short term or long term decision regarding either the toilets or the shower units in the main building.

- B. The Inspector was assured by the Northern Ireland Office that at no time were St. Patrick's ever denied money for maintenance and pointed out that the financial statistics referred to seemed to substantiate this claim. He did not state what the financial statistics were. He did not define "maintenance". He did not point out that the Northern Ireland Office had not produced funds for problems which should have been dealt with in the short term though it is a moot point if such problems come under the term "maintenance". Unfortunately maintenance statistics do not give a clear picture. They do not show, inter alia:
  - (i) That even though the Director sent the Northern Ireland Office on or about 9 June 1989 a report by the Deputy Director dated 23 May 1989 regarding emergency and preventative maintenance and asked the Northern Ireland Office to treat this as a matter of extreme urgency, the Northern Ireland Office have not yet responded thereto.
  - (ii) That even though the Director sent the Northern Ireland Office on or about 26 October 1989 a report by the Deputy Director dated 26 October 1989 regarding "the need for an urgent review of the present system of supervising and co-ordinating the work of the school's Term Maintenance Contractors", and the Director asked the Northern Ireland Office in a letter dated 26 October 1989 to give this matter their immediate and sympathetic consideration and the Northern Ireland Office in a letter to the Director dated 31 October 1989 said that this matter was receiving attention, the Director has received no further response from the Northern Ireland Office to his letter.

SPT-10434

#### - 2 -

#### C. BEDS, EASY CHAIRS, BEDSIDE CHAIRS, BEDSIDE LOCKERS

The Inspector says: "I understand that in the past few years a considerable number of beds, easy chairs, bedside chairs and bedside cupboards were purchased by NIO and provided to St. Patrick's. In addition surplus bedroom equipment at Lisnevin School has also been available to St. Patrick's. There was no evidence of such furniture in Chalets 1 and 2".

Every item of furniture to which the Inspector refers has been accounted for in a stock-take which took place in March 1990.

#### Easy Chairs

The quota of 80 easy chairs was supplied to St. Patrick's. At the time of the inspection, 20 of them were located in Ghalets 1 and 2, i.e. 10 in each chalet. In chalet 2 all of these easy chairs are in the living rooms. In chalet I, 7 were in the living rooms and 3 were in bedrooms (at the time of the stock count). All 10 are now in the living rooms because old furniture in the living rooms was thrown out in March 1990 as it was a fire hazard.

#### Beds

Approximately 100 beds were supplied. At the time of the inspection, ll of them were located in chalet 1 and 11 were located in chalet 2, complete with mattresses. The remainder are located in the residential areas of the main school and in chalet 3, i.e. Slemish House.

#### Bedside Lockers and Bedside Chairs

Management's decision was that boys should have bedside lockers rather than bedside chairs. The lockers for chalets 1 and 2 are in storage pending re-decoration/refurbishment.

The Priority Works Programme which the Northern Ireland Office furnished in or about the month of March 1986 provided f156,000.00 for refurbishing chalets 1 and 2 and specified the financial year 1988/89 for such refurbishment. If such refurbishment had been carried out during that year the bedside lockers would have been in chalets 1 and 2 since 1 April 1989 at latest.

#### D. KITCHEN EQUIPMENT

On 12 March 1987 wrote to Mr. Parke of the Northern Ireland Office pointing out the poor condition of the kitchen equipment.

In the Northern Ireland Office's response dated 19 March 1987 they said that they had written to Works Unit of DHSS to see if there is a shortterm solution. The Northern Ireland Office have still not informed the Director of the contents of the reply from the Works Unit of the DHSS or even told the Director what recommendations the Works Unit of the DHSS have to make regarding a short-term solution.

In paragraph 10.1 of the February 1988 report of the Social Services Inspectorate they said: "there are plans to replace much of the kitchen equipment during 1988".

SPT-10435

- 3 -

#### E. KITCHEN AREA

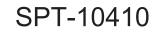
It is extremely disappointing that even though the Deputy Director wrote to the Northern Ireland Office on 23 November 1987 to state that St. Patrick's have now decided that the upgrading of the kitchen should proceed along the lines suggested by Mr. M. W. Jones, the Catering Advisor of Central Services Agency and requesting the Northern Ireland Office to take the appropriate steps to initiate further development of the suggestions made by Mr. Jones that it appears that the Northern Ireland Office have taken no steps to reach a solution either in the short term or the long term,

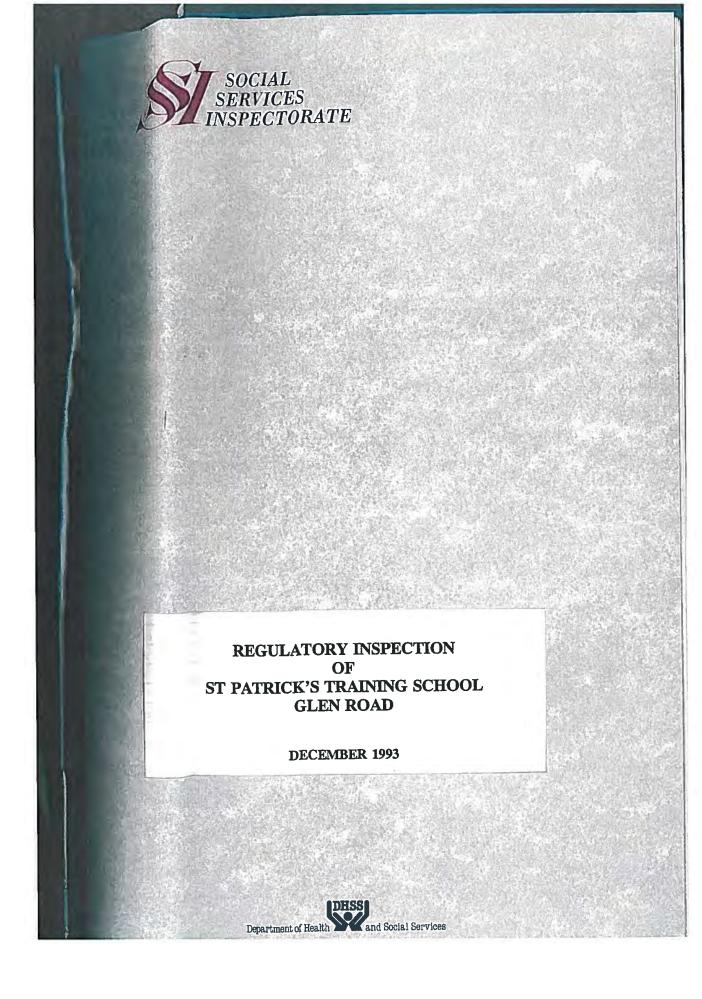
The Priority Works Programme which the Northern Ireland Office supplied to St. Patrick's in or about March 1986 provided £350,000.00 for kitchen rehabilitation and other matters and scheduled same for 1987/1988. The Northern Ireland Office's delay in providing the necessary funds to have the necessary rehabilitation (which we assume has a very wide meaning) is very much regretted.

#### W. P. M. O'Driscoll, B.Sc.Econ. Solicitor

(Member of Board of Management, St. Patrick's Training School)

28 March 1990.





SPT-10411

#### REPORT OF A REGULATORY INSPECTION OF ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL, GLEN ROAD, BELFAST - 6 AND 7 DECEMBER 1993

#### Introduction

#### **Terms of Reference**

- 2. The inspection was carried out in accordance with the agreed terms of reference:
  - i. an examination of records required by the Training School rules, guidance issued by the Northern Ireland Office and policies developed by the management board; and
  - ii. interviews with senior staff, staff on duty and informal discussions with some of the young people in the school.

#### The Children and Young People

3. On Monday 6 December the distribution of the young people within the school was as follows:-

TABLE	1 -	6	DECEMBER	1993	
IADLE	- JL -	U	DECRAIDER	1995	

	PRESENT	LEAVE	EXTENDED LEAVE	LISNEVIN	HOSPITAL	ABSCONDERS	OFF CAMPUS	GRAND TOTAL
CHALET 1	11	4	2	1			7	î8
CHALET 2	5	. 4	1	2		1	8	13
RECEPTION (CARE)	8	5	-	1	•	1	7	15
SAUL (CARE)	7	. 3	1	1	1		6	13
L/T JUSTICE	3	6	6	2		1	15	18
RECEPTION	2	1	-	4		I	6	8
REMANDS	2	-	-	3		-	3	5
SLEMISH (CSU)	5		2			1	3	8
TOTALS	43	23	12	14	1	5	55	98

The above table shows that the school has a total population on roll of 98 young people. 43 were present on 6 December. It is interesting to note that 15 young people are currently the subject of Training School Orders for Non-School Attendance.

<sup>1.</sup> This Regulatory Inspection of St Patrick's Training School was carried out by C W Donnell as part of the integrated programme of inspections conducted by the SSI. The inspection was carried out on 6 and 7 December 1993.

## SPT-10412

#### 4. Senior Staff on Duty

On both days of the inspection all of the senior staff were on duty ie Director, Senior Deputy Director, Deputy Director and 2 assistant Deputy Directors.

5. The total staffing at St Patrick's, excluding catering and administrative staff is as follows:-

Director.
Senior Deputy Director.
Deputy Director.
2 Assistant Deputy Directors.
Principal Social Worker Community Care.
Senior Social Worker Community Care.
3 Social Workers Community Care.
8 Senior Residential Social Workers.
31 Residential Social Workers.
10 Teachers (including teacher-leader).
2 part-time nurses.

6. All of the senior residential social workers are qualified ie 7CRCCYPand 1 CQSW/CRCCYP. Amongst the residential social workers there are 4 holders of the CSS, 4 CRCCYP and 1 CQSW. Within the remaining 22 RSWs, 5 are in the process of completing the Certificate in Social Service and they will be return to full time work at the end of February 1994. Three residential social workers are currently studying for the Diploma in Social Work having commenced their studies in September 1993. The availability of trained staff will be a considerable asset, not only in terms of qualification but also will do much to ease the staffing situation numerically. At the time of the inspection the staffing complement was greatly depleted as a result of the present 'flu epidemic.

#### **Residential Provision**

- 7. The units of accommodation have not changed since the last Regulatory Inspection in September 1992. The accommodation comprises of Chalets 1 and 2 (a double unit used for Care young people), a long term Care unit Saul (located in the main school building), Reception (Care) again in the main building and Shamrock House, a free standing Close supervision unit. The young people in Justice are accommodated in 2 wings of the main school building.
- 8. Within the next 12 months there will be a considerable change in accommodation with the completion of the Care Reception Unit which is currently under construction, in the Spring of 1994 and the projected completion of the Justice Units later in the year. The opening of the new units will enable the freeing up of the accommodation in the main school building and will provide for the accommodation of the young people in modern units which will incorporate the latest materials in terms of design and fittings.

- 9. After the completion of the new units, Chalets 1 and 2 will be next in line for refurbishment. The ground floors of Chalets 1 and 2 are in a reasonable state of repair and decoration but the 3 bedded rooms are in need of redecoration. Chalets 1 and 2 were very-clean and tidy which reflects well on the domestic staff.
- 10. Slemish House, the close supervision unit, is in a good state of repair and new living room furniture has recently been acquired. The ground floor is due for redecoration and the unit is bright, warm and has a pleasant feel to it.
- 11. Every effort has been made to make the units in the main building as comfortable and pleasant as possible. Each unit has accommodation for up to 13 boys in single rooms plus a games room, TV room and lounge. The unit also has staff office accommodation and a night supervisor's office. It has not been easy to create a sense of unit identification within the school building as the sleeping accommodation, toilets and recreation areas are located some distance from each other and in some cases on different floors. All of the staff are looking forward to occupying the new units when they become available in 1994.

#### **Slemish House Close Supervision Unit**

- 12. At the time of the inspection there were 8 young people on the roll of Slemish. Three were in residence, one was working out, one was on a flexi-care programme and there was one absconder. Admission dates showed that the young people on roll have been accommodated for periods ranging from one month (Place Safety Order) to 10 months. One boy was first admitted to Slemish House on 10 September 1992. This young person was charged with assaulting a member of staff and at the Juvenile Court on 13 October 1993 was placed on Probation for a period of one year with a Fourth Condition that "he continues to attend the behaviour modification programme as directed by his supervising officer". It seems that due to some administrative oversight the court made a Probation Order whilst the Training School Order was still valid. Probation Orders and Training School Orders are not permitted to operate in tandem. This matter was raised with the Director and the Northern Ireland Office with a view to regularising the situation and applying for the discharge of the Training School Order.
- 13. There were no young persons in separation at the time of the visit. A scrutiny of the separation record shows that this method of control appears to be used sparingly; the last removal having taken place on 10 November 1993. It is noted that the option is now being used less frequently and periods of separation are much shorter. The records are being monitored regularly the most recent scrutiny having been carried out by BR 90 on 5 December 1993. The records show that the school nurse makes frequent checks on hygiene in the unit. In addition to the waking night supervisor a member of care staff also sleeps in the unit nightly.
- 14. Reference has been made earlier in paragraph 12 to the length of stay in Slemish House. Research clearly demonstrates that excessively lengthy periods in security tends to have a negative effect on young people. The time spent in security should concentrate on reducing the risk factor in the behaviour that led to

the admission and when this has been controlled further work should be continued in an open setting. It is **recommended** that management address this issue and develop a policy which, inter alia, gives the Admission Panel a review function to reflect on the progress of the young person in Slemish and in particular the length of the placement.

#### Physical Resources

- 15. Apart from the building of the residential units the other resources on the site remain unchanged. The games hall, gymnasium and the swimming pool are fully operational. The grounds to the front entrance of the school are tidy and well kept. With the building of the new units taking place at 2 separate locations on the campus and the previously adverse weather conditions, the grounds to the rear of the main school building are in poor condition.
- 16. A piece of land, adjacent to the Brothers' house has been cleared and drained as the first step to the creation of a Sensory Garden, which will be associated with the now well established Woodlands Community Garden. The Sensory Garden, when completed will provide a range of horticultural opportunities for the elderly and handicapped through the provision of elevated flowerbeds, fragrant plants and flowers and a barbecue area. This imaginative project represents another example of the school's outreach programme to the local community in West Belfast.

#### **Compliance with Training School Rules**

Rule 10(3) - At Least Monthly Visiting by a Member of the Management Board

17. This function was last carried out by Canon Peter McCann in September 1993. A report of his visit is on file. As suggested in previous reports the visitors now appear to be concentrating on contact with the young people; a necessary and important aspect of their visits. Other visits will take place before the end of December. Formal visits by local members should take place at least once monthly. Other records show that the school is visited regularly by board members including the Chairman. However, to comply with the requirements of Rule 10(3) it is **recommended** that the formal visits by members, who report to the Board be carried out at least monthly.

#### Rule 14(B) and (3) - Fire Precautions

18. BR 94 (Justice) is responsible to the Director for the supervision of fire drills throughout the school. Previous recommendations about fire drills are being fully complied with and drills are carried out monthly. Details of unit drills are as follows:-

Reception/Saul	-	25 November 1993
Justice 1 and 3	-	25 November 1993
Chalets 1 and 2	-	25 November 1993

SPT-10415

Slemish House - 24 November 1993

In September 1993 the school had a visit from a member of the Northern Ireland Fire Authority who was updating records in relation to access to hydrants, equipment and those parts of the campus where young people are accommodated. The Inspectorate is pleased to note that the important duty of ensuring regular checks on fire precautions etc are being complied with.

#### Rule 19(2) - Keeping of Records

19. The records required by this rule are being maintained. As stated in previous reports the punishment book is no longer maintained as corporal punishment has not been carried out in the training school for many years. The log book has been regularly signed by the Chairman of the Board.

#### Rule (1) and (2) - Keeping a Record of Menus

20. The menus are drawn up to cover a 4 week period. Each unit is supplied with a copy of the menu. The young people, who reside in the main school building are served with all their meals in the central kitchen. Chalets 1 and 2 and Slemish House have their own on-site catering arrangements. This policy of unit catering will be a feature of the new units as described earlier. A good variety of food is provided. In the central kitchen a choice of menus is provided at lunch time. The young people spoken with had no complaints to make about the quality of the food. At the time of the inspection a new cycle of menus was in the course of preparation. The Medical Officer scrutinises the new menu for content and nutritional value before they are introduced.

#### **Rule 26 - Details of School Routines**

21. These records are now being maintained in accordance with the requirements.

#### **Rule 31(1) - Religious Instruction**

۰.

22. The arrangements for administering to the spiritual needs of the young people in the school remain unchanged since the last inspection. Father Casey is the appointed chaplain who continues to visit the school at least twice weekly with mass being celebrated on Wednesday and Saturdays. Family Christmas masses will soon commence in all of the house units and these have become a feature of the religious arrangements for this season of the year.

#### Rule 32-35 - Recreational Visits and Letters

23. The recreational and leisure programme continues both on and off the campus. The swimming pool is in daily use as is the games hall. Most of the activities tend to be indoors at this time of the year. Off-campus trips are made regularly to leisure centres and other places of interest. Holidays are provided mainly at the school's outdoor centre at Kilmore House, Waterfoot. The centre is used throughout the year and staff in Chalet 1 reported that they had spent at least 7 periods in Kilmore during the past year.

- 24. The young people have free access to the telephone at all reasonable times and no form of formal censorship of letters takes place. Staff will supervise the reception and sending of letters if they feel the circumstances warrant such a course of action.
- 25. Parents and friends are encouraged to visit regularly. The maintenance of links between the boys and their families is sometimes difficult to maintain according to staff. However, as many of the young people are from the West Belfast area and regularly receive weekend leave, visiting by families to the school is not as important as otherwise might be the case.

#### **Rule 38-39 - Discipline and Punishment**

26. Corporal punishment is not used in the school. Sanctions such as early bedtimes and withdrawal of watching television and fines for damage to property are sometimes used. From discussions with staff it has been suggested that the emphasis should be on rewarding and reinforcing good behaviour and some would say the imposition of early bedtimes is often counter-productive. In relation to school attendance good behaviour and effort are rewarded by some extra pocket money and, at least for the moment, this is proving to be a worthwhile policy. Reference has been made to the record of punishment which is no longer kept. The legal situation in relation to the requirement remains unchanged.

#### **Rule 46 - Arrangements For Aftercare**

The Community Care Team consists of a Principal Social Worker, Senior Social 27. Worker and 3 Social Workers. Their role and function covers all areas of though and after care in the school. One of the social workers concentrates particularly on the circus project. The circus project has now grown to such an extent that negotiations are currently taking place with the Making Belfast Work initiative to appoint a development officer for the project. The Principal Social Worker continues to be involved in staff training issues for all the school and oversees the work with the Woodlands Horticultural Project and also the Sensory Garden which is at the planning stage. Contact is also being maintained with the Down and Connor Special Housing Project with a view to establishing special needs housing for some of the young homeless people leaving St Patrick's. This development will be a longer term project. More immediately the Glen Road Hostel, currently being run by the St Joseph's Training School may become available early in the new year when it is hoped St Joseph's will move to new premises. Thought is presently being given to St Patrick's taking over the lease of the hostel with a view to establishing a pre-release/ independent training facility on the Glen Road.

#### Rule 46(4) - Recording of Activities of the Licensing Committee

28. The Principal Social Worker (Community Care) continues to oversee the work of

the Licensing/Review Committee. The review procedure is structured through the work of 2 panels - A and B. The panels last met on 25 November 1993. Full and detailed minutes of the work of the 2 panels were presented for scrutiny and they are satisfactory.

### Rule 50 and 51 - Medical and Dental Arrangements

- 29. There has been no change in the medical arrangements at the school since the last inspection. Dr Lowry and the 2 part-time nurses provide the on-site cover for the young people. All the boys receive routine 3-monthly medical checks and dental inspections are carried out at 6-monthly intervals by Mr Blaney, a local dentist. Boys attend the dental surgery in the community.
- 30. Discussions with Dr Lowry reveal that he is not totally satisfied with the present method of collecting statistical data on the young people in the school. He feels, apart from the obvious advantages of computerising the medical data on the young people, a more intelligent gathering of the information would enable health education programmes and other aspects of his work at St Patrick's to be greatly enhanced. Dr Lowry's own practice is fully computerised and he would be keen to bring the keeping of medical records at St Patrick's on to the computer in his surgery. The suggestion by Dr Lowry merits support and the senior management of the school are seeking financial provision to enable the strategy to be implemented. The suggested computerisation of the medical records is in line with the Rathgael plans for the development of a similar approach.

#### Conclusions

3

s

V

of

- 31. All of the residential units were visited during the course of the inspection. Bedrooms were seen at random and kitchens, ablution and living areas were also visited. Although Chalets 1 and 2 require refurbishing the standard of cleanliness and tidiness was high and a comfortable atmosphere prevailed. None of the young people spoken with had any complaints to make about the standard of care being provided but several in Chalet 2 did complain about not getting increases in pocket money to compensate for the recent increases in the cost of cigarettes. The efforts of staff to promote a no smoking policy seems to have met with limited success. It must be said that despite the efforts of staff there still appears to be a high incidence of smoking amongst the young people. The complaint about the price of cigarettes may appear to be facetious but it does point out the high level of addiction to tobacco amongst the boys.
  - 32. There has been a substantial increase in the number of Training School Orders being made for non-school attendance. Currently there are 14 such orders in St Patrick's. Approximately 8 committed boys are attending on a day basis at present. Some travel a good distance but prefer that to attending their own schools. The present level of admissions for education, coupled with the number of care referrals are silting up the beds in Reception. This issue is being addressed by the senior management group following an approach from the Senior Social Worker in the Community Care team. Alternative methods are being

7

examined in an effort to increase the throughput in short-term Care (Reception).

- 33. BR 90 is taking a more direct interest in the operation of the educational component at the school. He feels there has been an improvement in the running of the school and generally morale is now much higher. It is BR 90 view that behaviour in the classroom has also improved as has the performance of some of the boys.
- 34. The Independent Representation Scheme, which was launched in December 1991 is not functioning at present. The Scheme which was launched in association with the West Belfast Parents Youth Support Group, has been experiencing operational difficulties of late. It is being suggested that the main problem is the inability of the WBPYSG to effectively carry out the co-ordinating role which is crucial to the success of the Scheme. The original scheme was perhaps over ambitious with the independent representatives being made available to all the young people in the school. Nationally independent representation tended to focus more on young people in secure units. The St Patrick's scheme drew on a range of people, some of whom have connection with the Management Board and their ability to be seen to be totally independent may have caused some confusion for the young people. Discussions are currently taking place to reactivate the scheme jointly with Save The Children Fund. It has been pointed out that NIACRO is operating the scheme for Lisnevin Training School and thought should be given to using the service of that organisation who have developed expertise in the field. At present no decision has been taken on the future direction of IR in the school.
- 35. Reference has been made in Paragraph 12 of this report to the periods that young people are spending in Slemish House. It is the view of the Inspectorate that the periods are too lengthy. Whereas it is not possible to be definitive about the time a young person should spend in secure accommodation research tends to support the view that lengthy periods are likely to produce negative patterns in the behaviour of the young people.
- 36. Examination of the records in the residential units clearly show that regular visiting of the units and the monitoring of records by senior management is taking place. With the building of the new units well underway there is the sense of expectation among staff who, understandably, are looking forward to the opening of the new premises. Generally the morale of staff appears high and management reported favourably on the present operation of the school. Nothing untoward came to notice during the course of the inspection and the attention of management is drawn to the recommendations in the following paragraph.

#### Recommendation

 Management should examine the length of time being spent in Slemish House and examine the means of reviewing and overseeing the length of placements. (Para 14)

		Page 65
1		proactive inspection, there was also a reactive. If
2		help were needed, she was able to be communicated with
3		to give assistance.
4	A.	Very much so.
5	Q.	And your recollection was the impression you had was
б		a couple of times a year you would have seen her at
7		least.
8	A.	That would be in the formal setting now, shall we say,
9		you know, with her with her companion.
10	Q.	And then from you have the changeover to the
11		Northern Ireland Office and you have the introduction of
12		the Social Work Advisory Group
13	A.	Correct.
14	Q.	or SWAG, as it was known, and of particular relevance
15		to St. Patrick's was a man called Wesley Donnell.
16	A.	Correct.
17	Q.	SPT53 worked with you for a very long time in
18		St. Patrick's. I think he was there for twenty plus
19		years.
20	A.	That's right, yes.
21	Q.	He gave evidence. For the Panel's reference it was Day
22		145, page 73 of the transcript. I am summarising it,
23		but the man was effectively in and out so often you
24		might have thought he worked in the place.
25	Α.	Part of the furniture.

#### HIA Inquiry

Page 64 1 What I want to talk to you now about is the external assistance that you were given. We were -- again you 2 cover a long period in St. Patrick's. 3 So if I can take the period up to \_\_\_\_, when you are 4 5 on the senior side, and the Ministry of a 6 Home Affairs is in charge of regulating the training 7 schools, you have recollections of Ms Forrest and 8 Dr Simpson I think coming in to assist. Can you give 9 the Panel some recollections of that type of engagement? 10 When they visited the school, they took a tour of Α. 11 virtually every part of it and then they would have had 12 a long conversation with the principal at the time, you 13 know, maybe lasting all -- the exercise might last a 14 morning or an afternoon and apparently they were very 15 helpful, and particularly in the case of Miss Forrest, she was readily available for consultation, available to 16 17 the principal for consultation, and she would be a very 18 frequent, shall we say, informal visitor. 19 So again the point we were looking at in a different 0. 20 context was there actually would have been historically 21 a lot of work going on in this area as well, but there's 22 not necessarily documents and, in fact, we don't have the inspection file at all, but even if we had, there 23 24 would be a formal inspection report, but what you are 25 saying is you can recollect her being -- as well as the

SPT-30101

# McLaughlin & Company

SOLICITORS (Incorporating OLIVER J. KELLY & CO.)

MARTIN McLAUGHLIN B.A.



Our Ref: OJK/PMcC	
Your Ref:	27th October 2004
Reverend Brother BR 32 De La Salle 121 Hoath Road Dublin 3	
Dear Brother,	
I have been contacted by SPT 101 now of SW16 4ST.	
SPT 101 is years of age having been born in	Belfast on
He resided with his Mother at	Belfast as a young man.

However, in 1940 he was admitted to St Patrick's Training School, Milltown for truancy. At that stage he was in or about 10 years of age.

In the course of his detention at Milltown and as a result of the war and the fear of bombings of Belfast the residential home at Milltown Belfast was transferred to an estate in Forkhill, Co Armagh which he believes was known as the Alexander Estate.

He believes that they were transferred to Forkhill sometime in 1942 and he remained there until the end of 1944.

It was whilst he was in Forkhill that he was subjected to serious sexual and physical abuse by a Brother whom he believed was known as BR 97 He cannot be sure of the name but he believes that was the name.

The serious physical and sexual abuse occurred over an 8-month period between the end of 1943 and mid 1944.

92-94 Castle Street, Belfast BT1 1HE Telephone: (028) 9032 3542 Fax: (028) 9033 1508 E-mail: mclaughlin\_m@btconnect.com



DX 531 NR BELFAST 1

# SPT-30102

# McLaughlin & Company

SOLICITORS (Incorporating OLIVER J. KELLY & CO.)



MARTIN McLAUGHLIN B.A.

He states that he was returned to Belfast earlier than the other residents because of the death of his Father. He believes that he came home about a month before they came home.

The fact of the abuse apparently was known to the Order due to it having been reported by another person who was abused by the same Brother.

In any event SPT 101 as a young man was interviewed by a Brother Stephen at Milltown and details of the abuse were noted by Brother Stephen. SPT 101 believes that at least 2 other residents made allegations against the same BR 97

In any event he had no occasion to encounter BR 97 once back in Belfast and he never saw him again. It is also true to say that he does not believe that he encountered the said Brother prior to being transferred to Forkhill.

He makes it clear to me in his instructions that he is not making any allegation in relation to his treatment at Milltown.

You might be concerned as to why this matter is only arising 60 years after the events. SPT 101 answer to that is that he has tried throughout his life to put it behind him and get on with his life. He went to the at sixteen and a half years of age and worked at casual employment before being called up to do national service in the British Army and then married at 30 years of age to a woman from the met in He and his wife had children and led a reasonably steady stable life until his

wife died

He did not broach the subject at all with his wife he considered her to be good living and respectful of the institutions of the church and he did not want in anyway to upset her.

Whilst it is true to say that he did not seek or obtain any psychiatric help in relation to the matter throughout his life he maintains that it was always present in his mind and did affect in some ways his attitude to life and his attitude to other people.

Since his wife died it has become more of a burden on his mind. He feels he wants to purge it from his mind and from his person. He wants to bring it out and deal with it.

To that end therefore he has sought contact to be made with your Order with a view to discussing the possible ways of so dealing with his problem and resolving it.

92-94 Castle Street, Belfast BT1 1HE Telephone: (028) 9032 3542 Fax: (028) 9033 1508 E-mail: mclaughlin\_m@btconnect.com



DX 531 NR BELFAST 1

# SPT-30103

# McLaughlin & Company

SOLICITORS (Incorporating OLIVER J. KELLY & CO.)

#### MARTIN McLAUGHLIN B.A.



I can only say that having spoken to length with SPT 101 he is a genuine decent Godfearing man who feels that what happened to him as a young man should not have happened and that there was neglect and failure in relation to him and his protection from such wrong doing.

You will appreciate that this is a very general type letter in order to initiate an investigation inter SPT 101 position.

I think you will find for certain that he was in Milltown and that he was equally in Forkhill. He believes that there may be some records somewhere of the fact that Brother Stephen at the time investigated the matter and interviewed him about it.

You will also be aware that he is not making any allegation whatsoever against the Authorities in Milltown where he was held for the vast majority of his time.

I look forward to hearing from you.

Yours faithfully

P.P. Oliver Kell

McLaughlin & Co Solicitors

92-94 Castle Street, Belfast BT1 1HE Telephone: (028) 9032 3542 Fax: (028) 9033 1508 E-mail: mclaughlin\_m@btconnect.com



DX 531 NR BELFAST 1



Knockbracken Mental Health Services Knockbracken Healthcare Park Saintfield Road Belfast BT8 8BH Tel: (028) 90565274 fax: 90565819

SPT-30119

#### STRICTLY CONFIDENTIAL

Your ref: MMcM/EM Our ref: JL/SL/1.07 4 January 2007

#### PSYCHIATRIC REPORT

Name	SPT 101 (dob
Report Requested By	McLaughlin & Company, Solicitors, Willowfield House, 218/220 Woodstock Road, Belfast. BT6 9DL.

#### FAMILY HISTORY

SPT 101 father died when he was 12 years old. His mother died in 1962. Mr. SPT 101 as an older sister and a sister who died. He also has two half brothers and one half sister from a second relationship of his mother's. He has little contact with them. There is no known family history of psychiatric illness.

#### PERSONAL HISTORY

He was born in Belfast and attended primary school. He was sent at the age of 10 to Milltown Industrial School, which is run by the De La Salle Order, by the Court for truancy at school. Whilst there because of air raids he was sent to Forkhill for two years. During this period he had no contact with his family and was only sent back when his father died. He returned to Milltown at this stage but left school before his 18<sup>th</sup> birthday.

He worked in a tailoring shop and then the shipyard before moving to at the age of 16<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> and staying with his uncle. He met his wife in the ship and the matrix of the ship and the shi

and His last job was as a plasterer on a building site and he is currently retired. He had a myocardial infarction in 1949. There is no known history of attendance with psychiatric services.

#### DETAILS OF INCIDENT

**SPT 101** alleges that he was sexually abused by a brother whom he was able to name to me, during the period he was in Forkhill. He states this happened on one occasion - he had to pass his room from the dormitory to go to the toilet. He describes this man calling him into his room and talking to him about his family before starting to touch him through his nightshirt. The brother then took his hand to put through his robe. **SPT 101** describes feeling scared of him. He describes being held down and turned round before the man penetrated him anally. He describes the brother saying to him "it's alright". **SPT 101** remembers thinking "how did I get wet"? He returned to his dormitory crying and lay on his coat in case he wet the bed.

/contd..

SPT 101

SPT-30120

#### -2- Psychiatric Report-

After this, he described living in fear of this man. He initially didn't tell anybody because of the shame. Another boy told him that the man had also abused him. Following that, some of the boys in Forkhill found out and started calling him "bum boy", BR 97 He started playing Gaelic and fighting to try to live down this reputation.

#### PSYCHOLOGICAL CONSEQUENCES OF INCIDENT

SPT 101 denies telling anybody what had happened to him until after the death of his wife. He insists he had a normal sexual relationship with his wife. After her death and because of the current publicity surrounding sexual abuse, he decided to tell his story and his sister suggested that he should contact a solicitor.

He describes memories and flashbacks to the abuse and a longstanding sense of shame. He feels that he lost his religious belief system and only started going to church again when his wife became ill. He describes the abuse as contributing to his going to live in **the started going** and remembers thinking "Will anyone know over there? Will I meet anyone?"

#### CURRENT MENTAL STATE ASSESSMENT

His mood is euthymic. His sleep pattern is reasonable. His appetite is good and his weight is steady. He has thoughts at times of life not being worth living but there is no evidence of suicidal ideation. He describes flashbacks and nightmares to the abuse, which are longstanding in nature. He avoids articles in books or on the TV that trigger memories for him.

#### **DIAGNOSIS**

Chronic PTSD.

#### SUMMARY & OPINION

In summary, this is a very ear-old man who alleges an episode of sexual abuse by a brother belonging to the De La Salle Order as a child. He suffers from chronic posttraumatic stress disorder related to the incident with memories and flashbacks and avoidance behaviour. There is no doubt the incident has impacted on him throughout his life.

l	$\mathcal{A}$	1
) ED	$\leq$	ر بر بر در ۱۹۹۵ می می این بر این
	- F	

SIGNED

Dr J Lynch MB MRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST



01 - 833 1815
 FAX: 01 - 833 9130
 e-mail province@iol.ie

# De La Salle Provincialate

SPT-30104

121 HOWTH ROAD, DUBLIN 3.

7<sup>th</sup> November 2004

Your Ref: OJK/PMcC

Oliver Kelly, McLaughlin & Company, Solicitors, 92-94 Castle Street, Belfast BT1 1HE.



Dear Mr. Kelly,

l acknowledge your letter dated 27<sup>th</sup> October 2004.

It is a matter of great sadness to me and to the Order that any child may have been sexually abused while under our care. In accordance with our Child Protection Policy we offer counselling on a pastoral basis, without admission of liability, to anybody who makes a complaint against a member of the Order. I suggest that SPT 101 ring "Faoiseamh", which is an independent helpline set up and funded by the Religious Orders. The phone number from Northern Ireland and the UK is 0800-973272.

I have searched through what records we have and I found that there was never a Brother in the Order called However, there was a BR 97 (dob

in Forkhill from 01/09/1943 to 22/03/1944.when Forkhill closed and he moved back with the boys to St. Patrick's Milltown. On 25/01/1945 he was transferred to Kilmacow, Co. Kilkenny. He went on the Missions to 13/10/1946. He did not make Final Profession at the age of 25 and left the Order on 31/05/1947. I have no idea of his present whereabouts or if he is still alive.

If this is the Brother against whom SPT 101 is making the allegation, he would have been have been 20 years of age at the time, 8 years older than SPT 101. If he is alive he would be now be years of age. I have searched through our archives and I have found no record of any complaint against BR 97 or any Brother in Forkhill.

As far as I can make out who is currently in South Africa, is the only Brother alive who was in Forkhill at that time and he was only there for three months, September - December 1943. Other Brothers there at that time were Br. Baptist ( died \_\_\_\_\_\_, Br. Caietan (Died \_\_\_\_\_\_\_, BR 83 (Died \_\_\_\_\_\_\_)))

Christine E Rowe, Counsellor, 16 Waldemar Avenue Mansions Waldemar Avenue Fulham LONDON SW6 5LT

0207 736 7979

McLaughlin & Company, Solicitors Willowfield House 218/220 Woodstock Rd Belfast, BT6 9DL

SPT-30121

Ref: MMcL/CK/L108 22nd Feb. 2007

Dear Mr McLaughlin,

Further to your letter of 13th Feb'07 this is my latest report on your client <u>SPT 101</u> who has now been my counselling client since 17 June 2005 and whom I have agreed the contents of this report. I have been seeing <u>SPT 101</u> on a regular weekly basis now, numbering 74 sessions.

During this time **SPT 101** has gradually become able to express more clearly some of the events that he experienced at the Industrial School, run by the De La Salle Order. He recognises that being held down while a sexual act was performed on his young body was in fact a male rape; that the physical violence that he saw enacted on other young people around him; like striking them with bunches of keys and stones; increasingly brutal and bloody head shaving when children ran away and were then caught; the accidental death of a boy while being driven to work in the potato fields; were all felt and seen as a real threat to his own person in a brutalising environment. (ref. The Ryan Report criteria)

As a boy his survival technique was to become increasingly withdrawn. **SPT 101** speech impediment or 'stoppage' seems to date from this time as it is not remembered by family members before his incarceration nor recorded on any school records seen by **SPT 101** and yet he is returned to Belfast, needing to use physical and breathing techniques to deal with a vocal stutter. He still has need of these techniques today, for instance when answering the telephone or in conversation when he becomes agitated.

I would also add that the lack of access to his mother for a critical period of two years, the lack of

PRIVATE & CONFIDENTIAL.

21st April, 1948.

SPT-10578

The Right Honourable Edmond Warnock, K.C., Minister of Home Affairs, Stormont, Belfast.

Dear Mr. Warnock,

On 24th March last, Mr. Jamos McSparran,K.C., handed me the letter you wrote to him regarding certain grave charges made by the boy SPT 30 concerning St. Patrick's Industrial School, Milltown.

It appeared to see that the allegations called for investigation by an Ecclesiastical Commission. Following on this decision I went to the Eastitution on Friday, 5th April 1948, accompanied by my Vicar General, Venerable Archdeacon Hendley, D.D., and Very Rev. P. Conway, D.Ph., N.A., S.T.L., who acted as Notary, to enquire into the standards of sociality obtaining in the school, with special reference to the incidents and abuses alleged by SPT 30

I had previously requested the Superior, Brother Stephen, to supply me with lists of (a) all the boys in the Institution and (b) all the Brothers, in order that the Commission, in addition to examining the Brothers named in the charges, might be in a position to call at random other Brothers and some of the boys whose evidence might perhaps be considered more objective by reason of the fact that they were not personally concerned. SPT 30 who has left Militown and is now detained elsewhere, was not called.

The Commission sat continuously from 10.30 a.s. until 4.30 p.m. and at the conclusion of the session we were satisfied that we had obtained a complete and accurate assessment of the moral standards of the school and were in a position to arrive at a reliable indement regarding the train of the charges alleged by SPT 30

L Shoals mention that each witness was put on Oath Defore his evidence was taken and at the conclusion of the Examination his e idence was read over to him by the Notary and he was afforded an opportunity of adding to, withdrawing from or

# SPT-10579

-2-

altering what he had said. In the case of the boys who were examined, I explained to them the nature of an oath, emphasising its gravity and solemnity by reason of the fact that it called upon Almighty God to bear witness to the truth of what they said. I also gave them an assurance that any evidence they gave would be treated in the strictest confidence so that there would be no danger of their suffering any victimization as a result of their testimony.

The Commission arrived at the following conclusions:

- (1) The standards of morality obtaining in St. Patrick's Industrial School are most satisfactory and would even compare very favourably with those of Institutions where the residents have not been brought together by reason of delinquency.
- (2) The charges of immoral conduct alleged by SPT 30 against Brothers BR 83 BR 70 and BR 86 are devoid of all foundation. The Commission faired entirely to discover any incident, the exaggeration or misrepresentation of which, could have provided a basts for the charges and is, therefore, satisfied that they are a complete fabrication on the part of SPT 30

In the course of the investigation several witnesses referred to one instance of what might be described as horse-play of an indecent character which for the sake of completeness we think it well to record. It would appear that the ring-leader in this incident, which involved some boys being forcibly held down on the floor while their genital organs were painted, was a man named SPT 33 who at that time was employed in the school as a lay part-time instructor in wood-work. It is, perhaps, indicative of the moral tone of the school that the matter was immediately reported to Brother Stephen by some of the boys who did not attempt to conceal that they were greatly shocked by it. Brother Stephen forthwith dispensed with the services of SPT 33 without however, disclosing his reasons for so doing.

Before concluding this account of our investigation, I would wish to thank you for the manner in which you elected to deal with the charges when they were brought to your notice and to assure you that I greatly appreciate your extreme courtesy and consideration

> I am, very sincerely yours, +A-Magecan,

Bishop of Down and Connor,

SPT-10551

1

DIOCESE OF DOWN AND CONNOR. ST. PATRICK'S MALE INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL, MILLTOWN. Examination of Witnesses on Friday, 9th April, 1948.

A Diocesan Tribunal met at 11 a m. on Friday, 9th April, 1948, in St. Patrick's Male Industrial School, Milltown, Belfast. His Lordship the Most Rev. Dr. Mageean presided. The Right Rev. Mgr. Hendley, V.G., and the Rev. P. Conway, Notary, were also present.

The Witnesses replied to the Court as follows :

(1). Brother STEPHEN.

1. Brother Stephen Kelly.

2, 1941,

Since 1942 as Superior. As inferior for two years before that.

 As Sub-Superior of Novices for five years in Castletown.

5. Superior and Manager of the School.

As Superior, I am responsible for the spiritual welfare of the community, presiding at the exercises, and observance of rule.

As Manager, I am the connecting link between the Board of Management and the Ministry.

6. Generally, I would say it is good.

7a. For the past two years we have been getting in a very difficult type of boy from the moral point of view. Especially in the Reformatory section we get the failures of the probationary system. These boys have an abnormally suspicious mind.

There was misbehaviour among these boys before they had entered the school, during the period when the American

SPT-10552

to time.	
	We sometimes get a boy affected with sex-mania; am
we had on	ce to refuse a boy who was found to be suffering from
venereal	disease. He was 15 years of age.
MGR. HEND	LEY : Do these boys associate with the other boys?
ANSWER :	They do; there is no division. They should be in a
soparate	building.
7b1	DR. MAGEEAN : Were there suggestions with regard
to the Br	others?

ANSWER : There were. They concerned an exemplary Brother - BR 69 now a Superior.

One day I got a phone message to say beys were talking of BR 69 . Three of them said he had had immoral relations with them.

I knew hom to be a good religious. I was much his junior, so I referred the matter to the Provincial. Three or four days after, the Provincial wired me to meet him in Forkhill. I went there. We held an inquiry. The three boys who made the accusations (about 12 years old) were questioned. Theysaid another boy (about 17) had told them to make these allegations.

This boy was called in. He admitted he told the boys to say these things. He said he had no grounds for making the allegations. His reason was - he thought BR 69 was too strict and he wanted him changed.

Another thing. I saw the accusations made : they have been shown to me. Three names were mentioned :

BR 83	and
BR 70	

May I give my views of them ?

DR. MAGEEAN : Yes. Two are here; BR 70 was changed on 23rd Jan.1947. WITNESS : / Brother BR 83 is Prefect. He came from Forkhill here three years ago. He is exemplary as a religious.

No suggestion could be made against him. I don't believe for one moment he ever made a suggestion. He is professed and is about the is a saint - works hard at everything. BR 86 is here since the came from

SPT-10553

He is a good religious ; inclined to be soft with the boys. I talked the thing over with him. I am convinced

there is nothing in the charges.

I know he has pets among the boys, but they are not private friends. For example - he ran the tuck shop hwre. I had complaints that he favoured some boys in giving out sweets.

He has favoured some boys, but I would be shocked if there is anything wrong.

BR 70 was here for about ayear prior to He was on temporary vows ; he had been doing ordinary manual work befere.

He was sent here as Prefect. He didn't do well at all. He used to beat the boys.

In October 1946, he beat the boy SPT 30 SPT 30 made as complaint to the Home Office through a solicitor that he/% had been beaten and kicked by BR 70

DR. MAGEEAN : Was there any other fault ? WITNESS : The Home Office held an Inquiry, and I gave permission to have the boy examined by Dr Scarlett, Dublin Road , at the request of Mr. Tughan, Solicitor.

(During the Inquiry BR 70 was suspended. The usual thing is to Suspend the person concerned until the Inquiry is over.)

The allegations were found by the Ministry to be grossly exaggerated, and the Ministry ordered that BR 70 be re-instated.

Because of the Inquiry Brother Provincial changed BR 70 in

DR. MAGEEAN : Were there any charges apart from severity ? Witness: Not then.

SPT-10554

I sent a note that he was unfit for work of supervision in schools. As a result of what I had to say, he failed the Chapter and was sent away in June. At that stage there was no suspicion regarding morality.

In October last, a boy came to me to the office. He told me that BR 70 had immoral relations with him. He mentioned - about three times. I didn't do anything about it. I told the Provincial.

He was about 15. He was in the category of bad boys with bad relations outside. His mother is in Purdysburn Mental Hospital. He was a sex-maniac. MGR, HENDLEY : Was BR 70 severe with him ? or had he any spite against him ?

WITNESS : Not that I know; but he was capable of saying anything. He and his brother are terrible problems to us. His name is SPT32 I punish them every other day for something - wilfully breaking things, fighting with other boys. DR. MAGEEAN: Were any other Brothers ever mentioned apart from these three ?

WITNESS : No.

7c. We had a workman - SPT 33 from Galway against whom allegations were made. These were serious, immorality, and so on. I didn't want to go into it woth this man, so I gave him a week's notice.

I thought the actions of the man were a kind of jest. It was alleged that he painted a boy's private.

I called SPT33 one day, and said I was reorganising the staff, and gave him a week's notice.

At least two boys concurred that he did it. SPT 30 was not one of them.

PRIVATE & CONFIDENTIAL.

21st April, 1948.

SPT-10578

The Right Honourable Edmond Warnock, K.C., Minister of Home Affairs, Stormont, Belfast.

Dear Mr. Warnock,

On 24th March last, Mr. Jamos McSparran,K.C., handed me the letter you wrote to him regarding certain grave charges made by the boy SPT 30 concerning St. Patrick's industrial School, Milltown.

It appeared to me that the allegations called for investigation by an Ecclesiastical Commission. Following on this decision I went to the Eastitution on Friday, jth April 1948, accompanied by my Vicar General, Venerable Archdeacon Hendley, D.D., and Very Rev. F. Conway, D.FA., M.A., S.T.L., who acted as Notary, to enquire into the standards of morality obtaining in the school. with special reference to the incidents and abuses alleged by SPI 30

I had previously requested the Superior, Brother Stephen, to supply me with lists of (a) all the boys in the Institution and (b) all the Brothers, in order that the Commission, in addition to examining the Brothers named in the charges, might be in a position to call at random other Brothers and some of the boys whose evidence might perhaps be considered more objective by reason of the fact that they were not personally concerned. SPT 30 who has left Militown and is now detained elsewhere, was not called.

The Commission sat continuously from 10.30 a.m. until 4.30 p.m. and at the conclusion of the session we were satisfied that we had obtained a complete and accurate assessment of the moral standards of the school and were in a position to arrive at a reliable indepent regarding the train of the charges alleged by

#### SP<u>T 30</u>

i Shoalu mention that each witness was put on Oath before his evidence was taken and at the conclusion of the examination his e incace was read over to him by the Notary and he was afforded an opportunity of adding to, withdrawing from or

# SPT-10579

-2-

altering what he had said. In the case of the boys who were examined, I explained to them the nature of an oath, emphasising its gravity and solemnity by reason of the fact that it called upon Almighty God to bear witness to the truth of what they said. I also gave them an assurance that any evidence they gave would be treated in the strictest confidence so that there would be no danger of their suffering any victimization as a result of their testimony.

The Commission arrived at the following conclusions:

- (1) The standards of morality obtaining in St. Patrick's Industrial School are most satisfactory and would even compare very favourably with those of Institutions where the residents have not been brought together by reason of delinquency.
- (2) The charges of immoral conduct alleged by SPT 30 against Brothers BR 83 BR 70 and BR 86 are devoid of all foundation. The Commission farred entirely to discover any incident, the exaggeration or misrepresentation of which, could have provided a basts for the charges and is, therefore, satisfied that they are a complete fabrication on the part of SPT 30

In the course of the investigation several witnesses referred to one instance of what might be described as horse-play of an indecent character which for the sake of completeness we think it well to record. It would appear that the ring-leader in this incident, which involved some boys being forcibly held down on the floor while their genital organs were painted, was a man named SPT 33 who at that time was employed in the school as a lay part-time instructor in wood-work. It is, perhaps, indicative of the moral tone of the school that the matter was immediately reported to Brother Stephen by some of the boys who did not attempt to conceal that they were greatly shocked by it. Brother Stephen forthwith dispensed with the services of SPT 33 without however, disclosing his reasons for so doing.

Before concluding this account of our investigation, I would wish to thank you for the manner in which you elected to deal with the charges when they were brought to your notice and to assure you that I greatly appreciate your extreme courtesy and consideration

> I am, very sincerely yours, +A. Magecan,

Bishop of Down and Connor,

Page 85 and he taught in St. Patrick's for 49 years until 1992, 1 when he died on 2 -- sorry -aged -- sorry. His date of death was 3 4 , aged 77. The reference for that is at 14732. 5 6 What I was explaining to you, HIA272, was this was the only complaint that has come up about BR86 save for 7 one instance that I was saying the Panel will recall, 8 9 the Ecclesiastical Inquiry from 1948, and BR86 was one 10 of three Brothers identified by the boy **SPT 30** He complained about BR70, not the BR1 that would have 11 been there in your time, HIA272 --12 13 Uh-huh. Α. -- and BR83 and BR86. As the Panel is aware, the bishop 14 Q. 15 concluded there was no basis to those allegations. BR 86 16 But did make a statement to the 1948 Inquiry, which we're not going to look at, but I'm going 17 18 to give the Panel the reference. It's at 10561 and 19 10563. You may recall in that he explained how he was 20 in charge of the tuck shop and he caught on boys sending 21 other boys to avail of -- effectively stealing their 22 tuck money, as it were, by taking their sweets. He thought maybe that was why he got into trouble with some 23 24 of them and proved unpopular, but other than that what 25 you are saying is this is what this boy told you

SPT-26829



Making Northern Ireland Safer For Everyone Through Professional, Progressive Policing

DCU REF NO	HEADQU	ARTERS REF NO	
DCU/Department	Crime Operations Department (C2) Se	rious Crime Bra	nch
Sector/Station/Branch	Care Unit Woodbourne	Date	23 May 2007
SUBJECT Case in	volving SPT 131 (File no. 191/05)		

#### TO: Detective Sergeant Corrigan

In September 2005 I was allotted an investigation surrounding allegations being made by SPT 131 D.O.B. D.O.B. an inpatient at Shannon Clinic, Knockbracken Healthcare Park, Belfast. This is Northern Irelands most secure placement for persons with mental health issues. SPT 131 was sent to a similar establishment in Scotland after being found guilty of a serious assault on a female neighbour in 1997. Only when Shannon Clinic was built was he transferred to Northern Ireland.

I spoke to SPT 131 at Shannon Clinic, where he told me that he had been sexually abused by a BR 43 at St. Patrick's Training School in the 1950's. He told of a single act which would constitute an Indecent Assault. It was agreed by both police and staff at Shannon Clinic that it would be appropriate for police to try to find out if BR 43 was still alive, before taking any formal complaint. (A formal complaint would have necessitated police setting up the portable video equipment at Shannon Clinic).

I was able to make enquiries via Monsignor Colm McCaughan, who was able to tell me that a BR 43 had worked at St. Patrick's between 1956 – 1963 and 1964 – 1972, when he left the Order. Monsignor Daly was also able to tell me that BR 43 was originally from and that the church had no knowledge of his current whereabouts.

Outside agency checks found that a person of the same name and date of birth was receiving a state pension to the town of a on the near near

Because of the historic nature of this complaint and the other surrounding issues, this case was given a lower priority than my other cases. As you are aware I have recently transferred out of Care and although I was able to pass on other cases I did not feel that it would be appropriate in this case. I have therefore brought this case with me and would prefer to see it to its conclusion myself.

I have recently had a look at the notes for this case and found a note of a name 'D/C Seymour, Woodbourne'. I have been able to track this person down and he is Byron Seymour, now working as agency staff at the Retrospective Murder Review Unit at Seapark.

Form 51/1 4/04 Page 1 of 2

I have spoken to him and he has told me that he has previously dealt with this complaint in approx. 1993. This included himself and a D/Insp Bob Lee (Retired) going to to interview BR 43 and a file going to the D.P.P. The decision taken was that there was to be 'No Prosecution'. I have been unsuccessful in getting a copy of the relevant file due to the fact that the current IT system was not running at that time. Because of the unusual nature of the case Mr Seymour was able to remember significant detail and I am satisfied that the complaints are one and the same.

It would be my submission that SPT 131 is informed again that the case has been investigated and a decision made that No Prosecution is to take place, a record could also be made on his file at Shannon Clinic to that effect.

All paperwork to be filed at Woodbourne Care Unit.

This report is submitted for your information and direction.

Roy Jackson D/Con 15627

I MARE DISCUSSION THIS WITH O'LON STRUMSHY. THIS MATTER HAR REED PARLY INVESTIGATED PAR THE IS DEPENDENDE NO NEW EVIDENCE. THIS MATTER IS NOT CLOSED. NEPA. Elong DISKE.

Form 51/1 03/04 Page 2 of 2

#### PRIVATE

- 8. After our workshops, we would be given more work to do like cleaning the corridors, showers, toilets or changing rooms until supper time. After supper we went outside and waited until the civilian workers let us inside to watch television. They had the keys and we would have to stand outside until they decided to let us in. I remember one of them was a small man called Mr SPT 23 If it was raining there was only one place to shelter and we used to fight for that spot but then the Brothers would punish you for fighting.
- 9. We were sent to bed very early while it was still daylight outside. We could hear people still playing outside but we had to go to bed. At bedtime, the Brothers helped the younger boys into their pyjamas. We had to sleep in pyjamas only and they checked you weren't wearing your underwear beneath. One of the civilian staff patrolled the dorms regularly during the night. The lights were never put out: there was always a light in the form of a statue in the centre of the floor on a pedestal. I was often woken in the middle of the night to perform sexual acts on the Brother who was on duty that night BR 47 or BR 42 He would put his hands under the sheet and fondle me. Whenever we had showers, the Brothers always watched us. They would examine us; they even went as far as checking under our arms and between our legs.
- 10. Physical abuse was rife in the home. The Brothers would hit you with keys or sticks, often for no reason. BR 47 carried a hurley stick and he would beat you with it to get out of his way or to make you do something. He thought nothing of laying into you with that hurley. That was his personal stick. He also carried a leather strap that was approximately twelve inches long and half an inch thick. BR 46 carried a stick as well but he wasn't as vicious as BR 47 He would only hit you if you were in his way or something whereas BR 47 took pleasure out of hitting you. It was a harsh regime and people just accepted their punishment. Nobody ever queried anything or wondered what they did to deserve it.
- 11.1 was sexually abused in the home by a number of different Brothers. Brother BR 39 took a special interest in me. He brought me and a couple of other

HIA 314

#### PRIVATE

**SPT-004** 

#### PRIVATE

boys down to the holiday home in Cushendall to get it ready for when all the boys came down on holidays. We used to do work together which needed to be done, like repairs and such. He often brought me to restaurants or to the Alverno Hotel for meals. Looking back now, it is obvious they were grooming us and that BR 39 touching was not accidental but sexual in nature. I was abused in Cushendall. BR 39 would caress my penis, legs and bottom and force me to engage in mutual masturbation. We wore shorts and they would put their hands up the legs and fondle us. There was woodland all around the holiday house and you would often see Brother BR 47 and BR 26 disappearing with the boys but nothing was ever said about it.

12. BR 47 and BR 42 sexually abused me regularly. They would make me sit next to them in the back row of the television room and fondle me. They would open their cassocks and make me masturbate them and then they would masturbate me. BR 1 was doing this too. There would be a number of Brothers sitting in the back row with a number of boys beside them. I saw other boys being abused in the television room. BR 48 used to sit at the back watching television with younger boys. He always had their hands in the pocket of his cassock. He had a certain group he always chose. Nobody was allowed to sit in the back row unless the Brothers said they could. They all had their favourites.

13. Every Saturday, the Brothers used to march us down the Glen Road in groups of three to the Broadway cinema. Everyone knew we were the home boys. I was sexually abused in the cinema too. Sexual encounters took place in the darkness of the cinema as there was only one person to look after us. It was all quite blatant but you ignored it. It was so open but nobody made a fuss about it. Everybody knew what was going on but nobody said anything. Masturbation was normal among the inmates and certain groups of older inmates would abuse the younger ones who were brought into their cliques. Two brothers who were from a farm where they were sexually abused by their father were regularly sexually abused by both the Brothers and Inmates.

HIA 314

PRIVATE

#### PRIVATE

- 8. After our workshops, we would be given more work to do like cleaning the corridors, showers, toilets or changing rooms until supper time. After supper we went outside and waited until the civilian workers let us inside to watch television. They had the keys and we would have to stand outside until they decided to let us in. I remember one of them was a small man called Mr SPT 23 If it was raining there was only one place to shelter and we used to fight for that spot but then the Brothers would punish you for fighting.
- 9. We were sent to bed very early while it was still daylight outside. We could hear people still playing outside but we had to go to bed. At bedtime, the Brothers helped the younger boys into their pyjamas. We had to sleep in pyjamas only and they checked you weren't wearing your underwear beneath. One of the civilian staff patrolled the dorms regularly during the night. The lights were never put out: there was always a light in the form of a statue in the centre of the floor on a pedestal. I was often woken in the middle of the night to perform sexual acts on the Brother who was on duty that night BR 47 or BR 42 He would put his hands under the sheet and fondle me. Whenever we had showers, the Brothers always watched us. They would examine us; they even went as far as checking under our arms and between our legs.
- 10. Physical abuse was rife in the home. The Brothers would hit you with keys or sticks, often for no reason. BR 47 carried a hurley stick and he would beat you with it to get out of his way or to make you do something. He thought nothing of laying into you with that hurley. That was his personal stick. He also carried a leather strap that was approximately twelve inches long and half an inch thick. BR 46 carried a stick as well but he wasn't as vicious as BR 47 He would only hit you if you were in his way or something whereas BR 47 took pleasure out of hitting you. It was a harsh regime and people just accepted their punishment. Nobody ever queried anything or wondered what they did to deserve it.
- 11.1 was sexually abused in the home by a number of different Brothers. Brother BR 39 took a special interest in me. He brought me and a couple of other

HIA 314

#### PRIVATE

**SPT-004** 

#### PRIVATE

boys down to the holiday home in Cushendall to get it ready for when all the boys came down on holidays. We used to do work together which needed to be done, like repairs and such. He often brought me to restaurants or to the Alverno Hotel for meals. Looking back now, it is obvious they were grooming us and that BR 39 touching was not accidental but sexual in nature. I was abused in Cushendall. BR 39 would caress my penis, legs and bottom and force me to engage in mutual masturbation. We wore shorts and they would put their hands up the legs and fondle us. There was woodland all around the holiday house and you would often see Brother BR 47 and BR 26 disappearing with the boys but nothing was ever said about it.

12. BR 47 and BR 42 sexually abused me regularly. They would make me sit next to them in the back row of the television room and fondle me. They would open their cassocks and make me masturbate them and then they would masturbate me. BR 1 was doing this too. There would be a number of Brothers sitting in the back row with a number of boys beside them. I saw other boys being abused in the television room. BR 48 used to sit at the back watching television with younger boys. He always had their hands in the pocket of his cassock. He had a certain group he always chose. Nobody was allowed to sit in the back row unless the Brothers said they could. They all had their favourites.

13. Every Saturday, the Brothers used to march us down the Glen Road in groups of three to the Broadway cinema. Everyone knew we were the home boys. I was sexually abused in the cinema too. Sexual encounters took place in the darkness of the cinema as there was only one person to look after us. It was all quite blatant but you ignored it. It was so open but nobody made a fuss about it. Everybody knew what was going on but nobody said anything. Masturbation was normal among the inmates and certain groups of older inmates would abuse the younger ones who were brought into their cliques. Two brothers who were from a farm where they were sexually abused by their father were regularly sexually abused by both the Brothers and Inmates.

HIA 314

PRIVATE

		Page 141
1	Α.	Yes.
2	Q.	Is that because
3	A.	That was my interpretation of it.
4	Q.	You don't mean it is not because it wasn't BR94 that
5		was involved in this?
б	A.	No, BR94 did what he did, but I just didn't see it as
7		sexual abuse, because I thought that sexual abuse was
8		the actual what BR47 and BR1 were doing to me.
9	Q.	Right. Well, if we look at BR1, in paragraphs 10 and 11
10		you describe him abusing you a significant number of
11		times, HIA100. You say that it happened on at least
12		a monthly basis.
13	Α.	Uh-huh.
14	Q.	And was that over the entire time that you were there?
15	Α.	Uh-huh.
16	Q.	And you describe it happening in really three or four
17		different locations.
18	A.	Yes.
19	Q.	The store outside the dormitory or near the swimming
20		pool area. I was asking you was that the changing rooms
21		of the swimming pool, but you were saying to me it was
22		more just round the swimming pool
23	A.	Yes.
24	Q.	in public view.
25	Α.	Uh-huh.

		Page 142
1	Q.	And that the other place was at the Brothers' house?
2	A.	Yes.
3	Q.	And I was asking you, because others have talked about
4		the Brothers' house was out of bounds to boys from the
5		school, how did you come to be there and you were saying
6		he would have brought you there?
7	A.	That's right.
8	Q.	In the police statement you go into some greater detail
9		about what he did, because here you are describing in
10		paragraph 11 that he would have smacked you on the
11		bottom and also in paragraph 10 that he would have put
12		your hand inside his robe and made you masturbate him
13	A.	Yes.
14	Q.	but when you spoke to the police at 25412 in your
15		police statement, if we look at that, please, 25412, if
16		we just scroll down, please yes you say that:
17		"BR1 would have continually touched me up and then
18		say he needed me to go to the stores or somewhere
19		we wouldn't be seen or disturbed and make me masturbate
20		him or have oral sex with him. On occasions he'd put
21		his penis between my thighs, although he never actually
22		penetrated me. This type of abuse would happen three to
23		four times per week. In addition, he was also violent."
24		So to the police, HIA100, you are talking about more
25		than just masturbation. It was more. It was oral sex

**SPT-004** 

#### PRIVATE

boys down to the holiday home in Cushendall to get it ready for when all the boys came down on holidays. We used to do work together which needed to be done, like repairs and such. He often brought me to restaurants or to the Alverno Hotel for meals. Looking back now, it is obvious they were grooming us and that BR 39 touching was not accidental but sexual in nature. I was abused in Cushendall. BR 39 would caress my penis, legs and bottom and force me to engage in mutual masturbation. We wore shorts and they would put their hands up the legs and fondle us. There was woodland all around the holiday house and you would often see Brother BR 47 and BR 26 disappearing with the boys but nothing was ever said about it.

12. BR 47 and BR 42 sexually abused me regularly. They would make me sit next to them in the back row of the television room and fondle me. They would open their cassocks and make me masturbate them and then they would masturbate me. BR 1 was doing this too. There would be a number of Brothers sitting in the back row with a number of boys beside them. I saw other boys being abused in the television room. BR 48 used to sit at the back watching television with younger boys. He always had their hands in the pocket of his cassock. He had a certain group he always chose. Nobody was allowed to sit in the back row unless the Brothers said they could. They all had their favourites.

13. Every Saturday, the Brothers used to march us down the Glen Road in groups of three to the Broadway cinema. Everyone knew we were the home boys. I was sexually abused in the cinema too. Sexual encounters took place in the darkness of the cinema as there was only one person to look after us. It was all quite blatant but you ignored it. It was so open but nobody made a fuss about it. Everybody knew what was going on but nobody said anything. Masturbation was normal among the inmates and certain groups of older inmates would abuse the younger ones who were brought into their cliques. Two brothers who were from a farm where they were sexually abused by their father were regularly sexually abused by both the Brothers and Inmates.

HIA 314

PRIVATE

		Page 11
1		children. Again they were there for a reason, not for
2		that there to happen.
3	Q.	Certainly the behaviour that you witnessed in the
4		television room, for example, of Brothers in relation to
5		the boys made you uncomfortable and uneasy?
6	A.	It made me very, very uncomfortable.
7	Q.	You didn't actually then say anything about this. You
8		felt you just you could just sort of give if I can
9		use a colloquial expression, give the Brother a dirty
10		look
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	to try to convey your discomfort and displeasure
13		about this.
14	A.	Yes, yes.
15	Q.	Was that effective, SPT65?
16	A.	In certain cases it was again and most of all the
17		cases again it was them and us. They done what they
18		wanted and again should have been said "To hell with
19		everyone else" at the end of it. It was them and us.
20		They didn't take criticism too lightly.
21	Q.	Well, was there discussion did you ever discuss it
22		with any of the other lay staff?
23	A.	We were all aware of what was again certain actions
24		were being done sort of sense, but again we were all in
25		the same position. We couldn't carry it forward.

#### PRIVATE

- 14. There was a big swimming pool up at the back of the home and that was an event if they let you use it. The Brothers abused me in the changing room. It was quite regular to see a Brother being masturbated in the changing area. They would tell you to come with them and you didn't ask questions. It was the same thing again; they would masturbate me and make me masturbate them. Some of them tried to go further and have intercourse but I never let it get that far. I know for a fact other boys let it get as far as intercourse. I used to dread what would happen when I saw Vaseline.
- 15. The Brothers abused us in the dormitories as well. I used to hear them coming up in the middle of the night and they would take someone away for a couple of hours and then bring them back. You knew they were being taken away to be abused but you didn't enquire too much in case it was your turn. You just lay there and pretended to be asleep. I was called away a couple of times. The Brothers had little rooms off the dormitories and they would bring you there and turn the light off. We used to know whenever the light went off in that little room, something was happening.
- 16. BR 42 took a liking to me and he used to let me go down and get his paper for him every evening. Thinking back now I was lucky to have that freedom but I never used it for anything; it was great just to get out the gate. I know now this was his way of grooming me. The older boys used to ask me to get them cigarettes when I was out and there was no way I could have said no.
- 17. Sexual intercourse was not discouraged between the boys and this happened regularly. Homosexuality was rife among the inmates, as was bullying with the younger ones suffering. There was no escape as everywhere was unlocked and there was no privacy. The older boys would regularly abuse the younger boys in the domnitories. I remember one of the older boys who did this was called <u>SPT 24</u> He never abused me but he would ask to borrow shirts and things from me when we went out on a Sunday. A lot of the time I wouldn't want to lend him anything but he was in a position to bully me and I

HIA 314

#### PRIVATE

OCD 130(1)

#### CC2013100600639

SPT-25510

made watch as were The NP 0 MUG ner other DI P 500 onour Ne NON d ROT ۵ Am recovo NAAC ment 957-1960. ere Aane remember rone 10 01 nave OP d NOU 1001  $\mathsf{BR}$ 47 ras on 0 WW 100 TOD В 47 when Nov 2 2 a These as d Conl ret 102 NON 09 No Th 501 Mil were 0 ratch NON wenng **BR 42** SIGNATURE OF INTERVIEWEE: **BR 94** SIGNATURE OF APPROPRIATE ADULT: 1 61 SIGNATURE OF SOLICITOR: SIGNATURES OF INTERVIEWING OFFICERS:

Page 28 of 48

**SPT-082** 

#### PRIVATE

walking around holding the hands of young boys and letting them have treats and cigarettes.

- 14. We slept in dormitories at first but after a while small houses were built and the boys from the country stayed there and all the boys from the city stayed in the dormitories. I think the houses had single bedrooms for the boys. The Brothers slept in the same building as the boys and in fact one Brother slept in a small room at the end of every dormitory. I was told by some boys that some Brothers used to come in during the night to keep them company in the rooms but it never **SPT 43** happened to me. I remember that a boy called was Brother BR 86 BR 86 pet and he told both me and other boys that had sex with him. I also remember one occasion where SPT 43 was hiding under Brother BR 42 BR 86<sub>cassock</sub>. I was also told by SPT 44 had taken him into the Brother's bedroom and abused him.
- 15. If any of the boys misbehaved sometimes the Brothers put you into a punishment cell and gave you bread and water. You got porridge in the morning but the rest of the day you got bread and water. The cell would have been about six feet by eight feet with a steel double door which locked. There was a bed and you got a mattress at night. The cell was absolutely freezing and there was a small window. You would have been there for up to three days but when you are a child that seems like a lifetime. I remember that I was sent to the punishment cell on two or three occasions.
- 16. On a normal day a Brother woke the boys in a dormitory about half past seven in the morning and then I washed, got dressed, made my bed and had breakfast before going to school. The school was on site and was massive. There were around thirty boys in each class and in my time there the boys moved from class to class for different subjects rather than staying in the same classroom. I do not remember ever having to do any homework in the evenings. A couple of Brothers taught as well as some outside lay teachers. The lay teachers came in for nine o'clock and left about half past three when school finished for the day. Sometimes I did not go to school but had to stay behind and clean and dust the

HIA 272

PRIVATE

5

time supervision of the dormitories was not undertaken by De La Salle Brothers, but rather by lay staff. The Brothers would be on duty until approximately 8/9pm when they would hand over to civilian night staff. There would be a half hour/hour overlap as the boys were settling down for the night when both were on duty. Thereafter the Brothers would retire to their quarters. One Brother would sleep in a room attached to the dormitories but he was only 'on-call' for emergencies and the responsibility for supervision and maintaining good order rested with the civilian staff. It is believed that the individual identified is a SPT 40. He was still alive in the mid to late 2000s. No surviving Brother has any recollection of boys being punished by cold showers in the middle of the night and the Brothers would not have condoned or tolerated such behaviour.

In respect of paragraph 10: BR 5 as Director and Principal would have had responsibility for administering corporal punishment. Individual Brothers would have administered punishment for minor offences but if a resident committed a more serious indiscretion, for eg absconding or serious abuse of staff, he would be sent to the Director/Principal.

0

- 10. In respect of paragraph 11: BR 85 was in St Patricks from 01/09/70 until 29/05/73. A boy may have been given a few slaps on the hand in public, but when he was punished by the Principal for more serious offences it was always done in private and always given on the posterior over the trousers (never on the a bare posterior). It would have been normal practice for another member of staff to be present as a witness. Details would have then been entered into the punishment book. The punishment book may survive among the material uplifted by the NIO.
- 11. In respect of paragraph 12: The Order does not accept the suggestion being made by HIA 272. The Order has received a relatively small number of complaints in respect of St Patrick's and it does not accept that sexual abuse was widespread. Surviving Brothers accept that 'city' boys received home visits and visitors more regularly than country boys but that was outside the control or influence of the Order. The managers of the Home and the Ministry of Home Affairs would have been well aware of the logistical difficulties associated with accommodating 'country boys' in the School. Home leave was facilitated were at all possible. The withdrawal of 'home leave' as a privilege was a recognized form of punishment designed to encourage responsible behaviour. In addition to weekend leave residents would generally have received a week or leave at Christmas, Halloween and Easter and two weeks leave in the Summer. The provision of leave would of course have depended on parental home conditions and court/remand restrictions. The Order rejects the implication that Brothers showing kindness towards country boys who perhaps didn't get home at the weckend equates to some underhand behaviour with an ulterior.
- 12. In respect of paragraph 13: The Order does not accept HIA 272's reflections. If HIA 272 can detail who told him about the Brother's he names it may be able to comment further. The Order does not accept that the Brother's he names were 'abusers'. Surviving Brothers do not recall Brothers holding hands with residents. The residents were predominantly teenage boys. It is unlikely that they would have allowed any adult to hold hands with them. Brothers may, from time to time, have had reason to comfort upset residents but the 'grooming' suggestion is rejected. There was a tuck shop onsite and 'treats' were readily available. Individual Brothers may have provided

		Page 86
1		happened, except for one occasion when you recall coming
2		into the classroom and finding him hiding underneath
3		BR86's cassock.
4	Α.	That's true, yes.
5	Q.	And at the time the reference was made to he was
б		praying.
7	Α.	He told us that this was part of he wanted to be
8		a priest and this was he was being learned how to be
9		one.
10	Q.	Just if we scroll up to the paragraph before, because
11		you talk about a whole series of Brothers and grooming
12		practices, and I was asking you is that really what you
13		as an adult thinking back now are taking the behaviour
14		to be? You talk just if we scroll on to the next
15		page, you can remember a Brother walking around holding
16		the hands of you know, when you say young boys, it
17		would have been
18	Α.	12, 13, yes.
19	Q.	13, 14 12, 13, 14, letting them have treats and
20		cigarettes, and I think what the Order would say about
21		that is, you know, what were acts of kindness in terms
22		of giving someone a treat or letting them have
23		a cigarette and such like shouldn't be equated just by
24		innuendo to being some form of grooming behaviour for
25		sexual offending, and some of the Brothers you never had

## **SPT-028**

#### PRIVATE

### St Patrick's Training School, April 1964 - May 1964 approximately

- 3. One day the police came to get me and took me to St Patrick's Training School. I believe it was around April time, 1964. In the 1960's the welfare had total control. I assume that we were taken to court because my sister couldn't look after us. My mother had been bed-ridden for several years prior to her death, and I think that we had probably been missing a lot of school. My sisters DL 221 and DL 222 were taken to Middletown. DL 290 was taken to Muckamore because he suffered from mental health difficulties. I think that initially DL 219 was able to keep HIA 26 the youngest, in her care.
- sexually molested me. 4. On my first day in St Patrick's, BR 24 BR 24 called me up The two of us were alone in a classroom, to the desk. At the start he was rubbing my back, pretending to comfort me, but he put his hand down my trousers, and fondled me. It seemed to go on forever and I remember feeling really uncomfortable. BR 24 BR 24 made me put my hand through his cassock, and his trousers were undone underneath. He made me fondle him. Something happened BR 24 had to leave. While he outside of the classroom and was gone I tried to run away, by climbing out the window. I got caught and He slapped me across the face and BR 24 got a beating by then put me in a room, which was like a store room. There were no BR 24 windows, and it seemed like I was in there for hours. eventually came and got me out. He grabbed me and was shaking me and told me that I better not tell anyone what had happened.
- 5. I think I was only in St Patrick's for a couple of weeks and then I was brought to Court for some reason. I never knew why. It's a mystery to me, particularly since I don't think that they ever brought my brother to Court. I was then sent to Rubane. I was taken to Rubane by a man named NL 40 who I believe was a Social Worker. Another boy, DL 209

HIA 262

PRIVATE

# OCD 14

# C61-220-93

# SPT-20808

STAT	EMENT OF: SPT 96 CONTINUATION PAGE NO
times	and always in his bedroom in the De La Salle House.
В	R 42 never had full or oral sex with me on any of
	times but he would normally take my trousers and
	pants down, lie me on the bed then he would lie down
1.44	d me and put his penis between my legs. From what I
	recall he came off a number of occasions down the back
	my legs and bottom. Another Brother who lived in this
	Salles House was BR 24 . Brother
	24 was also one of my teachers at school, I think he
	have been though I do remember he spoke with a
	well educated voice. BR 24 knew that
244 Y - 1	R 42 took me to his bedroom and I suspect that he
	BR 42 sexually abused me there. Brother
5.5.5	24 would accost me in the De La Salle House and
	to me about my school work etc. During these
	rsations he would stroke and fondle my penis but
	s on the outside of my clothing, he would have me
	and fondle his erect penis from the outside of his
	. These instances would happen approximately every
	week and took place in both the old and new
De La	Salle House building over a period of approximately a
year	to a year and a bit. It was during this period of
time	in my life that I became involved with the law and I
subse	quently was sent to St Patrick's Training School on
the	Glen Road, Belfast about 1964. I was about 15 years
old	at this time. When I was put in St Patrick's I escaped
	2 occasions. I was caught and taken back to
St Pa	trick's where I was seen by a BR 83 I

Form 38/36[a]

type

room

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS: SPT 96

which was at the rear of the kitchens and

Page 237 of 572

near



# C61-340

STATEMENT OF WITNESS

STATEMENT OF

DL 139

AGE OF WITNESS [If over 21 enter 'over 21'] : OVER 21

I declare that this statement consisting of 7 pages, each signed by me is true to the best of my knowledge and belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered in evidence at a preliminary enquiry or at the trial of any person, I shall be liable to prosecution if I have wilfully stated in it enything which I know to be false or do not believe to be true.

Dated this 16 day of August 1995

REGGIE MARKS SIGNATURE OF MEMBER by whom statement was recorded or received DL 139 SIGNATURE OF WITNESS

SPT-22545

I am the above named and I was born in I presently live at an address in the area. known to the Police. When I was 13 years of age I was placed into care at St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast, as I had got into trouble with stealing cars and other petty crimes plus not going to school. When I was placed in this school I was introduced to a Christian Brother called BR 1 I don't know his proper was a senior Brother in the school at that BR 1 name. were in overall time and BR 26 nd a BR 37 charge of the school. I remember it was only three days after I arrived in St Patrick's that I was sexually abused by BR 1 On this day it was in the morning, I was taken to a classroom by BR 26 to see BR 1 This classroom, which was used for teaching maths, was at the end of a long corridor and faced out onto the back of the school where there was a grass area. When I went BR 1 as there on his own at the front into the classroom, desk and as soon as I went in BR 26 left, leaving me and BR 1 BR1 on our own. When ot up from his desk, he said something like, "You'll learn you wee bastard", and then

Page 28 of 100

# OCD 119

- 00

C61-340

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

PAGE NUMBER 2

SPT-22554

STATEMENT OF DL 124
We went down to the bottom of the Hurley Pitch where there was a wall
and a lans. A man who was known as was there, carrying his
shotgun as usual. slipped his hand onto the outside of my
trousers in the penis area. I ran off. This was the only contact I
had with him. I remember another occasion at Rubane when I was n the
grounds near the start of the hurley pitch, where the monkey tree was.
BR 21 had his habit pulled up and he was having sex with
SR 32 gainst this tree. In relation to my previous statement
where I mentioned being in plaster of paris at the camp in Cushendal,
this was because I stood on something on the beach. I was treated at
Cushendal Hospital for the injury to my right foot. I then went to St
Patrick's in 1971. BR 1 as there then. He couldn't walk
past any boy without touching him somewhere on the body, and usually
ending up on the bum. BR 1 was always around the showers when the
boys were showering. He stood and watched. BR 26 was
frequently in the showers as well. One or other of them would have
handed out the shampoo to the boys. BR 26 was known as
because he was always whistling and there was talk he was sexually
involved with DL 138 from Antrim - one of the boys. They were
always together. BR 1 then called me into the Brother's
house one day. He took me into a room which I assume was his.
It had a bed, sink and wardrobe and was very similar to BR 24
BR 24 room. In my previous statement I mentioned being buggered
by BR 24 This happened in his room at St Patrick's.
Anyhow. BR 1 began fondling me all over and I had to
masturbate him. Once BR 1 ejaculated he had no further interest

10

Page 37 of 100

SPT-20837

1. C	STATEMENT OF WITNESS	
		_
1.000	STATEMENT OF:	_
~	AGE OF WITNESS (If over 21 anter "over 21"):	
0	OCCUPATION OF WITNESS:	_
- 2	ADDRESS:	_
TO BE COMPLETED WHEN THE STATEMENT HAS BEEN WRITTEN	I declare that this statement consisting of <i>S</i> pages, each signed by me is true the best of my knowledge and belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered evidence at a preliminary enquiry or at the trial of any person, I shall be liable prosecution if I have wilfully stated in it anything which I know to be false or do believe to be true.	d ir e to
	Dated this 21 day of July 193	
	Straden Mar. SPT 135	_
	SIGNATURE OF MEMBER by whom SIGNATURE OF WITNESS statement was recorded or received	
0	In about July 1962 I was sent to St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road,	
	Belfast, under a Court Order for non attendance of school. I was	
	accommodated in the Junior School, first landing. At that time I was	
	just under 12 years old. I had no sexual experience at all prior to	
	going into St Pats and was completely sexually innocent. About a couple	
	of months after I arrived in the school I was crossing between the senior	
	side and the junior side of the school buildings at about 8pm when I was	
	accosted by two senior boys and one junior boy. I don't now remember	
	anything about the two senior boys but I recall that the junior boy was	i Na
0	named I think this boy	
	At the time of the three boys accosting me	
1.1	in the school grounds they sexually abused me. and one of the	
. 10	other boys held me down while the third boy took my trousers down and had	
	anal sex with me. After he had finished the other senior boy also had	
	anal sex with me, then forced me to masturbate him while the	
	other two looked on. I was in no way a willing party to this sexual	
	assault and I was completely terrified by what was happening to me. I	
	was in a lot of anal pain at the time but was not physically struck or	
	otherwise assaulted by the three boys. I am sure that the two older boys	
	entered my rectum with their penes as I could feel them inside me and the	
	entered my rectum with their penes as I could reel them inside me and the	

Page 266 of 572

# OCD 14

C61-220-93

# SPT-20838

### STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

1	STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE NO: 2
•	pain was great. I bled from my rectum for a number of days after the
	attack. I did not report this matter to anyone, either staff or other
	pupils at that time as I was too scared to do so. I do not recall either
	of the two older boys sexually assaulting me again after that initial
	attack, but continued to force me to masturbate him about
	once or twice a week for the next four years until I left the school in
	July 1966. These sexual attacks would normally take place in the evening
	time and would occur in all parts of the school premises and grounds, the
	dorm, the playing fields, the swimming pool area etc. After about a two
	year period started to have oral sex with me, it was always
0	me who had to take his penis in my mouth and never the other way around.
	After we had both got a little bit older then forced me to have
	full anal sex with him, again it was always him who entered me and I
4	never entered him. These sexual assaults took place about once a month
	and guite often were performed in the top dorm when I was sent to clean
	them in the afternoons. I can state that throughout all these sexual
	assaults with it never became a mutual sexual experience but
	one in which dominated me and forced himself on me without my
	consent. Whilst had regular sexual contact with me he later
· · · · · ·	introduced another boy into these sexual assaults. This boy I knew as
0	, at that time he was about 12 years old and slightly
	younger than me. He was very thin with I know that
	later in the early 1970s he lived for six or seven months at
	Belfast, and regularly sexually
	assaulted me together. They would both force me to masturbate them in
	each others presence, these masturbating sessions lasted for about a
	year, and then started on me on his own. He forced me to commit
	oral sex with him on a regular basis, approximately once a week, he was
	more demanding than what was. Again it was always me who had to
	take penis in my mouth and never the other way round. The most
Form 38/36 [a] (Plain)	SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER:, SPT 135

Page 267 of 572

# OCD 14

# C61-220-93

# SPT-20839

## STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

	STATEMENT OF:SPT 135 CONTINUATION PAGE NO: 3CONTINUATION PAGE NO: 3
	during the evening time. appeared to hang around the showers
•	waiting for me to pass then, would pull me into the alcove and force
	himself sexually on me. These sexual assaults were never done by mutual
	consent but were always forced upon me by . If I ever tried to
	, run away or refuse him he would physically assault me and I became afraid
	of him and his beatings. Because of my fear of him I gave into whatever
1.1	sexual abuse wanted of me. He ended up by having full sexual
	anal sex with me approximately twice a week over the full period of time
	that I was in St Patricks until I left in July 1966. I further recall
0	another boy who sexually abused me whilst I was a pupil in St Patricks.
	His surname was but I can not now recall his first name. He was
	then a boy of about 15 years old and a pupil in the senior school. My
	first sexual experience with was when I was about 14 years old
	and had been in the school for two years. I recall one Sunday evening
	when I was returning to St Pats from Sunday one day leave, that
	stopped me in the driveway up to the school and forced me behind some
	trees. He forced me to have oral sex with him and made me put his penis
	in my mouth. climaxed in my mouth and made me swallow it, this
	was the first time I had ever swallowed semen and it made me violently
•	ill. I went to the TV room after let me go and there continued
1.1	to be sick. I was so sick that a Brother member of staff took me by mini
	bus to the Mater Hospital for medical attention. When I was seen by the
	doctor I told him what had happened and why I was so sick. I assume the
8	Brother was told by the doctor what had happened to me and why I was so
	sick. After treatment in the Mater Hospital I was taken back to
	St Patricks that night. I continued to be ill for a number of days after
	assault on me but no member of staff ever spoke to me or
1	enquired from me as to what had made me ill or the cause of my sickness.
	After that initial assault sexual assaults on me became a
orm 38/36 [a]	SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER, SPT 135
	SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER:

(Plain)

HMSO 8990140 C10.000 1/91 GP5560 59102

SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER: ...

Page 268 of 572

.....

# OCD 14

•

# C61-220-93

### STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

Ę	STATEMENT OF: SPT 135 CONTINUATION PAGE NO: 4
4	weekly occurrence on the Saturday and Sunday night or on just one night
1	per week. The attacks normally took place on the driveway up to the main
	school building. As with and and these sexual assaults began
5	with masturbation and oral sex but then developed into full anal sex
-	penetration. was always very rough with me and would normally
1	hit me and beat me about after the sex acts. I was never a willing
1	partner into any of these sexual acts and only participated in them
1	because of my fear of and his violence towards me. The weekly
1	sexual assaults by lasted for approximately two years, again to I
2	left the school in July 1966. With reference to
2	forgct to mention an instance which happened with him on an occasion when
5	I had been detailed to take a tray of food up to his bedroom in the dorm.
Ż	As I recall was sick at the time and that's why he was in his
1	bedroom during the day and his food was being brought to him. I recall
1	that when I went into his room pulled me onto his bed and forced
r	me to masturbate him. Approximately six months after the first time I
-	was sexually abused by the two senior boys and I could take
ł	it no longer and I overcame my fear of the boys and decided to tell what
1	was happening to me to one of my teachers. I waited to after class one
•	day and when the other boys left I approached the teacher to tell him
1	what was going on. I don't now remember his name but he would then have
)	been about 60 years old, grey hair going bald, 5'10", he smoked a pipe
	and was a very well spoken man. He was a Brother and always wore the
4	clerical collar. This Brother to my mind was one of the senior teachers
	and as such detailed the other teachers as to their duties etc. He
	always taught in the same classroom and in this room he had an intercom
	and a large fish tank. I think that the class store room was attached to
1	the classroom. When I spoke to this Brother about the series of sexual
	assaults on me he asked me who was responsible for these attacks and I
l	cold him of and the other two boys. The old teacher told me not

Form 38/36 [a] (Plain)

HMSO 8990140 C10.000 1/91 GI

580 58102

SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER: ...

SPT 135

SPT-20840

Page 269 of 572

# OCD 14

C61-220-93

# SPT-20841

## STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

	STATEMENT OF: SPT 135 CONTINUATION PAGE NO: 5
0	to worry about the sex as this was part of life and that I would grow out
0	of it. He then dismissed me and I felt somewhat relieved in having told
•	someone in authority of my troubles and problems. A few days after I had
	spoken to the old Brother he detailed me to be the boy responsible for
	cleaning the classroom after school. The first day that I was a cleaner
	, the old Brother came into the classroom and told me to sit down. He
	talked to me for a minute or two and then he put his arms round me and
	his hand down to my private parts and fondled me. He then took me into
	the store room and asked me to masturbate him, this was the first time I
	had heard the word masturbate. After a few days when I was again
	cleaning the classroom the old Brother took me into the store room and
10	made me have oral sex with him. These instances of sexual abuse became
AL S	routine with me either having to masturbate the old Brother or have oral
1	sex with him. I would now think that these cases of abuse took place
131	about once a week for about two years whilst I was in his class. It only
	stopped when I went up to work for Sister There were a number of
8	other boys who sexually abused me during my stay in St Patricks but I can
inal	not now remember anything about them or any specific instance. As I
Original	recall now they were usually in company. After I had been
the c	forced into homosexual sex by the staff member and some of the boys in
4	St Patricks, I did become involved in mutual sexual relations with some
Copy	of the other boys, this was with my consent and I have no complaint to
INC	make about these episodes as it was only very young boys involved in
a I	masturbation.
fied	
Certified a Irue Copy o	
Ce	

Form 38/36 [a] (Plain)

HMSO 8990140 C10,000 1/91 GP5560 59102

SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER: SPT 135

129

Page 270 of 572

SPT-20842

# OCD 14

# C61-220-93

STATEMENT OF: BE	RNARD HAMI	ŭ.	
Name		Rank	
AGE OF WITNESS(If over 21 enter "ov	ver 21"):	OVER 21	
I declare that this stater signed by me is true to and I make it knowing at a preliminary enquiry shall be liable to prosec it anything which I know be true.	the best of that, if it or at the cution if I	my knowled is tendered trial of an have wilfu	dge and belie in evidence y person, ally stated in
Dated this 11th	day of Novemi	ber	19 94
M G McArdle		B Hamil	V .
SIGNATURE OF MEMBER by who statement was recorded or receiv		SIGNATU	RE OF WITNESS
I am Deputy Director o	of St Patrick	's Training	School, Gle
Road, Belfast. I have	worked ther	e since 1	966. I ca
confirm from records at	the School	that SP	T 135 DC
who then resided			w
remanded to the Training	11100000	8.2.65 and	was committe
on 15.2.65 and remained			
have been made aware of			
SPT 135 when he			and and a subset of the
can also confirm from		- 10 C - 10 C	and the second s
inmate in St Patrick's			
during the time			
have also been made a	1		and I ca
confirm that there was		(M.)	
period SPT 135 was there		The second second	
checked school records			
was not deta			
period than previously sta	and a second second		
aware of the content			
relation to the descript			
allegations against. I	Intelligence allowed	the nercon	SPT 135

SIGNATURE OF WITNESS: B Hamill

130

Page 271 of 572

## **OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL**

To be completed when the statement has been written.

•

Form 38/36

SPT-20843

# OCD 14

C61-220-93

STATEMENT OF: BERNARD HAMILL CONTINUATION PAGE NO referring to is BR 24 who is now deceased. BR 24 was the in the junior school when SPT 135 was there. I have no recollection that BR 24 smoked a pipe or that he had a fish tank in his classroom or an intercom.	
BR 24was theinthe juniorschoolwhenSPT 135wasthere.I havenorecollectionthatBR 24smoked a pipe or that he had a fish tank	: 2
when SPT 135 was there. I have no recollection that BR 24 smoked a pipe or that he had a fish tank	
BR 24 smoked a pipe or that he had a fish tank	
and the second se	
in his classroom or an intercom.	
John Harrison Ha Harrison Harrison Ha Harrison Harrison H	
Jon	
D de	
o de la	
o de la	
20 A	
20 A	
A.	
1 at	
O unit	
true copy of the orig	
the	
27 OL	
5	
Checked and certified a	
Cer	
pue	
keed a second	
Chec	
orm 38/36(a) SIGNATURE OF WITNESS: <u>B Hamill</u>	
Page 272 of 572	

OCD 122

CC 2013011600301

HIA 137

Continuation of Statement of:

Page 5 of 7

his false teeth were nearly coming out of his mouth. He beat me to a pulp. I lay on a heap in the corner. He left me there. I cried for hours, nobody was there to help me. He had the power over me. He broke me that day. That's the last time he beat me. During my time in St Pat's and to escape from the beatings of BR 26, I began to play the drums. The drums were situated in the junior side of the building. I'd go over to the junior side to practice, then I'd play in the chapel. I'd practice all sorts of tunes and then I'd play some of my own music. It was over here I BR 24 . He worked in the junior side and had a room next to where I encountered played the drums. I remember BR 24 coming into the room to talk with me. He talked about the drums and about me playing in the chapel. He touched my hair and said once I finished to give him a shout in his room next door. BR 24 would talk about Downpatrick and told me he knew Downpatrick. When I went into the room where he was he called me closer to him. I sat close to him, he started touching me on my leg. He asked if I liked it, alarm bells started to go off in my head as this was exactly the way it happened with in Downpatrick, except this time I was in a different setting. This time I was trapped. The touching by BR 24 escalated, he started to touch me on my private parts. This I find hard to deal with and have spoken in length to my psychologist about, was it wrong, was I wrong, was there something wrong with me. I have guestioned my sexuality, why did I respond to his touching. I just went along with it. I didn't think about the rights and wrongs. I became friends with my abusers but I hated what he made me do. The first few times when BR 24 touched me it would have been over the top of my clothes. He would have got me to touch him also and he often asked if I was happy. As a child I replied yes but it made me feel dirty. I've done nothing wrong. BR 24 would give me cigarettes, sweets etc for the sexual favours. He was the only brother I know of that used a cigarette holder when smoking.

Signature of witness:	HIA 137	
Signature witnessed by:		
(Appropriate Adult)		
38/36 (2007)		

Page 31 of 56

SPT-25378

OCD 122

CC 2013011600301

HIA 137

Continuation of Statement of:

Page 6 of 7

BR 24 touching occurred 3 to 4 times a week, some weeks it didn't happen as he was away. I recall his first approach being in and around the time came to visit me. I think he said something to BR 24 . BR 24 wore a robe. He would pull up the robe. He would get me to undress him from the waist down beneath his robe. He would get me to masturbate myself and he would rub himself. He would also get me to masturbate him. Every time I went over to the junior side to play the drums and he was there, he would get me to strip naked. He would look at me. He would touch me and I would touch him. He would have been aroused. When we masturbated each other we would have both ejaculated. He would have cleaned up with a tissue. I recall one evening sitting in the chair, he told me to stand up. He turned me round, he tried to bend me over the chair, then the desk. The desk was lower, he was behind me. He was trying to put his privates inside me. They were much bigger than mine. It was very painful. As it started to go in it really hurt. He was saying it will be grand, he tried to get me to open my legs more. He pushed forward. I was in so much pain. I shouted out, I told him I didn't like it, I told him he was hurting me. I told him to stop. I said please, please don't do that. I didn't want it to happen. I was upset, it was horrific. He stopped and said he was sorry for hurting me. He didn't try this again but the touching and masturbating continued until I got out of St Pat's. I couldn't talk about this, I didn't tell anyone. I had decided I was going to put it all to the back of my mind. I was going to put it all behind me. But then he turned up at my home in Downpatrick. I got out of St Pat's on the 16<sup>th</sup> September 1972. I had been out a few months and was working as a painter, painting houses. I recall coming home from work and walking into my house. My mother called me in and said 'Look who's come to see you'. I opened the door,

BR 24 was sitting in my home, sitting in a chair opposite my mother. When I saw him it was like a nightmare. I went into the kitchen, my sister was there. I recall saying to my

 
 Signature of witness:
 HIA 137

 Signature witnessed by: (Appropriate Adult)
 38/36 (2007)

Certified a true copy of an original signed document

Page 32 of 56

SPT-25379

## **SPT-049**

#### PRIVATE

two tables for speaking to each other. He lined us up and slapped all of us on the face. I was thirteen at the time but very small and he tried to get me to cry when he hit me. He hit another boy called SPT 38 and he had had enough so he stabbed SPT 1 with a fork and some of them ran away. SPT 38 is deceased now.

- 9. I used to be upset by the fact that we were referred to by people outside the home as "bad boys". I was in there but I didn't do anything wrong but you were always told you're in the home for bad boys. I knew I wasn't bad but I was there anyway and so some of the kids who played out on the streets nearby weren't allowed to come out and play with me, they weren't allowed near me because I was in the home for bad boys.
- 10 BR 1 was always touching you up and pulling you in towards him. He made me put my hand inside his long robe and masturbate him. This started soon after I arrived at St Patrick's and it happened on at least a monthly basis. It often took place in the store outside the dormitory or near the swimming pool area or at the Brother's house as he would take you there on occasion.
- 11. There was a small swimming pool. When you would come out of the swimming pool or come off the football pitch and get undressed Brother BR 1 would smack you on the bum and leave his hand there telling you to hurry up or wait until you were completely naked and make sure you got properly dried and look at you. I was not the only one he did this to and he did it in a very matter of fact way. BR 1 was bald, just under six foot I would estimate I think he would have been in

his late forties when I was in the home.

12.1 was abused by BR 47 He took me in to his room and tried to penetrate me but couldn't so he just then put it between my legs. After this he did have penetrative sex with me. On other occasions he would have made me perform oral sex or masturbate him. These incidents happened

#### PRIVATE

## **SPT-050**

#### PRIVATE

regularly, monthly and sometimes more frequently. It happened mainly in his room which was attached to the dormitory.

- 13. During this time other people knew about the abuse. I wasn't the only one. There were other boys being abused and I could see what was happening to them. I could see the pattern. We did not discuss it but I could tell from the pattern of the Brother's behaviour. You could see the Brothers shepherding the boys out of the room, they would be gone for long periods and I could tell from the expression on their faces upon their return that they had experienced the same treatment as I had been subjected to since my arrival at the home.
- 14 I am not sure who was in charge of the home at the time but Brother BR 83 seemed to be the main brother at the time. I did not feel that I could report the abuse to him. I never told my brothers or my parents about the abuse. My older brother had been in the home two or three years before me but had left by the time I arrived. I did not speak to him either about the abuse I suffered there.

15. The day after I arrived BR 83 asked me if I was related to and I told them he was my brother. He said "if you're anything like him you're in for a really rough time here". He was frightening looking back on it.

BR 42 16. They all seemed like big men to me, apart from as I was BR 42 never hit me. BR 94 never young and small. **BR 47** subjected me to sexual abuse but he was really violent. also hit you and he instilled fear in you. They usually hit you with their hands. You would get the odd punch in the ribs, you were forever getting slapped and hit across the back of the head and stuff like that. They would hit you if you were cheeky or did not do what you were told but to be honest they did not need an excuse to hit you. I was just riddled with fear of them all the time;

PRIVATE

**SPT-058** 

#### PRIVATE

- 9. Sometimes they would take you to the pool to punish you at the weekend when the Belfast boys were not there. It happened mainly at holiday time because I was the one that never seemed to get out. I do not know the reason for this. All boys were allowed out whether they were admitted on the care side or the justice side.
- 10. The first time they took me down to Broadway picture house I waited until the screen went dark and then ran away towards the Falls Road. I didn't know where I was going and I had no money. Two brothers, BR 42 and the tall skinny brother, came and picked me up. I got a big punishment for trying to escape a second time. The punishment was so bad that I only tried to escape twice. They took me to the swimming pool. Going down under the water all the time there is no sound and coming up your mouth is full of water and that was torture for me.
- 11. I remained in the cell for most of my stay at St Patrick's. About a year before I left the school they put me in a dormitory. BR 42 used to come up with a big bunch of keys like a gaoler at 6.30am, he would hit your legs with a stick and tell you to get up for early mass and the sleep was hanging out of your eyes. I think Father Brendan Smyth said mass on occasion.
- 12. On Saturdays and Sundays when the Belfast boys were out, they made me push all the beds back in the dormitory. They gave me two cloths for under my feet and they would splash polish all over the big long dormitory and I had to walk up and down with these squares of cloth under my feet covered in polish and I had to make that floor shine. I had to do that in three dormitories. I always did this cleaning alone.
- 13.1 ran away sometimes and the same four brothers previously mentioned punished me with beatings. They were bad. They took you up to the sick room on the second floor. There was no light, just a frosted window and a mattress on the floor with an army blanket. These Brothers came in with a cane and a belt and you would be beaten anywhere. In the room anything

PRIVATE

## **SPT-059**

#### PRIVATE

went. Sometimes one would come in but sometimes two or three would come in and beat me. I think it was all down to that one incident with SPT 36

- 14. When I was about fourteen and a year before I left they put me into the kitchen to wash pots and pans. I was in the kitchen for about six months before I got out. I washed the pots for the junior and senior side and the skin started to come off my fingers. The constant washing resulted in me suffering from dermatitis.
- 15. They used to come at night because I knew by the frosted window there was no daylight coming in. BR 1 BR 5 and the tall skinny brother came to my room on a couple of occasions. They opened the door and they turned me around on the mattress, pulled my trousers down and sexually abused me. I was kicking out and two brothers held me down whilst the other brother abused me. It happened twice, once with BR 1 as the abuser and on the second occasion it was the tall skinny brother who abused me. On both occasions they had anal sex with me. One of them would hold you and you knew that would last about ten minutes and then they would go out and close the door. You would get a glass of milk and a jam sandwich the next morning. They would keep you in longer on those occasions because they knew you were upset.
- 16. On occasion when you had no marks on your body or face the brothers would take you downstairs to the canteen to eat with the other boys. This only happened every now and again and the boys knew they had to keep their distance from me. I was never allowed to befriend any of them and never knew their names. I always felt that I was the only resident who was treated in this way. You sat at a table of four but they put me at different tables. If you stayed in your cell at Christmas time for example you would get a jam sandwich. I don't remember Christmas dinners. As a result I used to hate Christmas as everyone was running around happy and getting presents and I just couldn't wait for it to finish.

PRIVATE

**SPT-078** 

PRIVATE

HIA REF: 272 Witness Name: HIA 272

#### THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STA	TEMENT OF HIA 272
i, HIA 272 will say as follows:	<u>-</u> /
Personal details	
Personal details	. I lived with my parents and my two sisters
	. I lived with my parents and my two sisters I was the third child in the family, I
1. I was born on	. I lived with my parents and my two sisters I was the third child in the family. I and BR 5 was

- 2. I used to have to wear shorts as part of my school uniform. BR 5 would put his hand up my shorts and play with me. He brought me to the Head Office and he felt my private parts and rubbed me. He had a leather strap and he used to say would I like to feel the leather strap but it was through his clothing and it was actually his penis I was feeling. The abuse started when I was about five or six years old and continued until I was seven or eight years old. At that stage my family moved to me and I believe that BR 5 left the school.
  - 3. There were no witnesses to the abuse as it always took place in the office with the door closed. I remember that I mentioned it to my mother but she was a person who was very religious and could not believe that the Brother would do such a thing. I was referred to the Royal Hospital for Sick Children when I was at primary school as I was having medical problems with my penis. I now believe that this was due to the abuse I suffered at the hands of BR 5

HIA 272

PRIVATE

1

## **SPT-079**

#### PRIVATE

4. When I was thirteen years old or so I was given a twenty one day sentence at St Patrick's for being involved in an assault on source and the suffer any abuse during that initial three week period. Approximately six months later I got into trouble for breaking into shops and stealing cars and had to attend court again. I was sent to St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast on a three year Training School Order.

#### St Patrick's Training School

- 5. When I was sent to St Pat's I discovered that BR 5 was now the there. He always appeared in the gym on Sunday as he was the person who handed out the pocket money and also decided who was allowed to go on a home visit. He began to target me again after I had been there for about four or five months. He used to bring you down to the office for any excuse whatsoever. I was rebellious at that time and so there were plenty of opportunities to see me on my own. There were no witnesses because he always locked the mahogany door and twisted the venetian blind so that it was impossible to see inside. He also used to get me to help him count the charity boxes in the office and this provided lots of opportunities to get me alone.
- 6. He played with me and used to grab me from the back and played with me at the front, pushing into him in the way which a normal person would do with a woman. I believe he was actually ejaculating when he was doing this because he was pushing in and then he would grip me and when I turned round afterwards he was standing and the sweat was running down his face. I will never forget him. He was a bald headed man, small, fat with tight eyes and the sweat would have been coming off his face and he would have been wiping it away with an old dirty hanky.
- 7. It would not have happened every day. It might not have happened for three weeks or it might have happened twice in two weeks but it was pretty regular over a period of about a year. I started to run away from the Training School after about six months but I am not sure whether the abuse was making me run

HIA 272

PRIVATE

2

**SPT-080** 

#### PRIVATE

away or it was just because I was homesick. I don't honestly remember the reason why I ran away. I always went back to my parent's home and I did tell them that I was not happy. At the beginning they sent me back by as time went by my mother sometimes hid me if the Brothers called to bring me back. When I returned to the home I had to wear shorts for six weeks as this made it easier to identify me if I tried to abscond again.

- 8. I realised that what he was doing to me was wrong because I was getting older and I tried to stop him sometimes. I tried to stand up but he kept holding me tight and continued what he was doing. He threatened me that he would put me in another home for older boys and that I could be raped and that there were men who were worse than him and could do worse than him. I can remember one specific threat about that but cannot recall if it happened more than once. I believe that the abuse may have stopped after the threat but I cannot be totally sure.
- 9. I would say that St Pat's was alright in general but at night time if any of the boys spoke they used to have you out kneeling on the floors for two hours. Sometimes it was the Brothers who punished us but there was also a housemaster called SPT 40 who was involved. He was from and had black hair and swarthy skin. He was evil and wicked. In other cases if anyone misbehaved they waited until about three or four in the morning and they brought everyone down and put us through the cold showers. I don't know what pleasure they got out of it but that's what they were doing. It did not happen every week but it could have happened maybe three or four times in six months. I just accepted that punishment was normal.
- 10. It was a regular occurrence to get slapped by me and other boys such as DL 356

BR 5 This happened to SPT 41 and SPT 42 BR 5 was the main

SPT 42 took his own life a few years ago.

person who strapped me and it seemed that he got pleasure from it. He brought me into the Head Office most of the time and he punished me with a strap. It was about eighteen inches long, made of leather and there was a split in it. It used to nip and left a mark on my legs or my bum which is where he hit me. He used to

HIA 272

PRIVATE

3

swing the strap so it went round in towards my testicles when I was spread eagled.

- 11. Sometimes if he wanted to make an example of me or the other boys he used to punish us in the gym on a Sunday morning in front of the rest of the boys. I remember that happened to me on three or four occasions. I remember two of the instances well as I was strapped for stealing some of the money I had been counting and once for breaking a window. He put a wooden chair out in the gym and bent me over the chair. He slipped my trousers down and I was in just my boxer shorts and got six whips with the strap in front of everyone. There were other Brothers there and a Housemaster but no one intervened. BR 5 was not the only Brother who used the strap but he was the one who used it BR 26 most. was another who used the strap but he never beat me. I BR 85 think also used a strap but I am not certain. BR 42 would use the strap if he saw a boy misbehaving and he was wicked.
- 12. There were a lot of young children in St Patrick's who lived a considerable distance from Belfast. There were no buses because the buses would have been hijacked and burnt so these children were not getting any visitors. Some of the Christian Brothers were befriending them and receiving sexual favours from them. The Brothers gave them food or perks which the boys from Belfast obtained from our own homes. Our visitors were bringing fruit or cigarettes but the country boys had no real visitors and the Brothers were preying on these young lads. The visits took place every Sunday if you were kept in and also on Wednesdays. My mother and older brother came to visit me regularly. We were allowed out at the weekends unless the Brothers stated that you had misbehaved and then you would be kept in.
- 13. I reflect on things now and see that the Brothers were grooming the children but at that time I would not have realised that was what it was called. I was told that a number of different Brothers were involved in this, namely BR 5 BR 26 BR 38 BR 85 and BR 86 It went on

the entire time I was at St Patrick's and I distinctly remember the Brothers

HIA 272

PRIVATE

4

**SPT-082** 

#### PRIVATE

walking around holding the hands of young boys and letting them have treats and cigarettes.

- 14. We slept in dormitories at first but after a while small houses were built and the boys from the country stayed there and all the boys from the city stayed in the dormitories. I think the houses had single bedrooms for the boys. The Brothers slept in the same building as the boys and in fact one Brother slept in a small room at the end of every dormitory. I was told by some boys that some Brothers used to come in during the night to keep them company in the rooms but it never **SPT 43** happened to me. I remember that a boy called was Brother BR 86 BR 86 pet and he told both me and other boys that had sex with him. I also remember one occasion where SPT 43 was hiding under Brother BR 42 BR 86<sub>cassock</sub>. I was also told by SPT 44 had taken him into the Brother's bedroom and abused him.
- 15. If any of the boys misbehaved sometimes the Brothers put you into a punishment cell and gave you bread and water. You got porridge in the morning but the rest of the day you got bread and water. The cell would have been about six feet by eight feet with a steel double door which locked. There was a bed and you got a mattress at night. The cell was absolutely freezing and there was a small window. You would have been there for up to three days but when you are a child that seems like a lifetime. I remember that I was sent to the punishment cell on two or three occasions.
- 16. On a normal day a Brother woke the boys in a dormitory about half past seven in the morning and then I washed, got dressed, made my bed and had breakfast before going to school. The school was on site and was massive. There were around thirty boys in each class and in my time there the boys moved from class to class for different subjects rather than staying in the same classroom. I do not remember ever having to do any homework in the evenings. A couple of Brothers taught as well as some outside lay teachers. The lay teachers came in for nine o'clock and left about half past three when school finished for the day. Sometimes I did not go to school but had to stay behind and clean and dust the

HIA 272

PRIVATE

5

told anybody prior to this date. I have only told people about my past in recent times since 1995 when I made my statement to the police.

- 31.1 never told anyone else during my time in care what was happening or reported the abuse because if word got back to the Brothers they battered you. Both BR 6 and BR 1 had big heavy leather straps with coins sewn into them. They hit me several times.
- 32. As a result of the abuse I ran away in 1969 when I was lifteen to live with my sister. The welfare authorities did locate me eventually but I was allowed to stay with my sister.
- 33. BR 6 made a statement against me when I was fifteen stating that I was a very violent person. I was violent because I used to take the fact that I was being abused out on other people. He accused me of being a professional lock picker at fifteen but that was a totally false accusation. I was only out of Rubane about six months when I got in to trouble for breaking into I got a Training School Order and was sent to St Patrick's Training School on the Glen Road, Belfast.

#### St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast (16/11/1970 - 24/11/1971)

34 I was placed in St Patrick's Training School on 16<sup>th</sup> November 1970. I kept running away and getting in to trouble and being readmitted to the school. I kept seeing Brothers at St Pat's who had abused me at Rubane House and I was afraid of these Brothers. I cannot recall the names of these non-Rubane Brothers. They did not work there but they used to come back and forth between the institutions and this made me run away. I was punished by being kept locked in a small room with a sloped wooden bed. They kept you there for two or three days. Another form of punishment was to make you wear shorts, two odd shoes and they would cut lumps out of your hair to try and stop you running away.

HIA 26

9

#### St Patrick's Training School Belfast

- 4. I was taken to St Patrick's straight from court on 30<sup>th</sup> January 1973. One of my older friends had been there previously and told me about pillow fights and other games and it sounded like a good place. I had very strict parents and it seemed like a good place to go compared to my home. It was going to be something different from the life I was used to. He did not tell me about some of the other things which went on at St Patrick's.
- 5. I absconded from St Patrick's at every opportunity I could. I was there for two years and ten months in total but I believe that during my time there I probably absconded between ten and fifteen times. I used to try to go back to and would have to hitch lifts. Sometimes even the police would have brought me home thinking I had no way home. There were gangs in St Patrick's and there was a lot of bullying. The Brothers knew what was going on and they watched from the sidelines. They only intervened if things got very serious. I never told my parents what was going on at St Patrick's but just told them that I did not want to go back. My parents held me until one of the Brothers came to collect me and drive me back. On other occasions when I ran away I would hang around in certain areas of Belfast because I knew that the Police were unlikely to come into those areas to look for me due to the political situation at the time. Then I would make my way home to I knew that if I stayed away from the city centre I had a better chance of not being located.
- 6. I am aware from news reports that there are allegations of child abuse but in my time at St Patrick's I was molested by some of the older boys but not by the Christian Brothers. A couple of the Brothers did beat me but I was used to that because I was beaten at home and at school because of my hyperactivity. Things did happen that as a young boy I didn't understand at the time. Some of the Brothers would rub themselves up against the boys. At the time we didn't know what this meant. The woodwork teacher used to push up behind us as we bent over the lathe and then laugh it off. He did this to me and I saw him do it to other boys although we didn't speak about it.

HIA 162

PRIVATE

## **SPT-120**

#### PRIVATE

trouble and they were always in employment. was working in Belfast at the time of the explosion and he sustained a severe brain injury. I saw the aftermath and I started to get into trouble soon afterwards.

4. One summer's evening in 1976 I was involved in a fight in Newcastle. I think I was around sixteen years of age and I fought with another man over a girl. I was charged with assault and I went to Court. I thought I would only receive a modest punishment because I was working as an apprentice bricklayer and was attending college in Newry preparing to take my City and Guilds examinations. I was playing football and sports and I had my whole life in front of me. Initially I was sent to St Patrick's Training School in Belfast for assessment prior to being sentenced by the Court. I believe the assessment was to last six weeks.

#### St Patrick's Training School Belfast

5. I had been in St Pat's for approximately a week when BR 89 asked me to come to an office. He was a

A When I was younger I looked A I did not need to and I had A I had no need to worry about anything hair and my face. He kept telling me that I had no need to worry about anything whilst I was in St Patrick's and that he would look after me. He took my hand and placed it on his crotch. I noticed that he had an erection and he forced me to masturbate him over his clothing. I was totally shocked because I had never experienced anything like that before.

6. This was the only abuse which I suffered during my assessment in St Patrick's. I also did not witness anybody else getting abused whilst I was there. There were no witnesses and I did not feel that I could tell anybody. Once the assessment was completed I returned to my college in Newry and was continuing with my apprenticeship. I then went to Court for the sentencing in the assault case and I was sentenced to Borstal for a period of two years and three months. I was stunned because I thought I would get a lesser sentence because of the time I

HIA 374

PRIVATE

**SPT-130** 

#### PRIVATE

suggested that we both go back to that room. I knew exactly what he meant and I refused and tried to avoid him as much as I could. I never reported it to anyone because I was afraid that no one would believe the word of a child over that of a staff member. I think he got fired because of it. The housemasters had to know what he was doing because all the kids in the place knew and were talking about it.

16. The only other person who abused me at St Patrick's was BR 4 He was fifty years old or so, six feet tall, well built with grey hair and going bald. He frequently felt my backside through my trousers and he did this no matter where you met him or whether people were there as well. I saw him do this on numerous occasions to other boys. I believe he must have been getting a sexual thrill from his behaviour. I told police about it at the same time as I made my statement about DL 137 He was not prosecuted and he died in

witness to an adjudication hearing and <u>SPT 122</u> was on the visiting panel. He recognised me immediately and smiled at me even though he denied to the police that he knew me. I assume he has a significant role within Social Services if he was a member of the visiting panel.

19. I turned to alcohol to block out what had happened to me both in Terrace Hill and St Patrick's. I am an alcoholic but I am trying to get help for my addiction. I was married in 1989 but it broke down ten years later due to my alcohol abuse. I have an amicable relationship with my ex wife and I see my four children. I have three girls and a boy. I did discuss some of the abuse with my former wife but my

HIA 227

PRIVATE

5

- 14. When I was moved to the single room another Brother came in to my room, lay down next to me and started masturbating. He asked me to masturbate him but I just lay there and didn't do anything and he ejaculated all over the side of my leg, got up and walked out. I cannot recall the name of this Brother but I recall he wore glasses and I think they were tinted. He had dark hair and he also had an unusual walk, not a limp but he would push his foot forward and throw his leg forward when walking. He had a distinctive walk like inspector Morse.
- 15.1 was given tasks to do in the kitchen and on one occasion I was asked to wash dishes and to help in the kitchen as it was coming up to teatlme. I went in to the storeroom to get vegetables and the cook at St Patrick's cornered me in the corner of the storeroom. He did not wear glasses but he was quite short and had a moustache and fair hair and he claimed to be in the IRA. He touched me and I pushed him away. I told him my family were IRA and if he touched me again I would tell them and he would get his head blown off. He told me they wouldn't and then he told me to be there at 9.00pm that night or he would come looking for me. I didn't go that night and he didn't come to look for me but the next day he asked me why I had not turned up and I told him I would tell on him but he said "who are you going to tell, it's your word against mine? You will get in trouble for that, I won't". I told him I would tell my family but he repeated "tell them, it's your word against mine".
- 16. We were sexually abused as frequently as every other night at St Patrick's. You had to perform oral and anal sex and masturbation on the Brothers.
- 17 HIA 219 and I frequently absconded from St Patrick's, we ran away every chance we got due to the abuse. We did not get a proper sex education and we would see Brothers playing with themselves under their smocks or watching us when we were having a bath but I knew it was wrong at the time. I cannot recall the identity of the Brothers who did this. We asked them to leave us alone and not to touch us and we reported these abuses but no action was taken. We kept running away and then we got another courl Order for absconding.

HIA 218

#### PRIVATE

#### St Patrick's Training School, Belfast (11/01/1978 - 08/08/1980)

- 18. I was placed in St Patrick's along with my brother HA 218 when we were fourteen years old. It was good to start with. They looked after you and you were treated properly. We were all in single rooms along a long landing. There were doors across from each other but just all single rooms. HIA 218 room was only a few doors away from my room. In the mornings when you were being woken up and the Brothers opened your door and gave you a call or a shake or something like that. We were woken at about 6am. Sometimes they turned a radio on really loud at the top of the landing to wake the boys up.
- 19. The first thing that happened to me was when I was lying in bed and I wasn't on my side I was up facing up. A Brother walked into the room and it was the way he woke me up he put his hands down on my genitals and shook me and walked out. This carried on for about a week and it was the same thing and it was the same Brother. This Brother was probably in his fifties with a southerm Irish accent. He wore gold rimmed glasses and he had dark hair which was going grey. He was about five foot six or seven. It stopped for a few days as the Brother changed and when he came on duty again it started again. Then the other stuff started. The Brother put his hands under the blankets and the sheets and he was touching my genitals. It lasted for a couple of minutes. It carried on where he was putting his hand down my underpants and actually touching me. As a young child I didn't know what was going on. I think we were given pyjamas but not many boys wore them because it was always so warm in the building. I didn't wear any pyjamas.
- 20. A couple of days later a different Brother who had buck teeth came on duty in the morning and he also started touching me under the sheets. This lasted for about a week and then he progressed from fondling to abusing me at night. When this Brother was doing his rounds at night around 9pm to tell us to put out lights out he started coming into my room. He masturbated me and then he lifted up his robe and tucked it into a rope around his waist. Then he started to masturbate himself at the same time as masturbating me. He ejaculated all over

HIA 219

PRIVATE

6

me and then left the room. None of the Brothers wore anything below their robes.

- 21. The Brother that first abused me that wore gold rimmed glasses also came round at night. He came into my room and started masturbating me and himself at the same time until he ejaculated. He wiped it off with a tissue then closed the door and left. This went on for a while then things progressed.
- 22. The second Brother started to put his head under the sheets and he performed oral sex on me. Then he made me perform masturbation. He tried to get me to perform oral sex. He had his penis in his hand and moved it towards my face and my mouth. I think he tried it about five or six times but I kept saying no and then he stopped. Then he got into my bed and buggered me. He made me face the wall and he started rubbing until he had an erection and then he had buggered me. He put something wet which I presume was a lubricant on me before he anally raped me. I think he was his splt he splt on his hands and then he wiped it on me. When he was satisfied, after he ejaculated into me, he grunted, he got out of bed and walked out the door. This lasted less than five minutes. When he left each time I just cried. Then I went to the toilet and cleaned myself up and got back into bed. I always slept facing the door with my back to the wall in case someone else came in.
- 23. Later on both Brothers were coming in and buggering me on different nights when they were on duty. It carried on for all the time I was in St Pat's. This was carrying on probably every other night.
- 24. All the boys had jobs to do such as sweeping floors or tidying up. I was asked to go and set the tables by the chef who was a civilian worker. I went into the storeroom to get milk and the chef came in and went to grab my private parts. I pushed him and I walked out and went to my room. He never approached me again.
- 25. One day I was called to the storeroom by the Brother with the buck teeth to be fitted for a pinstripe suit which is what we wore. He was measuring me for the

HIA 219

PHIVATE

7

#### PHIVATE

suit and he said to me 'right you need to strip off'. I didn't think there was anything inappropriate. I stood in my vest and underpants and he said that I had to take off my underpants as well because he had to measure from my groin to my ankles for the suit to fit properly. As he was measuring me he was touching my genitals. I then had to go in again for another measurement for jeans or something like that and he tried the same thing. He told me to strip of and he was trying to masturbate me. SPT 5 was his store boy. He was an older boy and he was there at the same that this was happening. He was sat at the back having a cup of tea. I said to the Brother 'hang on a minute I don't want you doing that' Then SPT 5 walked up us to try to grab hold of me but I kicked him. Then the Brother said get your clothes on and go out you're jeans will be sorted at dinner time. I ran out of the store and straight into the kitchen. I opened the drawer and grabbed the first thing that came into my hand which was a fork. I then ran straight down to SPT 5 and stabbed him in the stomach with the fork. My punishment was that I was not allowed to go home at weekends. The police were not involved. The Brother was the tailor in St Pat's SPT 5 was his store boy. The Brother didn't come near me again. and HIA 218 and I were locked in a room for a few hours after this incident as SPT 5 punishment. was taken to hospital.

26. One time we had to go on a camping trip. I think it was to Wexford. Civilian workers came into St Pat's to help out. They were called Housemasters. There was one man who had

He went camping with us in a big tent. All the boys were in rows and was beside mine. The civilian worker was on the other side of me. On our first night I woke up and the civilian worker was rubbing himself up against my back. He was under my blankets naked and he had an erection. He had his arms around me. When I realised what he was doing I got straight out of my blankets and jumped into beside what he was doing I got than touching because I moved but It was inappropriate and he shouldn't have done it. He knew what he was doing. This man lived in a dormitory and would

HIA 219

PHIVATE

8

		Page 149
1		statement, but after a couple of hours you went and told
2		SPT13.
3	A.	Yes. I believe it was a period of time, a couple of
4		hours later. I believe I had a period of time where
5		I sort of thought what I was going to do
6	Q.	Yes.
7	A.	and I decided I was going to report the incident to
8		SPT13 and that's what I did do.
9	Q.	And he was the head of Aisling House?
10	A.	He was the person in charge of Aisling House at the
11		time.
12	Q.	Yes.
13	A.	That's right.
14	Q.	In fairness he was a name, when you said it to me, not
15		unfamiliar, because I can see him attending lots of
16		these case conferences and writing reports and so on at
17		the time when you are in the Aisling House phase, and
18		I asked you then what what did he do about it, and
19		you said you could not remember the precise words, but
20		he didn't really believe what you were telling him.
21	A.	He didn't believe it, didn't want to believe it, chose
22		to ignore it and just wanted to sweep it under the
23		carpet basically.
24	Q.	And I then was drawing your attention, HIA96 I am not
25		going through the detail of this we talked about the

		Page 152
1		not going to be and they don't and didn't report their
2		failures and what the
3	Q.	No, I am not sure the Panel would expect to find
4		a record
5	A.	Exactly.
б	Q.	by the perpetrator recording this.
7	Α.	Exactly.
8	Q.	What you are saying is it wasn't just you, although it
9		only happened to you once.
10	A.	Yes.
11	Q.	There were others who were involved in it, and the if
12		we go back to your statement, please, if we can go back
13		to paragraph 14 at 221, please, you explain in
14		paragraph 14, HIA96, about a female member of staff that
15		you found without her clothes on in the bed of
16	A.	And I believe she was under the under the duvet.
17	Q.	She was under the duvet?
18	A.	Under the duvet.
19	Q.	Had she her clothes on?
20	Α.	Well, she was underneath the duvet, you know.
21	Q.	With you said she was partially dressed and in this
22		other boy's bed. Now he has not
23	A.	That's correct.
24	Q.	to my knowledge either come forward to the Inquiry or
25		spoken to the police about this, but and the point

		Page 144
1	Q.	And in order for this abuse to happen with the
2		regularity you are describing you would have to have
3		seen him much more often about the school?
4	A.	Yes.
5	Q.	Is that your recollection, that he was someone who was
6		around a lot?
7	Α.	Oh, he definitely was. He didn't he obviously didn't
8		spend all the time , where he worked
9		, as you say. He was definitely in the
10		building a lot, a lot.
11	Q.	And is there anything else you want to say about BR1 or
12		have I covered the main parts of it? I have covered the
13		main elements, HIA100, have I?
14	Α.	Yes.
15	Q.	Okay. If we turn then to we can check again at the
16		end, as I said to you. We will confirm if there's
17		anything else that you want to raise, but BR47, you
18		mention him in paragraph 12 of your statement, if we
19		look at 049, please. Paragraph 12, please. So you
20		describe BR47 taking you into his room and again trying
21		to penetrate you but couldn't, but then on a later
22		occasion he did anally rape you?
23	A.	Yes.
24	Q.	And then at other times oral sex and masturbation?
25	Α.	That's right.

## **SPT-049**

#### PRIVATE

two tables for speaking to each other. He lined us up and slapped all of us on the face. I was thirteen at the time but very small and he tried to get me to cry when he hit me. He hit another boy called SPT 38 and he had had enough so he stabbed SPT 1 with a fork and some of them ran away. SPT 38 is deceased now.

- 9. I used to be upset by the fact that we were referred to by people outside the home as "bad boys". I was in there but I didn't do anything wrong but you were always told you're in the home for bad boys. I knew I wasn't bad but I was there anyway and so some of the kids who played out on the streets nearby weren't allowed to come out and play with me, they weren't allowed near me because I was in the home for bad boys.
- 10 BR 1 was always touching you up and pulling you in towards him. He made me put my hand inside his long robe and masturbate him. This started soon after I arrived at St Patrick's and it happened on at least a monthly basis. It often took place in the store outside the dormitory or near the swimming pool area or at the Brother's house as he would take you there on occasion.
- 11. There was a small swimming pool. When you would come out of the swimming pool or come off the football pitch and get undressed Brother BR 1 would smack you on the bum and leave his hand there telling you to hurry up or wait until you were completely naked and make sure you got properly dried and look at you. I was not the only one he did this to and he did it in a very matter of fact way. BR 1 was bald, just under six foot I would estimate I think he would have been in

his late forties when I was in the home.

12.1 was abused by BR 47 He took me in to his room and tried to penetrate me but couldn't so he just then put it between my legs. After this he did have penetrative sex with me. On other occasions he would have made me perform oral sex or masturbate him. These incidents happened

#### PRIVATE

- 4. My parents visited me every Wednesday night and I was allowed to visit them on a Sunday. However if I misbehaved during the week the Brothers would not allow me to leave the site. I also received pocket money of half a crown every Sunday. I also remember that I was allowed home for four days or so at Christmas and Easter. I do not remember anyone from Welfare or Social Services ever inspecting St Patrick's in the time that I was there. I was just thrown into that environment and left on my own. I did not have anyone there to check on how I was. The only thing I learned in St Patrick's was more criminality. It was a bit like Oliver Twist.
- 5. The regime at St Patrick's was brutal because a number of the Brothers were very violent. I was terrified of them. On many occasions, I received a beating with a leather strap and was punched and kicked. It went far beyond any chastisement for misbehaving.
  BR 4 slapped me frequently and he used a strap most of the time. I remember one occasion that I was standing in the corridor and he was carrying a bunch of keys in his hand. For no reason at all, he hit me on the side of the head with the keys. I could not hear properly for about a week but I did not receive any medical attention. I was too afraid to ask for help.
  BR 42 was violent towards me and the other boys as well. It was a very violent regime and there was punishment even if you had not done anything wrong.
- 6. Once my mother asked the Brothers if I could return late from home one Sunday evening because my brother was playing in a concert in a local church hall. It was agreed that I could return after the concert which I did. BR 91 removed my mattress and my bedding and I was forced to sleep on the springs. I was told that that it was because I has abused my home leave privilege even though my mother had agreed it in advance. This was the type of punishment for no reason which some Brothers really enjoyed.
- 7. There was also sexual abuse at St Patrick's and I was abused by a number of the Brothers during my time there. The main Brother who abused me was BR 1 He was a sharp featured man who mostly worked in the office during the day. Eventually he left to be in charge of Rubane House in Kircubbin.

HIA 229

PRIVATE

#### PRIVATE

He targeted me and abused me over a period of around nine months. He always had young boys around him.

- 8. There was a television room at St Patrick's which the boys could use in the evening. There were a number of seats in the room and the seats were from an old cinema. BR 1 would sit in the back row of seats and ask me to sit beside him. He used to give me sweets and then he fondled me. This happened on a few occasions. I did not know what to do because I was still a young boy and had no sexual experience. The Brothers were in charge and I was afraid to speak up about it. I saw other boys being treated in the same way.
- 9. Every Saturday afternoon, The Brothers organised a trip to the Broadway Cinema and around sixty boys went to see a film. BR 1 always asked me to sit beside him and on a number of occasions he abused me in the cinema. As I got older, I would try to sit further away from him or pretend to have to go to the toilet. I also remember that some of the other Brothers had boys sitting beside them as well. At the time I did not realise it was wrong because I was young and impressionable although now I can see how wrong it was. At the time I was just having a hard time and felt very lonely.
- 10. At the end of the dormitory there was an area called the pigeon holes which was where the boys hung up their suits. If you were in that are you could not be seen from the dormitory. I was buggered by BR1 at the pigeon holes on three separate occasions. He also forced me to perform oral sex on him and masturbate him. I also remember a specific incident when I was sexually assaulted in the store where all the clothes were kept. I remember it clearly because it was unusual for BR1 to be at the store as BR86 was normally in charge of it. I also remember that I was sick one day and stayed in the dormitory. BR1 came to see me on the pretence that he was checking how I was feeling. It was in the evening time and no one else was there. He forced me to perform oral sex on him.
- 11. If anyone absconded from St Patrick's, **BR 1** and some of the other Brothers would go to look for them. The Brothers would know which area the boy

HIA 229

PRIVATE

#### PRIVATE

He targeted me and abused me over a period of around nine months. He always had young boys around him.

- 8. There was a television room at St Patrick's which the boys could use in the evening. There were a number of seats in the room and the seats were from an old cinema. BR 1 would sit in the back row of seats and ask me to sit beside him. He used to give me sweets and then he fondled me. This happened on a few occasions. I did not know what to do because I was still a young boy and had no sexual experience. The Brothers were in charge and I was afraid to speak up about it. I saw other boys being treated in the same way.
- 9. Every Saturday afternoon, The Brothers organised a trip to the Broadway Cinema and around sixty boys went to see a film. BR 1 always asked me to sit beside him and on a number of occasions he abused me in the cinema. As I got older, I would try to sit further away from him or pretend to have to go to the toilet. I also remember that some of the other Brothers had boys sitting beside them as well. At the time I did not realise it was wrong because I was young and impressionable although now I can see how wrong it was. At the time I was just having a hard time and felt very lonely.
- 10. At the end of the dormitory there was an area called the pigeon holes which was where the boys hung up their suits. If you were in that are you could not be seen from the dormitory. I was buggered by BR1 at the pigeon holes on three separate occasions. He also forced me to perform oral sex on him and masturbate him. I also remember a specific incident when I was sexually assaulted in the store where all the clothes were kept. I remember it clearly because it was unusual for BR1 to be at the store as BR86 was normally in charge of it. I also remember that I was sick one day and stayed in the dormitory. BR1 came to see me on the pretence that he was checking how I was feeling. It was in the evening time and no one else was there. He forced me to perform oral sex on him.
- 11. If anyone absconded from St Patrick's, **BR 1** and some of the other Brothers would go to look for them. The Brothers would know which area the boy

HIA 229

PRIVATE

was from and would drive there to see if he could be located. Sometimes another boy from the same area would be brought along to help. I was from the and was sometimes taken there to show the Brothers which streets the boy may be in. I remember two specific occasions when this happened and BR1 travelled in the back of the car with me. He made me masturbate him as we were travelling around the streets. Brother BR 46 was driving but I do not believe he was aware of what was going on in the back of the car. He was the principal of the school at the time I was there.

- 12. The Brothers owned a summer house called Kilmore House in Glenariffe and every summer the boys went there for a holiday. The boys went there in batches for two weeks in the summer. **BR 1** and **BR 46** took a group of boys there including me just before the summer to tidy it up in advance. I think there were four or five boys who went to tidy up the house and gardens. We stayed there for a week or so. I was sexually assaulted twice at Kilmore House and I believe other boys were also abused. I was buggered by **BR 1** and I was also forced to perform oral sex on **BR 77** He was a Brother who came up from Dublin to visit and he also made me have oral sex on him once at St Patrick's. I cannot describe him because it happened so long ago.
- 13. I believe that I was targeted by the Brothers at Kilmore House. I do not believe that it was a coincidence that I was one of the boys selected to go there to tidy up. I was abused at St Patrick's before I went to Glenariffe and I am adamant that was why I was chosen to go there as well.
- 14. I never dreamt of telling my parents what was happening to me. They came from a generation of people who accepted what they were told by members of the Church. They would have thought that I was telling lies about the Brothers and in all likelihood would have given me a clip around the ear. I do not think that it would have been an unusual response at that time given the regard my parents had for the Church. I appreciate that thankfully times have now changed.
- 15. I remember that I did speak to one person about the abuse when I was at St Patrick's. Around eighteen months after I was sent there I joined the band. The

HIA 229

PRIVATE

		Page 87
1		number of staff who worked in St. Patrick's who haven't
2		featured in any of this in terms of facing allegations,
3		because there actually was a very large staff over the
4		years that worked there?
5	A.	I would say a very decent and hardworking staff, who
6		were very child-centred.
7	Q.	I am going to ask you about a particular matter now that
8		you address in your witness statement, because it brings
9		into sharp focus for the Panel a particular issue that
10		arises in some of the material. It is in paragraph 16
11		of your statement at 1682. You if I just can put
12		this in context, BR26 was someone you worked with from
13		1978 effectively until he left St. Patrick's
14		in 1996.
15	Α.	Yes.
16	Q.	So someone you spent eighteen years working with. I was
17		asking you earlier could you give the Panel your
18		assessment of your dealing with him as a colleague
19		across almost two decades?
20	A.	Well, I always found BR26 to be a very decent, caring,
21		considerate person. I had never seen anything
22		inappropriate in his behaviour in relation to staff or
23		with young people.
24	Q.	I was talking with SPT53 earlier. One of the matters
25		that features in the statement we are about to look at

SPT-2191

[HIA REF - BR 26]

while continuing in my role as

#### THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF BR. BR 26 - BR 26

- I was born on and I am now years old. I joined the De La Salle Order on 7 July 1946. On 1 September 1951 I was sent by my Provincial to the Industrial School in Belfast which at that time was based in Milltown. My role was that of a Prefect which was the name then used for what was in effect a Housemaster. I had no ambition to be a teacher. The school transferred to a site on the Glen Road, Belfast in 1957. It was then officially known as St. Patrick's Junior and Senior Training School.
- In Milltown the boys were all educated together and I supervised them outside of school hours. In 1957 when the new school on the Glen Road opened it was divided into a junior section and a senior section. boys aged for and upwards,

By then the term Housemaster was coming in and this was the description of my role. In the mid-1960s I was sent to for a training course in the residential care of children. This course lasted one year and I got a certificate. I then returned to St. Patrick's to resume my role as Housemaster. In the early 1970s

I was Housemaster in the senior section.

I reverted to the single role of House Master.

3. I am aware a total of sixteen persons have made allegations against me. Details are included in the HIA papers which have been provided to me. Of those sixteen individuals, seven have made statements to this Inquiry and nine others gave interviews and/or statements to the police. I propose to comment on all of these allegations starting with those who made statements to this Inquiry.

## COMPLAINT No. 1 - HIA 17 - HIA 17

- 4. HIA 17 made a statement to the Inquiry on 12 February 2015 and one year earlier, on 26 February 2014, he made a statement to the police. On 14 May 2014 I attended an interview with the police to respond to HIA 17 allegations against me.
- 5. I have no clear recollection of HIA 17 He was born in and was very very old when he came to St. Patrick's. He would have been in the Junior School. There was no reason for me to have any contact with him. It was not my role or responsibility to issue shoes and clothes for the boys in the junior school and I deny his allegation that he saw me abusing SPT 157 in the stores. I also had no responsibility for treating the boys for head lice.

As I had nothing to do with the I can only assume this role would have been carried out by a nurse or perhaps another Brother. I deny I picked on this individual or regularly struck him for no particular reason. He has also described an incident in which he alleges he observed me fondling one of the female cooks in the kitchen. Again this is pure fantasy. It did not happen. In his statement he has alleged I exposed myself to him in the shoe store after he came up to ask me for some new shoes. As stated above, this is not possible. He would not have asked me to provide him with new shoes and he would have gone to one of the Brothers in the junior section of the school if these were needed. His description of incidents puts me in places or situations where alleged abuse took place which HIA 17 alleges that could not be true. Finally **BR 83** struck me as a reporting the alleged abuse to him. I am clear no Brother ever had <u>HIA 17</u> result of reason to speak to me about a complaint from a resident and his description of the incident BR 83 allegedly knocked me to the ground is completely untrue. in which BR 83 was not even a teacher as he claimed. My recollection is that Furthermore he was In his **BR 83** police account he said walked with him across the balcony to the classroom where I taught before he attacked me but I was not a teacher in the school at all and so yet again this account could not be true.

## COMPLAINT No. 2 - HIA 26 - HIA 26

- 6. HIA 26 made a statement to the Inquiry on 28 February 2014 and had been interviewed by the police about his allegations on 5 May 2012. The police interviewed me about his allegations on 6 March 2013.
- 7. HIA 26 states he was placed in St. Patrick's Training School on 16 November 1970 and was there for one year. I remember him. He was unsettled and regularly absconded from the school. Sometimes the police picked him up and brought him back and sometimes staff at St. Patrick's were able to find him. He had to be brought back to the Courts as we were unable to control him and this is probably why I remember him. Eventually he was transferred to the Borstal at Millisle. I also accept HIA 26 may have been placed in the isolation room on occasion. This was regulated and he would not have been kept there for 2 or 3 days at a time as he alleged. I also completely deny his allegation that I attempted to fondle and kiss him when he was in the isolation room. I have no clear recollection of him cutting his wrists and attempting self-harm, but if he did, I would have sought medical assistance from the nurse in the surgery department.

## COMPLAINT No. 3 - HIA 51 - HIA 51

- 8. HIA 51 made a statement to the Inquiry on 19 February 2015 and he made a statement to the police on 20 June 1996 in which he made allegations against me. I was interviewed by the police in respect of those allegations on 5 September 1996. I note HIA 51 was born and that he was admitted to St. Patrick's in July 1982 where he stayed for a period of approximately five weeks. As he would have had his birthday when he was there, it is quite likely he was placed in the senior school. I have no particular recollection of this individual although over the years a number of boys called were placed in St. Patrick's. Nothing in particular stands out about this individual although it is quite possible I would have supervised him during the time he was placed there.
- 9. I agree I may have called into his room to give him comics to read at night. I regularly distributed comics to the boys at night time to settle them down. I probably would have done this on average twice a week. However this would have been the only reason for me visiting a boy in his room and I categorically deny that I abused him on those occasions as he alleged. I also do not have any recollection of being prevented from entering this boy's bedroom at night as he has alleged in his Inquiry statement.

## SPT-2193

#### COMPLAINT No. 4 – HIA 54 – HIA 54

10. HIA 54 made a statement to the Inquiry on 17 January 2014. He states that when he was admitted to St. Patrick's in 1978 he was placed in the junior wing and this is probably correct as he would have been years old. I would have had little if any contact with HIA 54 at that time because I was a Housemaster in the section of the school. He alleges I brought him to the house where the Brothers lived and that while two other Brothers, whom he does not name, held him down, I raped him. This is a complete fabrication. I have never been interviewed by the police about his allegations.

## COMPLAINT No. 5- HIA 58 - HIA 58

11. HIA 58 made a statement to the Inquiry on 6 February 2015 in which he states he was and was admitted to St. Patrick's in 1964 when he would have been born years old. He stated he remained in the school until 1968. The first thing I would like to say is that he would have been admitted to the section of the school and so I would have had no particular dealings with him. I also am not aware if he ever made a complaint to the police. I have not been interviewed by the police in respect of his allegations. He has alleged he got a lot of beatings from the De La Salle Brothers and he has named me as one of the Brothers involved. He also alleges that after he ran away and was found, four of the Brothers, including myself, punished him by throwing him into the deep end of the swimming pool at the school. Apart from the fact I had no reason to supervise this particular individual, I deny I would have beat him as alleged. I do not recollect using corporal punishment on the boys that I supervised and any serious incidents of misbehaviour would have been referred to the Director or school principal. I am also adamant that I never was involved in throwing HIA 58 or any boy into the deep end of the swimming pool at the school. This simply did not happen. He has also described an incident where he ran away after being taken to the cinema at Broadway. I have no recollection of this person running away from the cinema and having to be picked up. He also said on one occasion I attacked him with a big bunch of keys and also hit his legs with a stick. I would have had a master key rather than a bunch of keys. I also never used a stick to beat any boys.

## COMPLAINT No. 6 - HIA 253 - HIA 253

- 12. HIA 253 made a statement to the Inquiry on 10 April 2015. I am not aware he made any statement to the police and I have not been interviewed by the police in respect of the allegations he has made in his statement to the Inquiry. His date of birth is given as and he has stated he was admitted to St. Patrick's Training School in August 1983 when he was nearly years old and that he remained in the school for a period of less than five months. While I cannot be sure it is possible he was in the senior school.
- 13. He has alleged that I abused him. He described it by alleging I put my arm around him and touched him. He claims this happened when we were cleaning up the gym and the handball courts. He alleged this happened on other occasions and that I asked him to touch him as well. He also claims I took him to my room and tried to persuade him to touch my penis and masturbate him. He claims that he refused to do so. He was uncertain of my name and said it was either who abused him.
- 14. None of this happened. At the time HIA 253 was in St. Patrick's I believe I would have been and also worked as a force Housemaster in the school. I don't think it would have been my responsibility to clean out the gym or handball courts. I have no particular recollection of this individual but I deny I abused him or any boy.

## SPT-2194

COMPLAINT No. 7 -

HIA 384 - HIA 384

- 15. HIA 384 made a statement to the Inquiry on 21 April 2015. I am unaware if he ever made a statement to the police and I have not been interviewed by the police about his allegations. The first thing I would say is I have no particular recollection of him although I do recall the name SPT 54 whom he has mentioned in his statement.
- 16. In his statement he states he was in St. Patrick's Training School on two occasions. The first was for a period of three months in 1993 and then for eight months in 1994. During the time he was in the school I was

I would not have had regular dealings with the boys at that time. In his statement he alleges I was encouraging and in fact paying SPT 54 to sexually assault him and that SPT 54 was my "golden boy". He says he actually saw me give SPT 54 money after he had abused him. These allegations are totally ridiculous and I deny them completely. I do recall SPT 54 and that he came from a dysfunctional background and was a difficult child. It is possible I attended meetings about both of them and it is likely the police would have investigated the complaints made by HIA 384 against other boys.

17. The other individuals who have made complaints against me have not contacted the Inquiry or made statements but their allegations are contained in police material which has been made available to me. The police interviewed me in respect of allegations made by some of these persons, but not all of them.

## COMPLAINT No. 8 - SPT 136

- 18. He made a statement to the police on 21 September 1993 and I was interviewed by the police about his allegations on 15 April 1994. He alleges that he was in the school for about 3½ months when I started to sexually abuse him. He claims these incidents occurred in his own bedroom on a Monday night when I was doing the comic round. He claims I talked to him and then started to touch him and this went on for about three to four months and escalated to involve oral sex.
- 19. During my police interview I pointed out his description of me was not particularly accurate but I agreed his description of me going regularly to a sunday morning and of distributing comics to the boys as reading material was accurate. The police also stated during the interview **SPT 136** had informed him that he reported the abuse to his Social Worker whom he named as well as his own father but that when both individuals were contacted by the police they denied any knowledge of any such complaint. I totally deny his complaints about me and this remains my position today. I also understand that a number of other boys interviewed around that time as a result of the **SPT 134** Inquiry also made reference to the "comic round" and about rumours pertaining thereto. I maintain any contact with the boys during the delivery of comics was innocent. I, along with a number of other Brothers and lay Housemasters would have routinely distributed comics and reading material around the dorms.

## COMPLAINT No. 9 - SPT 96

20. On the 26 October 1993 SPT 96 made a statement to the police in which he stated he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School about 1964 when he was about years old. The police interviewed me about his allegations at Grosvenor Road RUC Station on 15 April 1994. The police commenced the interview by informing me that the police had commenced their investigation following allegations made by SPT 134 who had been resident in St. Patrick's during the early 1980s and that during the investigation newspaper articles had been written concerning the investigation. The police stated as a result of those newspaper articles, SPT 96 had come forward and made his statement of complaint. I informed the police I recalled SPT 96 and that he had initially been placed

in the junior school and so I would not have had any particular dealings with him. However he also recalled that SPT 96 was very troublesome and absconded and so he was then transferred to the senior side of the school and during this period of time I would have been one of the members of staff who would have worked with him. When the police put the allegations to me I denied them completely. I maintain I did not sexually abuse him in any way and his allegations are totally fabricated. It is quite possible SPT 96 was placed in the isolation room because he was difficult to control but this would have been authorised by the school principal. When interviewed by the police I also denied the allegation that SPT 96 had told SPT 142 the second by the school principal when interviewed by the school had told SPT 142 the informed me they had approached SPT 142 about this and took a statement from him in which he apparently denied he had taken SPT 96 to the office in relation to any complaint that he had made to him. The fact is the allegations I sexually abused SPT 96 are utterly false and unsubstantiated.

## COMPLAINT No. 10 - SPT 145

21. SPT 145 was interviewed by the police in the senior on 20 January 1994 in which he stated he was in St. Patrick's Training School, in the senior wing, around 1962. When asked he said he remembered me and said I was well liked and that I was hard but fair. He also said that when he first went to the school I punched him hard in the stomach just to let him know who was boss. I don't recall SPT 145 At no time ever did I punch a child.

## COMPLAINT No. 11 - SPT 154

22. **SPT 154** made a statement to the police on 18 May 1995 and on 5 September 1996 I was interviewed about the allegations he made against me. He alleged that when he was in St. Patrick's I took him out in my car around the town and that I squeezed his shoulder and rubbed his thigh. I informed the police that I did not really recall this individual although his name was familiar. It is possible that I occasionally would have had a boy in the car when I was carrying out messages but I definitely would not have touched him or any other boy inappropriately as he has alleged.

## COMPLAINT No. 12 - SPT 119

SPT 119 23. was interviewed by the police on 4 August 2010 and on 6 March 2013 I was interviewed by the police in respect of his allegations. The police informed me that SPT 119 was at St. Patrick's during the late 1980's and I explained that I had no specific recollection of him although there were a number of in the school over the years. According to the police SPT 119 was born in and so during the late 1980's he would have been between years old when he was at the school which meant he would have been in the section. I pointed out to the police that I was then a Housemaster of the school and so had very little if any contact with the boys in the school. The allegation is that SPT 119 was left alone when

the rest of the boys in his dormitory went to the Glens of Antrim for their summer holiday. This would not have happened. No boy would have been left alone in this way. I totally deny his allegations against me. I did not rape him or hold him down while another Brother raped him as alleged. He also claimed when the sexual assaults took place the three Brothers, including myself, had been drinking and that we were drunk. However as I pointed out to the police I have been a teetotaller all my life. There were a limited number of staff in the school and when the boys went on their holiday the care staff who looked after them would have gone too. It would have been a total waste of resources to keep staff back to look after one individual in a dormitory. I also would have had no reason myself to visit the dormitories of the junior boys' school.

SPT-2196

## COMPLAINT No. 13 - HIA 137

24. I was interviewed by the police on 26 June 2013 in relation to allegations made against me HIA 137 . The police informed me that a statement was taken from him on by a 28 May 2013 although I have not seen a copy of it. He alleged that he went to St. Patrick's in March 1971 and I informed the police I vaguely remembered him. He said he remembered on one occasion I made him go down to take a cold shower but I do not accept I forced any boy to stand in a cold shower for 15 to 20 minutes in freezing water as he alleged. I also denied that when he was drying himself after taking a shower I was striking him with a leather strap. According to HIA 137 I had the nickname of . I had never heard that. I was aware that some of the boys would call me and this is because I used to have a couple of little . I also or informed the police I had no recollection of HIA 137 running away as he claimed. However if he did then the usual general punishment was a curtailment of HIA 137 privileges. The police also told me of an incident in which claimed he broke the door to the tuck shop and that all the boys then went in and stole cigarettes and sweets etc. I informed the police I had no recollection of this. He claimed that afterwards I took out my strap and hit him all over the body. I totally deny this. I also deny his allegation that one time after he had run away and the police brought him back I brought him to a room which he claimed was known as the restraining room and beat him with a belt to the extent he thought he was going to pass out. Nothing like this ever happened. I did not carry any sort of leather strap and in fact I have no specific recollection of carrying out corporal punishment myself. It was always my practice to refer a boy who was particularly unruly to the Director or Principal of the school who would administer corporal punishment. On reflection I think it is possible I may have administered corporal punishment by slapping a boy but only on the orders of the school Principal or Director and under his supervision. No cane was ever used.

#### COMPLAINT No. 14 - HIA 374

25. HIA 374 made a statement to the police on 18 February 2014 and approximately three months later, on 14 May 2014, I was interviewed by the police about this. In his statement he states that he believed it was in 1976 he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School and that on arrival he was brought into the office to meet one of the Brothers. He informed the police he could not remember the Brother's name but thought he was the Housemaster. He described him as a Housemaster in the section of the school and I accepted it would have been my responsibility to meet a boy on his arrival in the Housemaster's office. I have no recollection of HIA 374 . I am not sure his description of me is accurate as my for a certainly say I never got him to touch my penis on the outside of my clothes as he alleged.

## COMPLAINT No. 15 – SPT 130

26. **SPT 130** made a statement to the police on 4 June 2015 in which he claims that he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School around October 1981 when he was aged. He alleged that I, **BR 94** and **BR 8** came into his room together and sexually abused him under the pretence of delivering comics. This is one of a number of allegations made by boys in which they refer to incidents taking place when I was handing out comics to them in their rooms. While I did deliver comics I did not sexually abuse **SPT 130** or any other boy. I also deny I would have gone into any boy's bedroom accompanied by two other Brothers as alleged. There was a night supervisor on duty and it would have been very strange indeed for three Brothers to be observed going into any boy's bedroom. He alleged he was abused in this way on numerous occasions – at least three or four time a week during the month he was resident at St. Patrick's. This is simply untrue. His allegations are without foundation.

CD	14 C61-220-93	SP1-21123
	INUATION - INTERVIEW NOTES - SUSPECT:	SPT 145 PAGE NO: 5
LUNI	INDATION - INTERVIEW NOTES - SUSFECT.	
	saw him.	
<b>a</b> .	Have you ever been sexually abused	
	or even approached by any of the	
	Brothers or inmates.	
Α.	No.	
α.	Are you married.	
Α.	I am legally separated for around	
	20 yrs.	
α.	Are you living with anyone now.	
Α.	yes I am living with a girl called	
	for the past 4 yrs.	
	Her name is a coincidence. She	
	was previously married to a boy called	
<b>a</b> .	Do you know Brother BR 26	
Α.	Yes. I remember when I first went	
	to the school he punched me hard	
	in the stomach just to let me know	
	who was boss and he wasn't taking	
	any nonsence. He was well liked.	
	He was hard but fair.	
<b>D</b> .	Can we Return to SPT 96 allegations	
	or story. Can you Recall this incident	
	now that you have had time to think.	
Α.	Yes I can Recall	
SIGNA		amia
	A A A A A A A A A A A A A A A A A A A	
	λ. λ. λ.	<ul> <li>yes I am living with a girl called</li> <li>for the past 4 yrs.</li> <li>Her name is a coincidence. She was previously married to a boy called</li> <li>Do you know Brother BR 26</li> <li>Yes. I remember when I first went to the school he punched me hard in the stomach just to let me know who was boss and he wasn't taking any nonsence. He was well liked. He was hard but fair.</li> <li>Can we Return to SPT 96 allegations or story. Can you Recall this incident now that you have had time to think.</li> </ul>



552 of 572

OCD 128(1)

RM13078878

#### RESTRICTED (when complete)

Continuation of Statement of: HIA 17

Page 5 of 6

and asked me why I was so sad, that he had not seen me smile for a long time. I burst into tears. He brought me out of class onto the balcony and asked me again. He was kind and I trusted him. Through my tears and sobbing, I told him what was going on. He walked me across the balcony to the classroom where BR 26 taught . He called BR 26 out to the balcony and they argued. I heard him tell BR 26 he knew what I was saying was true as he had been worried about me recently and knew something had happened me. Br

BR 83 was over 6'0 and well built. He punched BR 26 to the ground. He stood over him and told him that if he ever touched me again, he would have to answer to him. After this, my time in St Pat's was much easier. I excelled in music and was 1st clarinet in the military band. I left St Pat's just after I turned 15. When I was 17, I heard that if you went to St Pat's and spoke to the principal, you could get some money. I was not working at the time and thought I would try it. I got the bus there and as I walked into the grounds I thought of all the bad things that happened me there. BR 5 was the . He invited me in and we made small talk. I told him I was out of work and was planning to join the army. I wanted to tell him about Br BR 26, but was scared. I am sure he knew anyway. He gave me £30 and I left. I did go for an interview and medical for the army, but never went to swear in. I gave up the clarinet, which I regret. My time in the home left me emotionally and mentally drained for years. When my family was young, I was very hard on them and disciplined them harshly. This was due to the physical abuse I suffered in the home. It is only in the last 10 years that my life has settled. I did tell my kids about my time in the home, but never about the sexual abuse. A few years ago, I was with my daughter and granddaughter at Killead House, where we used to go on holiday from St Pat's. There I met BR 42, who was very old by then. We chatted about my time at St Pat's. He asked if I'd had any problems while I was there. I lied that it had been fine, and asked after

Signature of witness:	HIA 17
Signature witnessed by:	
(Appropriate Adult)	
38/36 (2007)	

Certified a true copy of an original signed document

SPT-25466

**SPT-057** 

#### PRIVATE

4. I was taken away and found out later that he was one of the De La Salle boxers, a sort of blue eyed boy. As a result of that incident I got a lot of beatings from the De La Salle Brothers, mainly BR 1 Brother BR 5 BR 26 and another Brother who was extremely tall and skinny but I cannot recall his name. I was put in a room for a long time because of what happened to him. The room was on the landing above the dormitories and it was known as the sick bay. I referred to it as my cell as it had no natural light coming in to the room.

5. On a Sunday we would be given pocket money by the brothers if we were good. You got two and six pennies if you were good but every week I got nothing. I don't think they ever forgave me for the incident with <u>SPT 36</u> <u>SPT 36</u> even though I never touched him. I wanted to apologise to him but I never saw him again after that incident. I have no idea what happened to him.

- 6. You got six slaps on the hand with a big leather strap as a punishment. I used to get three in my right hand but for some reason I couldn't cope with it on my left hand so I struggled and that made the brothers punish me even more. I was beaten in my cell a lot.
- 7. When holiday time came, they let all the city and country boys out home. I was from and considered a country boy but I was never let out because I always seemed to be in the bad books with the brothers and was treated like the black sheep.
- 8. I tried to run away and I was found on the motorway and that made matters worse. I was found by BR 26 the tall skinny brother and two others whose names I cannot recall at present. They punished me by taking me to the swimming pool when they knew I had a fear of water. They brought me there, two took my arms and two took my legs and they threw me into the six foot end. I felt as if they were trying to drown me. I never learned to swim, I still can't swim. I am still very scared of the water because of what they did to me. I think they did this because this was the form of punishment that scared me most.

PRIVATE

**SPT-058** 

#### PRIVATE

- 9. Sometimes they would take you to the pool to punish you at the weekend when the Belfast boys were not there. It happened mainly at holiday time because I was the one that never seemed to get out. I do not know the reason for this. All boys were allowed out whether they were admitted on the care side or the justice side.
- 10. The first time they took me down to Broadway picture house I waited until the screen went dark and then ran away towards the Falls Road. I didn't know where I was going and I had no money. Two brothers, BR 26 and the tall skinny brother, came and picked me up. I got a big punishment for trying to escape a second time. The punishment was so bad that I only tried to escape twice. They took me to the swimming pool. Going down under the water all the time there is no sound and coming up your mouth is full of water and that was torture for me.
- 11.1 remained in the cell for most of my stay at St Patrick's. About a year before I left the school they put me in a dormitory. BR 26 used to come up with a big bunch of keys like a gaoler at 6.30am, he would hit your legs with a stick and tell you to get up for early mass and the sleep was hanging out of your eyes. I think Father Brendan Smyth said mass on occasion.
- 12. On Saturdays and Sundays when the Belfast boys were out, they made me push all the beds back in the dormitory. They gave me two cloths for under my feet and they would splash polish all over the big long dormitory and I had to walk up and down with these squares of cloth under my feet covered in polish and I had to make that floor shine. I had to do that in three dormitories. I always did this cleaning alone.
- 13.1 ran away sometimes and the same four brothers previously mentioned punished me with beatings. They were bad. They took you up to the sick room on the second floor. There was no light, just a frosted window and a mattress on the floor with an army blanket. These Brothers came in with a cane and a belt and you would be beaten anywhere. In the room anything

PRIVATE

# SPT-2193

#### COMPLAINT No. 4 - HIA 54 - HIA 54

10. HIA 54 made a statement to the Inquiry on 17 January 2014. He states that when he was admitted to St. Patrick's in 1978 he was placed in the junior wing and this is probably correct as he would have been years old. I would have had little if any contact with HIA 54 at that time because I was a Housemaster in the section of the school. He alleges I brought him to the house where the Brothers lived and that while two other Brothers, whom he does not name, held him down, I raped him. This is a complete fabrication. I have never been interviewed by the police about his allegations.

## COMPLAINT No. 5- HIA 58 - HIA 58

11. HIA 58 made a statement to the Inquiry on 6 February 2015 in which he states he was and was admitted to St. Patrick's in 1964 when he would have been born years old. He stated he remained in the school until 1968. The first thing I would like to say is that he would have been admitted to the section of the school and so I would have had no particular dealings with him. I also am not aware if he ever made a complaint to the police. I have not been interviewed by the police in respect of his allegations. He has alleged he got a lot of beatings from the De La Salle Brothers and he has named me as one of the Brothers involved. He also alleges that after he ran away and was found, four of the Brothers, including myself, punished him by throwing him into the deep end of the swimming pool at the school. Apart from the fact I had no reason to supervise this particular individual, I deny I would have beat him as alleged. I do not recollect using corporal punishment on the boys that I supervised and any serious incidents of misbehaviour would have been referred to the Director or school principal. I am also adamant that I never was involved in throwing HIA 58 or any boy into the deep end of the swimming pool at the school. This simply did not happen. He has also described an incident where he ran away after being taken to the cinema at Broadway. I have no recollection of this person running away from the cinema and having to be picked up. He also said on one occasion I attacked him with a big bunch of keys and also hit his legs with a stick. I would have had a master key rather than a bunch of keys. I also never used a stick to beat any boys.

## COMPLAINT No. 6 - HIA 253 - HIA 253

- 12. HIA 253 made a statement to the Inquiry on 10 April 2015. I am not aware he made any statement to the police and I have not been interviewed by the police in respect of the allegations he has made in his statement to the Inquiry. His date of birth is given as and he has stated he was admitted to St. Patrick's Training School in August 1983 when he was nearly years old and that he remained in the school for a period of less than five months. While I cannot be sure it is possible he was in the senior school.
- 13. He has alleged that I abused him. He described it by alleging I put my arm around him and touched him. He claims this happened when we were cleaning up the gym and the handball courts. He alleged this happened on other occasions and that I asked him to touch him as well. He also claims I took him to my room and tried to persuade him to touch my penis and masturbate him. He claims that he refused to do so. He was uncertain of my name and said it was either who abused him.
- 14. None of this happened. At the time HIA 253 was in St. Patrick's I believe I would have been and also worked as a Housemaster in the school. I don't think it would have been my responsibility to clean out the gym or handball courts. I have no particular recollection of this individual but I deny I abused him or any boy.

**SPT-074** 

#### PRIVATE

35. BR 26 approached me when I was in the punishment cell. He felt all around me and tried to sexually assault me there and I kicked the legs off him.

- 36. BR 42 used to make you run around the yard. He would get us to form two circles and he would stand in the smaller circle as you ran round the outer circle and each time you passed he would wallop you with a hurley bat. This game could go on for ten or fifteen minutes.
- 37. I often tried to self harm when I was in St Pat's and I have scars remaining on my hands and wrists since this time. I was trying to get to hospital so that I could run away but they never took me to hospital. BR 26 just cleaned and bandaged up the wounds himself in the home.
- 38. The staff at St Pat's could not control me so I was sent to borstal for absconding. They sent me to Millisle. I appealed and got back to St Pat's only to run away again. I was sent to Crumlin Road Prison when I was fifteen for absconding. I went to London but they caught me and brought me back and I was sent to borstal yet again. Later in life I returned twice to Crumlin Road with convictions for theft.

#### Life after care

- 39.1 was questioned by the police in 1995 about abuse by the brothers. Someone must have reported it and they came to question me. I told them about the abuse I had suffered during my time at Rubane House.
- 40.A criminal case was brought to court regarding the abuse I suffered but noone was convicted. It was heard at Newtownards and Downpatrick court but Judge Gibson did not proceed with the case and I was told that this was due to so many of the Brothers now being deceased that they would not get a fair hearing and due to the lapse of time.

HIA 26

10

OCD 122

Certified a true copy of an original signed document

CC 2013011600301

Continuation of Statement of: HIA 137 Page 3 of 7 shower for at least 15 to 20 minutes, my body went into shock. I was shaking. I couldn't speak, my bottom jaw was quivering. BR 26 would have been walking up and down. He would then call you out. You would go over to the benches and dry. I recall getting dried and then being struck with a leather strap. BR 26 carried this under his cloak. It was around a foot long and thick with a round end. You couldn't see it if you were looking at him. That evening after being in the shower he hit me across the back. I was brought to tears. I thought I was going to pass out. BR 26 was to be feared, he was the enforcer, you were more afraid of him than anyone else. It was BR 26 who punished you for doing wrong. BR 26 side of the building. I often ran away from St Pat's. I even got as always worked on the far as home in and my family brought me back. When you were brought back you were brought into the main entrance, BR 26 would be mad. I remember him hitting me 5 or 6 times on my hands with the strap. He would say, "Don't you ever run away again. Don't ever degrade me again." Other forms of punishment in St Pat's would have been a loss or privilege, money would have been removed, no visits home or you would have been sent to the dorms early. I remember a Sunday in St Pat's, we had asked a Brother to open the tuck shop. When he went to open the shop someone threw paper at him, hitting me. All the boys laughed. As a punishment he decided not to open the shop. There was 6 or 7 of us standing at the shop. I just ran at the door, I kicked the door. I could have died. The Yale and Chubb lock opened. I said, "Oh my God" I kept saying, "Don't touch". The boys just ran in and grabbed fegs and stuff. I went in and I took fegs away. We went up the back towards the workshops. BR 26 found out, he was like a demon, he was going to kill us. He came up to the work shops, he pointed out boys. I thought I got away with it. He then said to me, "You with the big feet, down below". I was put in a room. I was crying. I told BR 26 it was an accident. He told me I

Signature of witness:	HIA 137
Signature witnessed by:	
(Appropriate Adult)	

Page 29 of 56

SPT-25376

OCD 122

CC 2013011600301

HIA 137

Continuation of Statement of:

#### Page 4 of 7

Certified a true copy of an original signed document

was learning nothing. He took out the strap and started to beat me. He hit me 4 or 5 times. I was curled up in a ball and crying. He hit me all over my body. I was telling him I was sorry. He then left the room and closed the door. I was left there, I didn't get any tea. He came back at night, I got my mug of milk and a bun and sent to bed. After this I was put on report, I didn't get any money. Another time **BR 26** beat me was when I answered him back. I think he told me to get into the shower. I said no. I recall his strap coming round the back of my head. It marked the back of my head, bottom of my ear, my top and bottom lip were burning. I fell to the ground. I had a burn mark on my bottom lip. I couldn't eat. I recall myself and

from running away. We got as far as Carryduff when the Police and UDR caught up with us. I remember running. I jumped over a hedge and fell into a river. I was soaked when I was pulled from the river. was caught in the field. We were brought back to the Police station and had to wait until the Police got assistance to take us back. There could have been at least 20 officers took us back. When we returned the Police said something about the amount of manpower it took to bring us back. This really annoyed BR 26. He just looked at us. I knew he was mad. I knew he was going to kill us. That night we were sent bed. The next day I was called out of my workshop. He again sent me to the room. The room with the high up window that everyone knew was a restraining room. I was stripped off to my underwear. He told me I'd end up in Millisle. He said I wouldn't make a fool out of him. He told me that day he was going to break me. I was frightened by the way he was talking. That day he did break me. He produced the belt, he beat me into a corner. He just kept beating me. He was shouting, "I will fecking break you". He beat me, after the third belt my body went numb. I thought I was going to pass out. I shouted at him to stop. He said he was going to kill me. He couldn't beat me enough. He beat me 10 to 12 times. When he stopped he was out of breath, he leaned against the wall,

 Signature of witness:
 HIA 137

 Signature witnessed by:
 (Appropriate Adult)

Page 30 of 56

SPT-25377

SPT-2196

#### COMPLAINT No. 13 - HIA 137

24. I was interviewed by the police on 26 June 2013 in relation to allegations made against me HIA 137 . The police informed me that a statement was taken from him on by a 28 May 2013 although I have not seen a copy of it. He alleged that he went to St. Patrick's in March 1971 and I informed the police I vaguely remembered him. He said he remembered on one occasion I made him go down to take a cold shower but I do not accept I forced any boy to stand in a cold shower for 15 to 20 minutes in freezing water as he alleged. I also denied that when he was drying himself after taking a shower I was striking him with a leather strap. According to HIA 137 I had the nickname of . I had never heard that. I was aware that some of the boys would call me and this is because I used to have a couple of little . I also or informed the police I had no recollection of HIA 137 running away as he claimed. However if he did then the usual general punishment was a curtailment of HIA 137 privileges. The police also told me of an incident in which claimed he broke the door to the tuck shop and that all the boys then went in and stole cigarettes and sweets etc. I informed the police I had no recollection of this. He claimed that afterwards I took out my strap and hit him all over the body. I totally deny this. I also deny his allegation that one time after he had run away and the police brought him back I brought him to a room which he claimed was known as the restraining room and beat him with a belt to the extent he thought he was going to pass out. Nothing like this ever happened. I did not carry any sort of leather strap and in fact I have no specific recollection of carrying out corporal punishment myself. It was always my practice to refer a boy who was particularly unruly to the Director or Principal of the school who would administer corporal punishment. On reflection I think it is possible I may have administered corporal punishment by slapping a boy but only on the orders of the school Principal or Director and under his supervision. No cane was ever used.

#### COMPLAINT No. 14 - HIA 374

25. HIA 374 made a statement to the police on 18 February 2014 and approximately three months later, on 14 May 2014, I was interviewed by the police about this. In his statement he states that he believed it was in 1976 he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School and that on arrival he was brought into the office to meet one of the Brothers. He informed the police he could not remember the Brother's name but thought he was the Housemaster. He described him as a Housemaster in the section of the school and I accepted it would have been my responsibility to meet a boy on his arrival in the Housemaster's office. I have no recollection of HIA 374 . I am not sure his description of me is accurate as my for a certainly say I never got him to touch my penis on the outside of my clothes as he alleged.

## COMPLAINT No. 15 – SPT 130

26. **SPT 130** made a statement to the police on 4 June 2015 in which he claims that he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School around October 1981 when he was aged. He alleged that I, **BR 94** and **BR 8** came into his room together and sexually abused him under the pretence of delivering comics. This is one of a number of allegations made by boys in which they refer to incidents taking place when I was handing out comics to them in their rooms. While I did deliver comics I did not sexually abuse **SPT 130** or any other boy. I also deny I would have gone into any boy's bedroom accompanied by two other Brothers as alleged. There was a night supervisor on duty and it would have been very strange indeed for three Brothers to be observed going into any boy's bedroom. He alleged he was abused in this way on numerous occasions – at least three or four time a week during the month he was resident at St. Patrick's. This is simply untrue. His allegations are without foundation.

#### PRIVATE

The tranquilisers I had taken earlier in the day still hadn't worn off so I couldn't defend myself. There were so many Brothers who came and went in St Patrick's it was hard to remember all their names.

- 4. I was then taken back to the junior side by the same Brothers who brought me to the house. I felt humiliated. I was not able to tell anyone about the rape. There was no one to tell. I only saw BR 26 two or three times after that when he was walking in the corridor. I had no contact with him; he did not approach me, talk to me or touch me again.
- 5. I boxed from I was nine until I was fifteen so when I went to St Patrick's I knew how to look after myself. If you weren't able to fight your corner in there you were beaten and bullied by other boys. I didn't have a problem with being bullied. <u>SPT 27</u> and I stuck together so if you hit one of us you had to hit both of us.
- 6. There was a BR 88 who was in charge of the I cannot remember his name but he had BR 88 a BR 88 and he was in his thirties. The boys often mocked each other that if you let him do sexual acts to you he would give you the so when a boy got the other boys would mockingly say "what did you have to do to get those". As I was only there for a month I never had to go to see him for clothes.
- 7. My mother was in bad health so she was unable to visit me in St Patrick's. After two weeks SPT 27 and I were taken to by two Brothers for a two hour home visit. That was the only time I saw my mother while I was in St Patrick's.
- 8. We went to school in St Patrick's. There were two **STP 75** who taught They were **STP 745TP 75** and they were both gentlemen. They were always kind and seemed concerned about our welfare and they were not violent.
- 9. I believe that St Patrick's was a recruiting ground for Fianna Eireann, the junior wing of the Provisional IRA, which I refer to as the "Sinn Fein Hitler Youth". After I left I realised how many boys I knew who were involved with the Provisional

HIA 54

PRIVATE

2

# SPT-26824

	REST	RICTED (when complete)		
		Statement of Witness		
	Г 130 rer 18		(if over 18 insert 'over	18)
declare that this statem	ent consisting of 3	page/s, each signed by me is tri	us to the heat of mu	in the second se
belief and I make it know shall be liable to prosecu	ing that, if it is tend	ered in evidence at a preliminary y stated in it anything which I know	enquiry or at the tria	l of any
belief and I make it know	ing that, if it is tend	ered in evidence at a preliminary	enquiry or at the tria w to be false or do n Date: 04/06/	l of any ot believ
belief and I make it know shall be liable to prosecu rue.	ing that, if it is tend tion if I have wilfully SPT 130	ered in evidence at a preliminary y stated in it anything which I kno	enquiry or at the tria w to be false or do n Date: 04/06/	l of any ot believ
ellef and I make it know hall be liable to prosecu rue. Signature of Witness: Signature witnessed by:	ing that, if it is tend tion if I have wilfully SPT 130	ered in evidence at a preliminary y stated in it anything which I kno	enquiry or at the tria w to be false or do n Date: 04/06/	l of any ot believ 15

When I was aged I was sent to St Patrick's Training School by the court for truancy. I think this was around October 1981. The order was to be reviewed after a month, but I was to remain there full time until that point. I was assigned a single room off the main domitory, and on the first night I did not sleep at all. I did not want to be there. Because I was there for truancy, I was already refusing to go to school, as I hated it so much. They did not try and make me go to school in St Pat's either, and I attended the paint shop instead, where I was and DL 136 . Because I did not instructed by two Housemasters called go to classes, I had no dealings with the Christian Brothers who worked there, as they mostly took meetings or taught classes that I was not involved in. I am not really sure what their main role there was, as I did not have anything to do with that part of St Pat's. I usually only saw them in the dorms. On my second night there, three of them came into my room. One was BR 26 who had short, very dark hair. He wore glasses, and I remember he was very strict. Also was BR 94, a very tall man, who was balding. He was quite quiet. The third was a nickname. I think his real name was maybe BR 8 called something like

They offered me comics, or had brought comics with them – I can't remember. One of them came over to me and rubbed his hands all over my body, inside my pyjama top and around

Signature of witness:	SPT 130	
Signature witnessed by: (Appropriate Adult)		
210)		

# Certified a true copy of an original signed document

# SPT-26825

#### RESTRICTED (when complete)

Continuation of Statement of:

<u>SPT 130</u>

Page 2 of 3

my chest. He then moved his hands down into my pyjama bottoms, and fondled round my penis and testicles. He did not say anything as he did this, and nor did I as I was too scared to react. The other two stood and watched, or perhaps were keeping an eye out for other people coming. I cannot remember which was round they were, who was touching me and which two watched. After that, they just left my room. A couple of nights later, the same thing happened. The same three brothers came into my room late at night. It was already after lights out, so must have been 10.30 or 11pm. This time, it was a different one who touched me, again in the same manner, while the other two kept watch. Again, I do not remember who was who. They took turns, on different nights. They all just left again, after he had rubbed me inside my pyjama bottoms. This began routine, and happened at least 3-4 times a week. However, after week two of me being there, and this having happened several times by then, each time the same three, a different one touching me each time, the other two keeping watch, they increased the abuse. They continued to rub my body and put their hand into my pyjamas and fondle my penis and testicles, but also now they would take my hand and force me to touch them, inside their trousers or cassock, whatever they were wearing. They would make me fondle round their penis, skin on skin. I cannot remember if the penis was erect. I had now been there a bit longer and shouted out at them to stop, and I was swearing at them. They threatened me that if I didn't keep guiet and do what they ordered, they would have me sent to Hydebank Young Offenders. This was enough to scare me into doing what they said. This continued 3-4 a week, until my month's residential order was over. I then went back to court, who ordered I continue at St Pat's until I turned 16, but only on a 9-5 basis. I did not have to stay overnight anymore, so did not have any further dealings with any of these three Brothers. I did not tell anyone about it at the time. The first person I told

Signature of witness:	SPT 130	
Signature witnessed by: (Appropriate Adult)		

SPT-2196

#### COMPLAINT No. 13 - HIA 137

24. I was interviewed by the police on 26 June 2013 in relation to allegations made against me HIA 137 . The police informed me that a statement was taken from him on by a 28 May 2013 although I have not seen a copy of it. He alleged that he went to St. Patrick's in March 1971 and I informed the police I vaguely remembered him. He said he remembered on one occasion I made him go down to take a cold shower but I do not accept I forced any boy to stand in a cold shower for 15 to 20 minutes in freezing water as he alleged. I also denied that when he was drying himself after taking a shower I was striking him with a leather strap. According to HIA 137 I had the nickname of . I had never heard that. I was aware that some of the boys would call me and this is because I used to have a couple of little . I also or informed the police I had no recollection of HIA 137 running away as he claimed. However if he did then the usual general punishment was a curtailment of HIA 137 privileges. The police also told me of an incident in which claimed he broke the door to the tuck shop and that all the boys then went in and stole cigarettes and sweets etc. I informed the police I had no recollection of this. He claimed that afterwards I took out my strap and hit him all over the body. I totally deny this. I also deny his allegation that one time after he had run away and the police brought him back I brought him to a room which he claimed was known as the restraining room and beat him with a belt to the extent he thought he was going to pass out. Nothing like this ever happened. I did not carry any sort of leather strap and in fact I have no specific recollection of carrying out corporal punishment myself. It was always my practice to refer a boy who was particularly unruly to the Director or Principal of the school who would administer corporal punishment. On reflection I think it is possible I may have administered corporal punishment by slapping a boy but only on the orders of the school Principal or Director and under his supervision. No cane was ever used.

#### COMPLAINT No. 14 - HIA 374

25. HIA 374 made a statement to the police on 18 February 2014 and approximately three months later, on 14 May 2014, I was interviewed by the police about this. In his statement he states that he believed it was in 1976 he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School and that on arrival he was brought into the office to meet one of the Brothers. He informed the police he could not remember the Brother's name but thought he was the Housemaster. He described him as a Housemaster in the section of the school and I accepted it would have been my responsibility to meet a boy on his arrival in the Housemaster's office. I have no recollection of HIA 374 . I am not sure his description of me is accurate as my for a certainly say I never got him to touch my penis on the outside of my clothes as he alleged.

## COMPLAINT No. 15 – SPT 130

26. **SPT 130** made a statement to the police on 4 June 2015 in which he claims that he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School around October 1981 when he was aged. He alleged that I, **BR 94** and **BR 8** came into his room together and sexually abused him under the pretence of delivering comics. This is one of a number of allegations made by boys in which they refer to incidents taking place when I was handing out comics to them in their rooms. While I did deliver comics I did not sexually abuse **SPT 130** or any other boy. I also deny I would have gone into any boy's bedroom accompanied by two other Brothers as alleged. There was a night supervisor on duty and it would have been very strange indeed for three Brothers to be observed going into any boy's bedroom. He alleged he was abused in this way on numerous occasions – at least three or four time a week during the month he was resident at St. Patrick's. This is simply untrue. His allegations are without foundation.

#### PRIVATE

because they were angry with me when they realised I was charged with arson and criminal damage. The only one who came to see me regularly was my grandmother my father's mother.

- 10. A guy in the next room to me slit his wrists and tried to kill himself. I heard the ambulance men next door and when I asked about him the next morning I was told by staff to mind my own business. There was nothing nice about that place.
- 11. You got washed in the morning and it was humiliating because you had to take your top half off first and put a towel round you and the Brothers stood there watching you. The boys got washed but didn't shower in the morning because it was a thing among the boys that you didn't use the showers in the morning as the brothers were watching the boys. The first day I came in I took a shower as I wasn't aware there was any problem. When I went out to the yard the other boys commented "did you see him eyeing you up and all, oh he's going to have a bit of you" and they made a joke of it but it is hard now looking back. The other boys were and who are both now deceased and and who both live in

12 BR 26 came to my room one Sunday night. I was lying in bed and he put comics on my bed. He chatted for over half an hour and then he proceeded to put his hand underneath the blankets and started to fondle me and touch me up. At one stage he had his own hand under his tunic and was making all sorts of rasping noises and saying "oh you're a good boy" and then he left the room. I had a pair of rosary beads in my hand. It is only in the last two to three years that I am able to deal with the gravity of what occurred.

13. St Patrick's had four dormitories and I had my own room. I used the chair against the door to keep BR 26 out after the incident outlined above. My grandmother had left me a birthday cake and BR 26 tried to get in to my room the following Sunday night to deliver it and I wouldn't let him into the room.

**HIA 51** 

As I had nothing to do with the I can only assume this role would have been carried out by a nurse or perhaps another Brother. I deny I picked on this individual or regularly struck him for no particular reason. He has also described an incident in which he alleges he observed me fondling one of the female cooks in the kitchen. Again this is pure fantasy. It did not happen. In his statement he has alleged I exposed myself to him in the shoe store after he came up to ask me for some new shoes. As stated above, this is not possible. He would not have asked me to provide him with new shoes and he would have gone to one of the Brothers in the junior section of the school if these were needed. His description of incidents puts me in places or situations where alleged abuse took place which HIA 17 alleges that could not be true. Finally **BR 83** struck me as a reporting the alleged abuse to him. I am clear no Brother ever had <u>HIA 17</u> result of reason to speak to me about a complaint from a resident and his description of the incident BR 83 allegedly knocked me to the ground is completely untrue. in which BR 83 was not even a teacher as he claimed. My recollection is that Furthermore he was In his **BR 83** police account he said walked with him across the balcony to the classroom where I taught before he attacked me but I was not a teacher in the school at all and so yet again this account could not be true.

## COMPLAINT No. 2 - HIA 26 - HIA 26

- 6. HIA 26 made a statement to the Inquiry on 28 February 2014 and had been interviewed by the police about his allegations on 5 May 2012. The police interviewed me about his allegations on 6 March 2013.
- 7. HIA 26 states he was placed in St. Patrick's Training School on 16 November 1970 and was there for one year. I remember him. He was unsettled and regularly absconded from the school. Sometimes the police picked him up and brought him back and sometimes staff at St. Patrick's were able to find him. He had to be brought back to the Courts as we were unable to control him and this is probably why I remember him. Eventually he was transferred to the Borstal at Millisle. I also accept HIA 26 may have been placed in the isolation room on occasion. This was regulated and he would not have been kept there for 2 or 3 days at a time as he alleged. I also completely deny his allegation that I attempted to fondle and kiss him when he was in the isolation room. I have no clear recollection of him cutting his wrists and attempting self-harm, but if he did, I would have sought medical assistance from the nurse in the surgery department.

## COMPLAINT No. 3 - HIA 51 - HIA 51

- 8. HIA 51 made a statement to the Inquiry on 19 February 2015 and he made a statement to the police on 20 June 1996 in which he made allegations against me. I was interviewed by the police in respect of those allegations on 5 September 1996. I note HIA 51 was born and that he was admitted to St. Patrick's in July 1982 where he stayed for a period of approximately five weeks. As he would have had his birthday when he was there, it is quite likely he was placed in the senior school. I have no particular recollection of this individual although over the years a number of boys called were placed in St. Patrick's. Nothing in particular stands out about this individual although it is quite possible I would have supervised him during the time he was placed there.
- 9. I agree I may have called into his room to give him comics to read at night. I regularly distributed comics to the boys at night time to settle them down. I probably would have done this on average twice a week. However this would have been the only reason for me visiting a boy in his room and I categorically deny that I abused him on those occasions as he alleged. I also do not have any recollection of being prevented from entering this boy's bedroom at night as he has alleged in his Inquiry statement.

in the junior school and so I would not have had any particular dealings with him. However he also recalled that SPT 96 was very troublesome and absconded and so he was then transferred to the senior side of the school and during this period of time I would have been one of the members of staff who would have worked with him. When the police put the allegations to me I denied them completely. I maintain I did not sexually abuse him in any way and his allegations are totally fabricated. It is quite possible SPT 96 was placed in the isolation room because he was difficult to control but this would have been authorised by the school principal. When interviewed by the police I also denied the allegation that SPT 96 had told SPT 142 the second by the school principal when interviewed by the school had told SPT 142 the informed me they had approached SPT 142 about this and took a statement from him in which he apparently denied he had taken SPT 96 to the office in relation to any complaint that he had made to him. The fact is the allegations I sexually abused SPT 96 are utterly false and unsubstantiated.

## COMPLAINT No. 10 - SPT 145

21. SPT 145 was interviewed by the police in the senior on 20 January 1994 in which he stated he was in St. Patrick's Training School, in the senior wing, around 1962. When asked he said he remembered me and said I was well liked and that I was hard but fair. He also said that when he first went to the school I punched him hard in the stomach just to let him know who was boss. I don't recall SPT 145 At no time ever did I punch a child.

## COMPLAINT No. 11 - SPT 154

22. **SPT 154** made a statement to the police on 18 May 1995 and on 5 September 1996 I was interviewed about the allegations he made against me. He alleged that when he was in St. Patrick's I took him out in my car around the town and that I squeezed his shoulder and rubbed his thigh. I informed the police that I did not really recall this individual although his name was familiar. It is possible that I occasionally would have had a boy in the car when I was carrying out messages but I definitely would not have touched him or any other boy inappropriately as he has alleged.

## COMPLAINT No. 12 - SPT 119

SPT 119 23. was interviewed by the police on 4 August 2010 and on 6 March 2013 I was interviewed by the police in respect of his allegations. The police informed me that SPT 119 was at St. Patrick's during the late 1980's and I explained that I had no specific recollection of him although there were a number of in the school over the years. According to the police SPT 119 was born in and so during the late 1980's he would have been between years old when he was at the school which meant he would have been in the section. I pointed out to the police that I was then a Housemaster of the school and so had very little if any contact with the boys in the school. The allegation is that SPT 119 was left alone when the rest of the boys in his dormitory went to the Glens of Antrim for their summer holiday. This would not have happened. No boy would have been left alone in this way. I totally deny his allegations against me. I did not rape him or hold him down while another Brother raped him as alleged. He also claimed when the sexual assaults took place the three

Brothers, including myself, had been drinking and that we were drunk. However as I pointed out to the police I have been a teetotaller all my life. There were a limited number of staff in the school and when the boys went on their holiday the care staff who looked after them would have gone too. It would have been a total waste of resources to keep staff back to look after one individual in a dormitory. I also would have had no reason myself to visit the dormitories of the junior boys' school.

# OCD 120

# File 13 of 41

PAGE 26

SPT-22944

Yeah.



And I would, if, I have no recollection of having had him out.

Right.

BR 26

You know. I'd say it would be highly unlikely that I would have had him out.

Because eh that's what I was going to ask you there because you did say earlier on if I, if I picked you up right that eh if you wanted a boy to go out to help you with messages that.

BR 26

It's highly unlikely he would be sent to me.

You would normally, you would normally ask for a particular boy, would that be correct.

BR 26

No no no I would leave it to the staff.

Oh you just asked for a, a boy.

BR 26

The staff would.

Page 26

Page 62 of 78

# SPT-2194

COMPLAINT No. 7 -

HIA 384 - HIA 384

- 15. HIA 384 made a statement to the Inquiry on 21 April 2015. I am unaware if he ever made a statement to the police and I have not been interviewed by the police about his allegations. The first thing I would say is I have no particular recollection of him although I do recall the name SPT 54 whom he has mentioned in his statement.
- 16. In his statement he states he was in St. Patrick's Training School on two occasions. The first was for a period of three months in 1993 and then for eight months in 1994. During the time he was in the school I was

I would not have had regular dealings with the boys at that time. In his statement he alleges I was encouraging and in fact paying SPT 54 to sexually assault him and that SPT 54 was my "golden boy". He says he actually saw me give SPT 54 money after he had abused him. These allegations are totally ridiculous and I deny them completely. I do recall SPT 54 and that he came from a dysfunctional background and was a difficult child. It is possible I attended meetings about both of them and it is likely the police would have investigated the complaints made by HIA 384 against other boys.

17. The other individuals who have made complaints against me have not contacted the Inquiry or made statements but their allegations are contained in police material which has been made available to me. The police interviewed me in respect of allegations made by some of these persons, but not all of them.

## COMPLAINT No. 8 - SPT 136

- 18. He made a statement to the police on 21 September 1993 and I was interviewed by the police about his allegations on 15 April 1994. He alleges that he was in the school for about 3½ months when I started to sexually abuse him. He claims these incidents occurred in his own bedroom on a Monday night when I was doing the comic round. He claims I talked to him and then started to touch him and this went on for about three to four months and escalated to involve oral sex.
- 19. During my police interview I pointed out his description of me was not particularly accurate but I agreed his description of me going regularly to a sunday morning and of distributing comics to the boys as reading material was accurate. The police also stated during the interview **SPT 136** had informed him that he reported the abuse to his Social Worker whom he named as well as his own father but that when both individuals were contacted by the police they denied any knowledge of any such complaint. I totally deny his complaints about me and this remains my position today. I also understand that a number of other boys interviewed around that time as a result of the **SPT 134** Inquiry also made reference to the "comic round" and about rumours pertaining thereto. I maintain any contact with the boys during the delivery of comics was innocent. I, along with a number of other Brothers and lay Housemasters would have routinely distributed comics and reading material around the dorms.

## COMPLAINT No. 9 - SPT 96

20. On the 26 October 1993 SPT 96 made a statement to the police in which he stated he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School about 1964 when he was about years old. The police interviewed me about his allegations at Grosvenor Road RUC Station on 15 April 1994. The police commenced the interview by informing me that the police had commenced their investigation following allegations made by SPT 134 who had been resident in St. Patrick's during the early 1980s and that during the investigation newspaper articles had been written concerning the investigation. The police stated as a result of those newspaper articles, SPT 96 had come forward and made his statement of complaint. I informed the police I recalled SPT 96 and that he had initially been placed

# OCD 14

## C61-220-93

SPT-20597

Continuation Page No 19

arrangement at Dunmurry RUC Station. denied that SPT 136 had ever reported to him that he was the victim of sexual abuse at St Patrick's Training School. Statement of the sexual abuse at Part II, page 109 refers.

the interview with During he said that SPT 136 had made such a complaint that he would have had the matter fully investigated but at the same time would have treated the complaint with great suspicion. He explained this by adding that through his dealings with SPT 136 that he knew he was not a very truthful person. This remark is reinforced by the fact that SPT 136 convicted of perjury at Newtownards Juvenile was Court Copy of SPT 136 criminal record. on is attached at Part IV, pages 102-106.

Enquiries with the Northern Ireland Office, Royston there House, Belfast revealed that was only one BR 26 SPT 136 at St Patrick's Training School while BR 26 was there, namely who is the present

**SPT 136** The physical description supplied by of BR 26 BR 26 does not fit Kelly in that describes him as having BR 26 has To this day The other particulars supplied SPT 136 is that BR 26 was in charge of the by wing of the school and was promoted to overall charge of the school are correct. He also put him in the age bracket of late at that time. BR 26 DOB

what SPT 136 alleges did happen, he may have put lf the wrong name to his alleged abuser. It is worthy of note the physical description supplied by SPT 136 that is verv BR 4 similar to the description of as described at the bottom 2 in the HIA 227 of page statement of Part 11, page 30 refers. As previously

Lores 01/2

# Page 26 of 572

#### PRIVATE

safe. I was given a second chance at Whitefield but did not take it seriously and I was then sent to St Patrick's. I remember that the truancy officer, **second second sec** 

#### St Patrick's Training School Belfast (26 August 1983 - 10 January 1984)

- 7. I was 15 when I was sent to St Patrick's on a 1-3 years Training School Order. I stayed in the main building which contained the dormitories. I remember that the children from the care side and the Training School were mixed together and not kept separate. I had a room to myself and the food was fine and there was no shortage. I remember that there were some decent members of staff who were good to me such as STP 70 and STP 71 I still see STP 71 sometimes when I am out for a walk and we stop and have a chat.
- 8. I think there was a distinction between the way I was treated by the staff and the Brothers. There was a Brother called BR 26 or who abused me although I am not certain about his name. I remember that near the start of my time there he had a talk with me as we were cleaning up the gym and the handball courts. He told me that I would be there for a while but that he could make things easier and perhaps shorten the amount of time I would have to stay. He kept putting his arm around me and touching me. There was no sexual touching that day but he was trying to make me believe he was helping me.
- 9. He then began to touch me from that day onwards. He asked me to touch him and I was really frightened because I knew it was not normal. I had refused to do these things in Primary School but in St Patrick's I did certain things because I was so afraid and had no one to turn to for help. I was also confused because I thought he might be able to help me get out quicker even though what he was doing was wrong. He also took me to a room on three or four occasions and unzipped his trousers. He took his penis out and tried to persuade me to touch it and masturbate him. He was trying to persuade me to progress and to let him

HIA 253

#### PRIVATE

#### PRIVATE

take my clothes off and I resisted him and would not do what he asked. It was then that I began to abscond at every opportunity.

- 10. I ran away constantly sometimes on my own and sometimes with other boys. I slept rough anywhere I could get shelter. I remember that on occasion I would sleep in a coal bunker or an old car just to have somewhere to stay. In the beginning I would go home and tell my family that I did not want to go back. I never told them the real reasons however. My mum would always bring me back because she thought it was the right thing to do and she did not realise the abuse I was suffering. Eventually it reached the point that I could not go home because my family would be in trouble if they harboured me. That was when I had to sleep rough. I also started to get into trouble and was out of control. My brothers tried their best to help me but I was out of control by this stage.
- 11. I recall one particular night that it was raining so heavily that I had no option but to go back to St Patrick's. I was with two other boys: one from called STP 72 and my friend STP 73. STP 76 committed suicide when he was a teenager. The three of us went back in the early hours of the morning and knocked on the doors to get back inside. The doors were opened by two Brothers whose names I cannot remember and they stripped all of us and gave us a vicious beating with a cane as far as I remember. I cannot remember how long I was actually at St Patrick's but it may have been around a year. I was then transferred to Lisnevin because I was absconding so often.

#### **Lisnevin Millisle**

12. The regime in Lisnevin was a complete sea change to what I had experienced at St Patrick's. The members of staff were friendly and not really strict. They had a good range of education choices which I really enjoyed. It was a secure unit but they still allowed weekend leave for the boys provided your behaviour was good for a certain period. I was there for about six months when I was allowed to go to a camping trip in Castlewellan with a friend. I behaved stupidly that weekend and stole a car. I subsequently received a 12 month sentence for the offences I

HIA 253

#### PRIVATE

in the junior school and so I would not have had any particular dealings with him. However he also recalled that SPT 96 was very troublesome and absconded and so he was then transferred to the senior side of the school and during this period of time I would have been one of the members of staff who would have worked with him. When the police put the allegations to me I denied them completely. I maintain I did not sexually abuse him in any way and his allegations are totally fabricated. It is quite possible SPT 96 was placed in the isolation room because he was difficult to control but this would have been authorised by the school principal. When interviewed by the police I also denied the allegation that SPT 96 had told SPT 142 the second by the school principal when interviewed by the school had told SPT 142 the informed me they had approached SPT 142 about this and took a statement from him in which he apparently denied he had taken SPT 96 to the office in relation to any complaint that he had made to him. The fact is the allegations I sexually abused SPT 96 are utterly false and unsubstantiated.

## COMPLAINT No. 10 - SPT 145

21. SPT 145 was interviewed by the police in the senior on 20 January 1994 in which he stated he was in St. Patrick's Training School, in the senior wing, around 1962. When asked he said he remembered me and said I was well liked and that I was hard but fair. He also said that when he first went to the school I punched him hard in the stomach just to let him know who was boss. I don't recall SPT 145 At no time ever did I punch a child.

## COMPLAINT No. 11 - SPT 154

22. **SPT 154** made a statement to the police on 18 May 1995 and on 5 September 1996 I was interviewed about the allegations he made against me. He alleged that when he was in St. Patrick's I took him out in my car around the town and that I squeezed his shoulder and rubbed his thigh. I informed the police that I did not really recall this individual although his name was familiar. It is possible that I occasionally would have had a boy in the car when I was carrying out messages but I definitely would not have touched him or any other boy inappropriately as he has alleged.

## COMPLAINT No. 12 - SPT 119

SPT 119 23. was interviewed by the police on 4 August 2010 and on 6 March 2013 I was interviewed by the police in respect of his allegations. The police informed me that SPT 119 was at St. Patrick's during the late 1980's and I explained that I had no specific recollection of him although there were a number of in the school over the years. According to the police SPT 119 was born in and so during the late 1980's he would have been between years old when he was at the school which meant he would have been in the section. I pointed out to the police that I was then a Housemaster of the school and so had very little if any contact with the boys in the school. The allegation is that SPT 119 was left alone when the rest of the boys in his dormitory went to the Glens of Antrim for their summer holiday. This would not have happened. No boy would have been left alone in this way. I totally deny his allegations against me. I did not rape him or hold him down while another Brother raped him as alleged. He also claimed when the sexual assaults took place the three

Brothers, including myself, had been drinking and that we were drunk. However as I pointed out to the police I have been a teetotaller all my life. There were a limited number of staff in the school and when the boys went on their holiday the care staff who looked after them would have gone too. It would have been a total waste of resources to keep staff back to look after one individual in a dormitory. I also would have had no reason myself to visit the dormitories of the junior boys' school.

SPT-26005

OCD 149	RM 12110336
PERSON INTERVIEWED:	BR 26
Tape Number and Tape Times:	T0223021A So they were just a steady number of boys.
BR 26	Yeah.
	At all times throughout the year then.
BR 26	Yeah.
	Okay, the reason I ask is that $\frac{SPT 119}{SPC}$ specifically mentions that when his group was sent, he
	was the only one left behind, if you're saying there's a steady number of boys at any time and
	up to 60 staff with only 4 or 5 taking a group away at a time, there must always have been a
	number of boys left in the school at any given period.
BR 26	Oh yes, yes ah ha.
	So never would there be a time where there would be one child.
BR 26	Oh never, no, never.
	And even within the context of a senior and upper, senior and junior school would there have
	been only one left behind at any time.
BR 26	No.
	In terms of individual dormitories.
BR 26	No.
	Within an individual dormitory might there have been an occasion where a whole dormitory
	went away together if there were, you know.
BR 26	Unlikely.
	Unlikely but it is also possible then that there may have been an empty dorm bar one boy
	would that of been a possibility.
BR 26	Nobody would have been left on their own.
	No it wouldn't of happened.
BR 26	No.
	Okay, well this is what he claims, claims happened em, mostly that he was left alone and that
	he was in his room on his own em, and when these incidents happened, was there alcohol
	available in the, for the adults, for the staff.
BR 26	No.
	No, would there, it wouldn't of been a, an environment where the Brothers could have had a
	drink or.
PACE 22 07/04	Page 9 of 17

Page 165 of 267

SPT-26006

OCD 149	RM 12110336
PERSON INTERVIEWED:	BR 26
Tape Number and Tape Times: BR 26	T0223021A Well if, if they were off duty.
	Yes.
BR 26	If they were off duty the time is their own isn't it.
	Yes, yes I'm just asking in terms of your Order and your, the rules of your staff house was
	alcohol permitted with the Brothers when you were off duty.
BR 26	Well I'll put it to you this way, em, out community would be like any (inaudible) like any normal
	household.
	Okay, so alcohol wouldn't of been a problem.
BR 26	Not at all, no.
	Okay em, because what SPT 119 claims happened is that Br, BR 96 who we
	assume he means as BR 96 and BR 26 came into his room, were there no other BR 26
	there in your time.
BR 26	No.
	Okay, and they had been drinking and he specifically says that you were drunk, the 3 of you
	were drunk. Em, would there have been any occasion where the 3 of you would of socialised
	together and just, just the 3 of you.
BR 26	It so happens that I'm a teetotaller all my life.
	Okay so you, you have never em, had alcohol and certainly never been drunk.
BR 26	I haven't taken the first one yet.
	Okay, well he claims that the 3 people he names as <b>1997</b> , <mark>BR 96</mark> and <mark>BR 26</mark> were drunk, he
	claims that em, while first of BR 96 and BR 26 held him down, Breast raped him, actually
	physically raped him em, and then the role was reversed and it was BR 96 and who held
	him down while you raped him, that's his allegation, is there anything you can say about that.
BR 26	No nothing could be far different from the truth.
	Okay, he said he was shouting out saying don't do that, leave me alone and they were
	beating me, punching me and pulling my hair, BR 26 did the same, couldn't move because
	of the punches that I was getting and he told me to keep my mouth shut, I didn't say nothing, I
	was just crying into the pillow because of the extent of what was being done I was bleeding.
	BR 26 or BR 26 and Br actually came inside me, BR 96 was just sitting there
	masturbating and left the room and said keep your mouth shut.
PACE 22	D 40 cf 47
07/04	Page 10 of 17

Page 166 of 267

# SPT-2194

COMPLAINT No. 7 -

HIA 384 - HIA 384

- 15. HIA 384 made a statement to the Inquiry on 21 April 2015. I am unaware if he ever made a statement to the police and I have not been interviewed by the police about his allegations. The first thing I would say is I have no particular recollection of him although I do recall the name SPT 54 whom he has mentioned in his statement.
- 16. In his statement he states he was in St. Patrick's Training School on two occasions. The first was for a period of three months in 1993 and then for eight months in 1994. During the time he was in the school I was

I would not have had regular dealings with the boys at that time. In his statement he alleges I was encouraging and in fact paying SPT 54 to sexually assault him and that SPT 54 was my "golden boy". He says he actually saw me give SPT 54 money after he had abused him. These allegations are totally ridiculous and I deny them completely. I do recall SPT 54 and that he came from a dysfunctional background and was a difficult child. It is possible I attended meetings about both of them and it is likely the police would have investigated the complaints made by HIA 384 against other boys.

17. The other individuals who have made complaints against me have not contacted the Inquiry or made statements but their allegations are contained in police material which has been made available to me. The police interviewed me in respect of allegations made by some of these persons, but not all of them.

## COMPLAINT No. 8 - SPT 136

- 18. He made a statement to the police on 21 September 1993 and I was interviewed by the police about his allegations on 15 April 1994. He alleges that he was in the school for about 3½ months when I started to sexually abuse him. He claims these incidents occurred in his own bedroom on a Monday night when I was doing the comic round. He claims I talked to him and then started to touch him and this went on for about three to four months and escalated to involve oral sex.
- 19. During my police interview I pointed out his description of me was not particularly accurate but I agreed his description of me going regularly to a sunday morning and of distributing comics to the boys as reading material was accurate. The police also stated during the interview **SPT 136** had informed him that he reported the abuse to his Social Worker whom he named as well as his own father but that when both individuals were contacted by the police they denied any knowledge of any such complaint. I totally deny his complaints about me and this remains my position today. I also understand that a number of other boys interviewed around that time as a result of the **SPT 134** Inquiry also made reference to the "comic round" and about rumours pertaining thereto. I maintain any contact with the boys during the delivery of comics was innocent. I, along with a number of other Brothers and lay Housemasters would have routinely distributed comics and reading material around the dorms.

## COMPLAINT No. 9 - SPT 96

20. On the 26 October 1993 SPT 96 made a statement to the police in which he stated he was sent to St. Patrick's Training School about 1964 when he was about years old. The police interviewed me about his allegations at Grosvenor Road RUC Station on 15 April 1994. The police commenced the interview by informing me that the police had commenced their investigation following allegations made by SPT 134 who had been resident in St. Patrick's during the early 1980s and that during the investigation newspaper articles had been written concerning the investigation. The police stated as a result of those newspaper articles, SPT 96 had come forward and made his statement of complaint. I informed the police I recalled SPT 96 and that he had initially been placed

in the junior school and so I would not have had any particular dealings with him. However he also recalled that SPT 96 was very troublesome and absconded and so he was then transferred to the senior side of the school and during this period of time I would have been one of the members of staff who would have worked with him. When the police put the allegations to me I denied them completely. I maintain I did not sexually abuse him in any way and his allegations are totally fabricated. It is quite possible SPT 96 was placed in the isolation room because he was difficult to control but this would have been authorised by the school principal. When interviewed by the police I also denied the allegation that SPT 96 had told SPT 142 the second by the school principal when interviewed by the school had told SPT 142 the informed me they had approached SPT 142 about this and took a statement from him in which he apparently denied he had taken SPT 96 to the office in relation to any complaint that he had made to him. The fact is the allegations I sexually abused SPT 96 are utterly false and unsubstantiated.

## COMPLAINT No. 10 - SPT 145

21. SPT 145 was interviewed by the police in the senior on 20 January 1994 in which he stated he was in St. Patrick's Training School, in the senior wing, around 1962. When asked he said he remembered me and said I was well liked and that I was hard but fair. He also said that when he first went to the school I punched him hard in the stomach just to let him know who was boss. I don't recall SPT 145 At no time ever did I punch a child.

## COMPLAINT No. 11 - SPT 154

22. **SPT 154** made a statement to the police on 18 May 1995 and on 5 September 1996 I was interviewed about the allegations he made against me. He alleged that when he was in St. Patrick's I took him out in my car around the town and that I squeezed his shoulder and rubbed his thigh. I informed the police that I did not really recall this individual although his name was familiar. It is possible that I occasionally would have had a boy in the car when I was carrying out messages but I definitely would not have touched him or any other boy inappropriately as he has alleged.

## COMPLAINT No. 12 - SPT 119

SPT 119 23. was interviewed by the police on 4 August 2010 and on 6 March 2013 I was interviewed by the police in respect of his allegations. The police informed me that SPT 119 was at St. Patrick's during the late 1980's and I explained that I had no specific recollection of him although there were a number of in the school over the years. According to the police SPT 119 was born in and so during the late 1980's he would have been between years old when he was at the school which meant he would have been in the section. I pointed out to the police that I was then a Housemaster of the school and so had very little if any contact with the boys in the school. The allegation is that SPT 119 was left alone when the rest of the boys in his dormitory went to the Glens of Antrim for their summer holiday. This would not have happened. No boy would have been left alone in this way. I totally deny his allegations against me. I did not rape him or hold him down while another Brother raped him as alleged. He also claimed when the sexual assaults took place the three

Brothers, including myself, had been drinking and that we were drunk. However as I pointed out to the police I have been a teetotaller all my life. There were a limited number of staff in the school and when the boys went on their holiday the care staff who looked after them would have gone too. It would have been a total waste of resources to keep staff back to look after one individual in a dormitory. I also would have had no reason myself to visit the dormitories of the junior boys' school.

## OCD 14

## C61-220-93

Continuation Page No 25

SPT-20603

#### SPT 96

During police investigations into the allegations made SPT 134 an article appeared in by the Sunday World on 22.08.93 that the Newspaper RUC was conducting into enquiries allegations of sexual abuse at St Patrick's Training School.

96 a result of that article a letter signed SPAs was forwarded to the Chief Constable. The author of this letter alleged that while he was detained at St Patrick's Training School between 1964 to 1967 that he and other inmates were the victims of sexual abuse by members of staff.

Enquiries identified the author of this letter to be

DOB

SPT 96

also with an address at

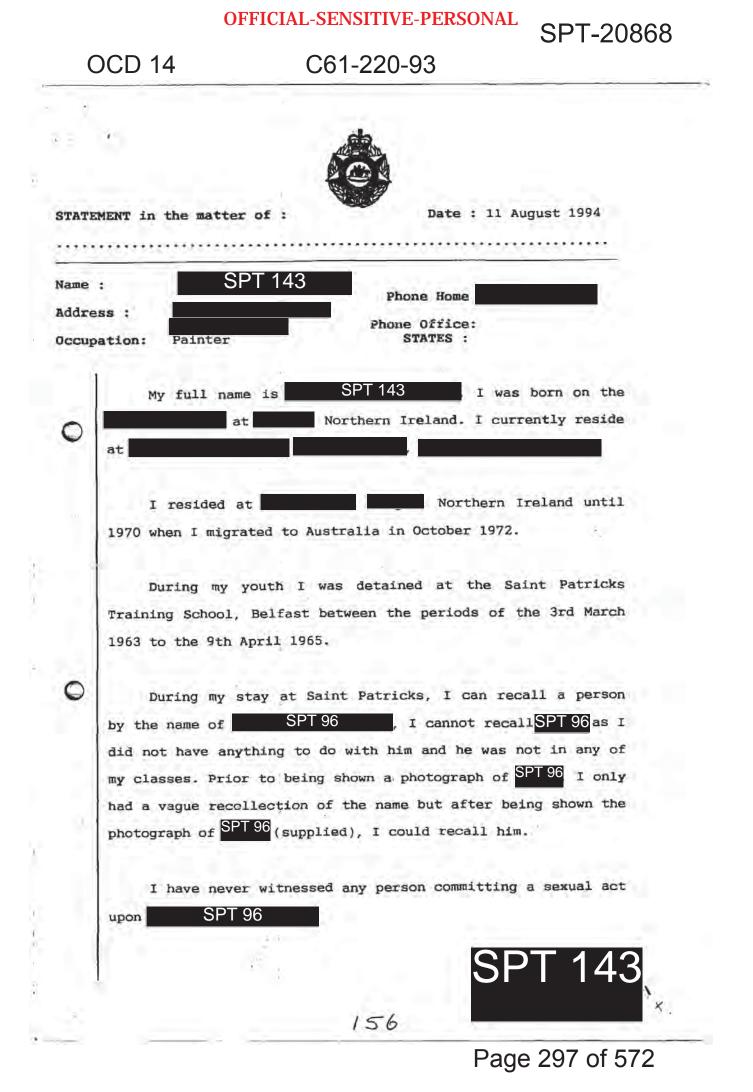
who had been detained at St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast between 13,05,64 and 23,10.66. A copy of this letter is attached at Part IV, pages 123-124.

made with SPT 96 and an interview Contact was arranged at Mountpottinger RUC Station on 26.10.93. with him interview was conducted by D/Sergeant Kildea This and D/Sergeant during which time a statement McArdle was recorded from SPT 96 In this statement, a copy of which is attached at Part II, pages 139-144, SPT 96 describes a catalogue of sexual abuse both by staff and inmates.

29.11.93 SPT 96 On was again interviewed. On this occasion he was interviewed by D/Sergeant Kildea and D/Constable Lusty at Strandtown RUC Station. During interview 2 further statements were recorded this from in relation to his alleged sexual abuse at Copies of these statements are attached St Patrick's, at Part II, pages 145-148 and pages 149-152. During

horm R 1/8

# Page 32 of 572



SPT-20869

# OCD 14

C61-220-93

STATEMENT of SPT 143 continues ..... Page 2 I can also say that during my period of detention I have never been sexually assualted by any of the staff members at the college.

Today, I have been asked by the members of the Federal Police if I have any recollection of the staff of the College at Saint Patricks at the time of my detention. I can recall a BR 83 a BR 39 who was know as the as he used to whistle all the time. I can also recall a BR 26 but I do not know his surname.

I can say that I have never seen these Brothers commit an act of indecency on any person in my presence.



#### "OATHS ACT 1867 TO 1981"

I make this solemn declaration by virtue of the provisions of the Oaths Acts 1867 to 1981 that:

- this typewritten statement by me dated 11th August 1994 and contained in the foregoing pages numbered 1 to 2 is true to the best of my knowledge and belief;
- I make it knowing that, if it were to be admitted as evidence, I would be liable to
  prosecution if I stated in it anything that I knew to be false.

Taken and declared before me at

A Justice of the Peace for the State of

£.



157

Page 298 of 572

# OCD 14

## C61-220-93

Continuation Page No 30

SPT-20608

St Patrick's by D/Sergeant McArdle who examined the content of same. There was nothing contained in any of these files in relation to the content of the school minute in the file on SPT 143

These 3 men were also interviewed by D/Sergeant McArdle at their homes.

On 08.03.94 D/Sergeant McArdle interviewed During this interview denied that he had been involved in any sexual activity with any inmates during his time in St Patrick's. He also added that he had never been sexually abused by any member of staff and that he had no knowledge that any other inmate was the victim of such abuse.

was interviewed on 14.03.94 by D/Sergeant McArdle. During this interview denied that he was involved in any sexual activity with other inmates during his time in St Patrick's. He also stated that he had no knowledge that any inmate had been the victim of sexual abuse and that he himself had never been sexually abused.

HIA 146 01.03.94 On D/Sergeant McArdle interviewed During this interview he denied that he had been involved in any sexual activity with any other inmates during his time in St Patrick's. He also stated that he had not been the victim of sexual abuse at the school. However he did state that it was rumoured in the school that BR 39 BR and BR 43 were involved in sexual abuse but that he had no personal knowledge of this.

in SPT 96 statement he alleges that an inmate of Also school, namely SPT 145 from the caught PT 96 in the BR 83 having with sex common To help identify SPT 145 SPT 96 mentioned the fact room. PT 145 that had part of

# Page 37 of 572

## **OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL**

Innin h199:

0

## OCD 14

Torn: 51/2

## C61-220-93

Enquiries revealed that SPT 145 is in fact SPT 145 DOB who was detained in St Patrick's from 07.05.63 to 13.11.65 and who was currently residing at

SPT-20609

Continuation Page No 31

On 20.01.94 D/Constable Neville and D/Constable CROMIE SPT 145 interviewed his residence. at place of SPT 96 During this interview he asked about and was BR 83 He said that he could recall SPT 96 and BR 83 but that he could not recall them doing anything.

this interview SPT 145 suggested that During there was sexual abuse going on in the school and that he believed by SPT 96 He had allegations made the no personal reinforce this belief, it was experience to based on rumour. A typed copy of the interview notes is attached at Part IV, page 129-134 for information purposes.

SPT 145 It can be seen from the content of the notes that BR 39 had an inmate by the suggested that name or as a boyfriend. Enquiries that there was revealed no boy of that name in St Patrick's during the relevant period.

SPT 145 also suggests that a Brother who was in charge of the was queer. From the information supplied SPT 145 by it was established that this Brother was in BR 1 fact DOB This particular Brother was one of a number of persons investigated in the early 1980's in relation to sexual abuse at the De La Salle Boys' Home, Kircubbin. A direction to was issued by the DPP in respect of BR 1 on prosecute number of charges of indecent assault on males. a On 05.03.82 a new direction was issued not to prosecute BR 1 due to serious ill health.

Page 38 of 572

# **OCD 14**

## C61-220-93

Continuation Page No 32 SPT 145 also suggested that the During interview following inmates of the training school might able assist be to with the enquiry, namely from SPT 128 from and the from detained in St Patrick's from 24.06.63 to 30.08.65, interviewed by D/Constable Neville on 07.02.94 was but

SPT-20610

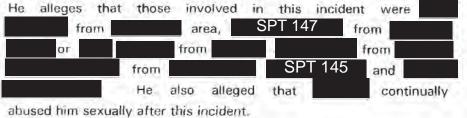
#### SPT 128 DOB

he could not assist with the enquiry.

Patrick's who was detained in St between 02.02.65 22.04.63 and was interviewed by D/Sergeant McArdle on 15.03.94 but he could not assist with the enquiry in any way.

In relation to there was no inmate of that name in St Patrick's at the relevant times.

During the first interview with SPT 96 and as recorded in statement dated 26.10.93 he describes an his occasion when he was raped in the school by a number of inmates. fourth statement recorded from SPT 96 on 26.04.94 at The Part II, page 152 also refers to this alleged incident. He also makes reference to it on the typed notes that he produced to D/Sergeant Kildea on 29.11.93 which are at Part IV, pages 125-127.



following investigations The were carried out in relation to these allegations:

mm 61/2

# Page 39 of 572

# OCD 14

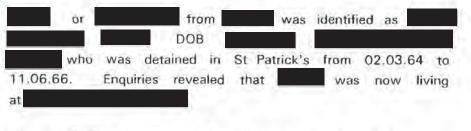
## C61-220-93

Continuation Page No 33
from the area was identified as
who was detained at St Patrick's Training School from 03.04.63 to 29.03.65. Enquiries revealed that the last known address for was and that he died approximately
SPT 147       from       was       identified       as       SPT 147         DOB       Who       was       who       was         detained       at       St       Patrick's       from       08.05.64       to       30.05.66.
Enquiries revealed that SPT 147 was living at
On 25.05.94 between 4.30 pm and 4,42 pm SPT 147 was interviewed by D/Sergeant McArdle and D/Constable Lusty at Police Station, SPT 147
reported to the police station on a voluntary attendance basis and the interview was tape recorded. Statement of D/Sergeant McArdle at Part II, pages 158-162 and
D/Constable Lusty at page 163 refers. Copy of tape

SPT-20611

During this interview SPT 147 said that he could not recall SPT 96 and he strenuously denied the allegations that SPT 96 had made against him. He said that he was not aware of any sexual abuse going on in the school but added that some of the boys would have masturbated each other

summary is also attached at Part IV, pages 135-138.



18.04.94 On was interviewed by D/Sergeant McArdle and D/Constable Lusty at RUC Station between 3.13 pm and 3.26 pm in the presence of his

Tom B1/2

Page 40 of 572

# OCD 14

1 ioni B1/2

# C61-220-93

Continuation Page No 34

SPT-20612

solicitor, Mr Adrian O'Kane. attended at the police station on a voluntary basis and the interview was tape recorded. Statement of D/Sergeant McArdle at Part II, pages 164-168 and D/Constable Lusty at Page 169 refer. A copy of the tape summary is also attached at Part IV, pages 139-142.

During this interview said that he could not recall SPT96 but strenuously denied the allegations made against him. He also stated that he was not aware of any sexual abuse going on in the school.

		fror	n	wa	s iden	tified as			
	DOB						Ĩ.		who
was	detained	at	St	Patrick's	from	02.03.64	to	03.05	6.66.
Enqui	ries rev	ealed	1	that		was		living	at

On 27.04.94 was interviewed by D/Sergeant McArdle and D/Constable Lusty at RUC Station 6.25 pm and 6.50 pm. between attended at the police station on a voluntary basis and the interview tape recorded. Statement of was D/Sergeant at Part II, pages 170-177 and D/Constale McArdle Lusty at page 178 refer. A copy of the tape summary is also attached at Part IV, pages 143-148.

During this interview stated that he could SPT 96 not recall but he denied the allegations that SPT 96 had made against him. However he did state that there he knew was sexual activity going on between inmates. but that he had never witnessed any such activity himself, he added that he had no knowledge that members of staff would have been involved.

DOR	from	was	identified	as	
DOB	DOB				

who was detained at St Patrick's Training School from 05.11.63 to 25.06.66. Enquiries revealed that the last

# Page 41 of 572

# OCD 14

## C61-220-93

Continuation Page No 35 address for known was but or has despite enquiries at both these addresses not been located. SPT 145 SPT 145 been identified as has DOB

detained who was in St Patrick's Training School from 07.05.63 to 13.11.65 and who had been residing at

As previously stated in this report at pages 31-32, SPT 145 was interviewed by D/Constable Neville and D/Constable Cromie on 20.01.94 as a potential witness.

When it became apparent that SPT 145 was also a suspect in SPT 96 the alleged rape of D/Sergeant McArdle and D/Constable Lusty enquiries at his last made known 24.05.94 while doing enquiries address on other in It was established that SPT 145 had left and his whereabouts was unknown, which is still the same.

Bearing in mind that SPT 145 had previously been interviewed it is not thought that a second interview with him would uncover anything further.

	has	been	identifi	ed as	
DOB					who
was detained at S	it Patric	k's from	m 14.06	5,65 to	24.08.67
Enquiries revealed	that	the la	st kno	wn add	lress for
was					D/Sergeant
McArdle has calle	d at	that a	ddress or	and the second se	umber of
occasions and it	was co	onfirmed	that		did stay
there at times.	Messa	ges wer	e left fo	or	to
contact D/Sergeant	McAre	de to	arrange	an interv	iew but
no contact was made.					

During the first interview with

and

d as outlined in

SPT-20613

710.03 /0117

# Page 42 of 572

# **OCD 14**

# C61-220-93

Continuation Page No 36

SPT-20614

statement he makes very serious allegations against his number of Brothers. Only one of those Brothers has а reasons already been interviewed for given in this BR 26 That Brother is DOB report. who the present day St Patrick's is of Training School.

BR 26 On 15.04.94 was interviewed at Grosvenor Road RUC Station between 10.16 am and 11.27 am by D/Sergeant McArdle and D/Constable Lusty. His solicitor, Mr Brian Gibson was present during the interview which was tape recorded. BR 26 attended at the police station on a voluntary basis. Statements of D/Sergeant McArdle at 11, Part pages 110-123 and D/Constable Lusty at Part II, page 124 refer. A copy of the taped summary is also attached at Part IV, page 107-116.

During this interview BR 26 strenuously denied the allegations that SPT <sup>96</sup> had made against him.

In addition to the statement that SPT 96 made during the first interview, he gave the following in relation to other inmates in the school at that time:

that				an	d			
oyfriends	of	BR 4	3 ;	nd	that	а	boy	from
was	the	boyfrie	nd of		Bl	R 83	3	and
He	also	stated	that	а	SF	PT 1	49	from
or		v	as se	xually	/ abu	sed	both	by
	oyfriends was He	oyfriends of was the He also	oyfriends of BR 4 was the boyfrie He also stated	oyfriends of BR 43 a was the boyfriend of He also stated that	oyfriends of BR 43 and was the boyfriend of He also stated that a	oyfriends of BR 43 and that was the boyfriend of BI He also stated that a SI	oyfriends of BR 43 and that a was the boyfriend of BR 83 He also stated that a SPT 1	oyfriends of BR 43 and that a boy was the boyfriend of BR 83 He also stated that a SPT 149

staff and inmates.

The following enquiries were made in relation to this information:

		DOB			who	was	in
St. Patrick's	from	11.03.64	to 11.0	6.66	and who	is is	now
living at					was	intervi	ewed
on 22.11.93	at	RUC	Station	by	D/Sergea	nt Mo	Ardle

hours \$172

Page 43 of 572

1

## OCD 14

FORME CO.

## C61-220-93

Continuation Page No 37

SPT-20615

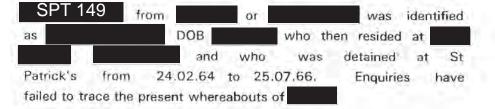
and D/Constable Neville.

this During interview insisted that he was not the victim of sexual abuse at St Patrick's and that he had no knowledge that any other inmate had been sexually abused. He denied close that he had а relationship with BR 43

In relation to as outlined at page 35 of the report. He ignored requests to be interviewed in relation to this investigation.

The boy described by SPT 96 as being from was identified as DOB originally from who was detained in St Patrick's from 23.03.63 to 23.12.65 and who now resides at

On 19,01,94 interviewed was at Police Station by D/Constable Neville and D/Constable During this interview Cromie. denied that he was the boyfriend of BR 83 and BR 39 He said that he was never sexually abused by anyone in the training school and had no knowledge that any other inmate had been the victim of sexual abuse.



### INTERVIEW WITH SPT 96 29 NOVEMBER 1993

During this interview 2 statements were recorded from SPT 96 and he also produced 3 pages of typed notes which he had prepared in relation to his recollection of sexual abuse at St Patrick's Training School, Some of the matters contained in these statements and notes have

# Page 44 of 572

DPP Subj Chie The any the BR poli inte The	ident 42 wh	Ro Be C61/220 6247/94 ALLEGA 1964 AI INJURE SP stable	yal Courts Ifast 2351 0/93	of Justice	e Belfast B	TI 3NX	TRICK'S	PO BOX	410 ING SC	HOOL BETM PT 136
DPP Subj Chie The any the BR poli inte The	Ref: ject: ef Cons ident ident 42 wh	Ro Be C61/220 6247/94 ALLEGA 1964 AI INJURE SP stable	yal Courts Ifast 2351 0/93 4 TIONS OF ND 1983 D PARTIE	of Justice	ABUSE A	TI 3NX	TRICK'S	PO BOX TRAIN	410 ING SC	HOOL BETW
DPP Subj Chie The any the BR poli inte The	Ref: ject: ef Cons ident ident 42 wh	6247/94 ALLEGA: 1964 AI INJURE SP stable	4 TIONS OF ND 1983 D PARTIE	a square		909,00 ( <u>22</u>				
Subj Chie The any the BR poli inte The	ject: ef Cons ident 42 wh	ALLEGA: 1964 AI INJURE SP stable	TIONS OF TD 1983 D PARTIE	a square		909,00 ( <u>22</u>				
The any the BR poli inte The	eviden ident 42 vb	1964 AI INJURE SP stable	ND 1983 PARTIE	a square		909,00 ( <u>22</u>				
The any the BR poli inte The	eviden ident 42 wh	nce is i								
any the BR poli inte The	ident 42 wh									
any the BR poli inte The	ident 42 wh				DIRECT	NOI				
P AT Belf for	police A.C. FCHISON Fast C: Direct	, this fi -St - I ircuit tor of Pu	known to the le shou gation	address allega ld be ro file is	was in tions, e-submith returned	If these ted for :	have perso further	not b	een in come s	and Brot terviewed menable
J	January	1995								
								HI 2 CRIME A	EADOUAR JAM 1 RECUSTO	1995 7 STON UM7
								INITS OF		ور. مرید میر

Page 6 of 572

**OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL** 

-----

Day 146

		Page 33								
1		a nun called SR217 to come and speak to you.								
2	A.	Yes, that's correct.								
3	Q.	And you told her about what happened.								
4	A.	Yes.								
5	Q.	And that resulted in you going to speak to the police.								
6	A.	Yes.								
7	Q.	We were talking about the police statement earlier. So								
8		I am just going to show it. I am not going to go into								
9		the detail of it on the screen, but I am just going to								
10		show it on the screen for the Panel. It was of								
11		20th June 1996 at 21884. So you can see, HIA51, that's								
12		your name on it and the date. You remembered the								
13		particular officer who took your statement.								
14	Α.	Yes. Actually no. I thought her same was								
15		. It's .								
16	Q.	Yes. You got the surname wrong, but you knew her name								
17		was .								
18	Α.	Yes.								
19	Q.	You remembered that. The statement runs for seven pages								
20		through to 21890. In that statement you talk about the								
21		three incidents of abuse that you want to tell the								
22		police about.								
23	Α.	Yes.								
24	Q.	And just so I put those in context, HIA51, you explain								
25		to them about something that happened to you as								

		Page 34
1		a younger boy in the community.
2	A.	Yes.
3	Q.	And you were about five or six you believe.
4	A.	Yes.
5	Q.	And that's about what two boys did to you in a derelict
6		house.
7	A.	Yes.
8	Q.	The Panel are aware of that and I am not going to go
9		into the detail of it.
10		The second incident that you describe then was when
11		you were about 12 years of age and that was when a youth
12		club leader by the name of SPT161
13	A.	Yes.
14	Q.	who was subsequently convicted of the sexual
15		abuse of boys, you describe
16	A.	40 40 it was 40 I think it was something, and
17		13 charges put against him and there was 40 children
18		also that he was charged with.
19	Q.	Yes. You and I were discussing this earlier. I was
20		explaining that in 1985 it appears that there were 13
21		charges relating to nine individuals, but he also
22		accepted that he had sexually abused 30 to 40 boys.
23	A.	Correct.
24	Q.	So there was a section of unidentified boys?
25	Α.	Of which I was one, yes.

www.DTIGlobal.com

Dav	1	4	6
Duy	_	-	v

		Page 35
1	Q.	The discussion we were having is you would have been one
2		of those boys.
3	A.	Yes, yes.
4	Q.	And he was sentenced for that abuse. You explain and
5		again I am not going to go into the detail of that
6		but you explain very serious sexual abuse that you
7		describe him engaging in
8	A.	Absolutely.
9	Q.	on a number of occasions.
10		Then the third incident that you describe is the one
11		that the Inquiry is looking at because of its terms of
12		reference.
13	A.	Uh-huh.
14	Q.	That is where you describe as a 15, turning 16, year old
15		being in St. Pat's and a BR26 you call him "BR26"
16		coming in with
17	A.	Yes. The reason but the reason why I call him BR26
18		is because anyone that would carry out an act so vile
19		and disgusting like that cannot be seen as a Brother and
20		seen as a Christian and that's my belief. That's the
21		only reason why I'm saying that and I'm stating that
22		there clearly.
23	Q.	That's fine. You know I just use, like I would with
24		you, just use the person's name as they are known. We
25		will come back to that particular incident. You

www.DTIGlobal.com

Day 146

		Page 36
1		describe those three incidents to the police then
2	A.	Uh-huh.
3	Q.	in 1996.
4	A.	Yes.
5	Q.	I was explaining to you that and I appreciate this
6		was difficult for you that the police
7	A.	Very difficult.
8	Q.	the police then interviewed the person from
9		St. Patrick's that you accuse of abusing you in
10		September of 1996.
11	A.	Yes.
12	Q.	He explained the work that he did in St. Patrick's. He
13		explained about the comic round and that at no stage had
14		he ever sexually abused any boy.
15	A.	He's a liar.
16	Q.	As a result of his I am not getting into it one way
17		or the other, HIA51. I am just setting out the factual
18		position of
19	Α.	Yes, but I am also I am also very much aware that
20		this is going on the public record. So that is why I'm
21		saying he is a liar.
22	Q.	Yes. I am going to come to the particular incident, but
23		just I am just explaining the factual chronology of
24		this.
25	A.	Absolutely. Absolutely.

Day 146

		Page 37
1	Q.	He is interviewed
2	A.	Uh-huh.
3	Q.	in September of 1996 and the allegation is put to him
4		
5	A.	Uh-huh.
б	Q.	and he denies that he
7	A.	Categorically denies.
8	Q.	he denies that he sexually abused any boy, including
9		you, and then the matter is reported on by the police to
10		the DPP, as it then was, in November of 1996, and for
11		a series of reasons that you and I were discussing
12		earlier the DPP decide not to the prosecute that man.
13		The Panel are aware you were unhappy with the
14		decision about SPT161 and also about the person
15		in St. Patrick's
16	A.	Yes.
17	Q.	and you over the last number of years
18	Α.	Have pursued that on my own.
19	Q.	Yes, and you have asked for it to be looked at and so
20		on, but the chronology of this is that then in 1999 you
21		are released on licence and then, as we were discussing,
22		in 2004, HIA51, you asked the DPP to look again, or the
23		PPS as it now was, to look again at the decision about
24		SPT161 , and you got a long letter explaining in
25		detail the reasons why the decision was made as it was

www.DTIGlobal.com

# SPT-12924

# ALLEGATIONS OF SEXUAL ABUSE AT ST PATRICK'S

NOTE OF A MEETING BETWEEN NIC AND SSI HELD ON 18 NOVEMBER 1993 AT DR MCCOY'S OFFICE, DUNDONALD HOUSE

### Background Leading to Meeting

In the interests of expediency Mrs Madden asked Mr Gallagher to appraise SSI, at the earliest opportunity, of new information which had come to light in relation to allegations of sexual abuse at St Patrick's. A SPT96 who is an ex-pupil of St Patrick's (early 1960s) has made a statement in which he names BR 26 as one of the perpetrators. as 0

Mr Gallagher had the opportunity of passing on this information on 15 November 1993 when he spoke to Mr Donnell after a meeting both were attending at Lisnevin. Dr McCoy was subsequently informed of this new information on 16 November 1993. Up to then correspondence on the SPT 134 investigation into similar allegations had been side copied to Dr McCoy appraising him of any new developments as they became known to this Division.

### Meeting on 18 November 1993

It was mutually agreed that representatives from the Division (namely Mrs Madden, Mr Johnston and Mr Gallagher) should meet urgently with SSI (namely Dr McCoy, Mr McElfatrick and Mr Donnell) to discuss fully the implications of the latest statement, in particular the allegations against BR 26

At the meeting Dr McCoy expressed the view that following allegations of sexual misbehaviour against a member of staff of any establishment such as St Patrick's the immediate action of management should be to suspend that person pending a full investigation. His concern was that if the person against whom the allegation was made remained in post there was a likelihood of further misconduct.

The Division's view was that if it was to ask the Bishop to suspend BR 26 there is a chance that he might leave the jursidiction and thus jeopardise further police action. The point was also made by this Division that the allegations referred to incidents which happened in the 1960's and that others named by SPT 96 had not yet been approached to provide corroborative evidence.

It was agreed that there was an urgent need for Dr McCoy and Mrs Madden to seek a meeting with ACC Monahan, the senior RUC officer in charge of the investigation, to discuss with him the various views and concerns expressed by the Division and by SSI.

BT14693

NOTE OF A MEETING AT CJSD BETWEEN NIO AND THE RUC TO DISCUSS ALLEGED SEXUAL MISCONDUCT AT ST PATRICK'S TRAINING SCHOOL HELD ON THURSDAY 18 NOVEMBER 1993 AT 15.00 HOURS

THOSE PRESENT:

Mr Mike McArdle RUC Mr Bob Lusty RUC Mrs Mary Madden NIO Mr Allan Johnston NIO Mr Bill Gallagher NIO Mr John Steen NIO

SPT-12926

- Mrs Madden informed the meeting that the NIO had been advised by the DHSS (Social Services Inspectorate) that DHSS had some concerns about the allegations of gross sexual misconduct at St Patrick's Training School. In particular, since allegations had been made against the current BR 26 of the School, DHSS felt that it would be appropriate to suspend the BR 26 as a precautionary measure.
- 2. It was the police view that BR 26 suspension would severely inhibit police investigations and may cause BR 26 to flee the jurisdiction.
- 3. It was accepted by all present that the NIO is in an invidious position. If BR 26 is suspended then police enquiries may well be irreparately damaged and if he is not suspended there is a slight risk of further offending.
- It was agreed that an urgent meeting should be arranged between the NIO and Senior RUC officers to air fully all respects of this case.

CP1619

SPT-12927

CONFIDENTIAL

FROM: MRS M E MADDEN CJSD 23 NOVEMBER 1993

cc: PS/PUS (L&B) Mr Legge Dr McCoy, DHS5

MR J M LYON AUS (CRIMINAL JUSTICE)

'É.R.

#### ST PATRICK'S: ALLEGATIONS OF SEXUAL ABUSE

The purpose of this submission is to inform you of:

- the recent development in the RUC inquiry into allegations of sexual abuse made by a former pupil, SPT 134 who was resident at St Patrick's Training School between 1981-1983.
- the new, and more serious allegations of abuse by the present BR 26 made by another pupil, SPT 96 who was resident at the School in the 1960's.

\* the possible links with DHSS's recent investigation into the case of SPT 135, who, as a known sex offender, was still able to work with children in a voluntary capacity with NIACRO. SPT 135 is currently serving a prison sentence for homosexual offences against boys.

and to recommend that we seek Ministerial approval to advise the Chairman of the Management Board, Bishop Farguhar, of the allegations made against the BR 26 and invite him to consider the position of BR 26 while the investigation is ongoing.

CONFIDENTIAL

# SPT-12928

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT 134 Allegations

2. In his statement SPT 134 alleges abuse by staff and pupils. He does not identify any of his alleged abusers by name but provides descriptions. The RUC has advised that of the 300 boys resident at the school during the period in question, 100 have, for various reasons, declined to be interviewed, 160 have submitted to an interview and a further 40 are still to be approached.

3. As a result of the 160 interviews the RUC has gathered sufficient evidence to bring charges against a former pupil who was later employed as a chef at the school. The RUC are presently trying to trace the current whereabouts of this person. Only one inmate SPT 136, considered an unreliable witness due to a previous conviction for perjury, has named an alleged abuser as BR 26, the current school. He also provided a description which does not fit that of the Brother.

#### SPT 96 Allegations

4. During the course of the RUC investigation into SPT 134 allegations the Sunday World published an article on 22 August (a copy is attached). This newspaper report caused SPT 96 to write to the RUC wherein he made specific allegations against Brother BR 26

5. The RUC has interviewed SPT 96 who has made a full statement of complaint to the police officers conducting the SPT 134 enquiry. In his statement SPT 96 has named, in addition to BR 26 five other members of the De La Salle Order (one of whom is deceased) as having seriously sexually abused him. He has also named persons whom, he alleges, witnessed some of the acts. The RUC has traced seven of these witnesses who are all residing in England. They have plans to approach all these individuals this week and invite them to make statements.

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12929

CONFIDENTIAL

BR 26

6. The RUC have advised us that they intend to interview BR 26 , under caution, when they have completed all their interviews arising out of both SPT 134 and SPT 96 allegations. They would hope, at that stage to have sufficient evidence to make an arrest and formally charge BR 26 , after the interview. They stress that so far they have one statement of complaint against BR 26 , which is not corroborated. SPT 136, who mentions BR 26 , did not attend the school at the same time as SPT 96

### SPT 135

7. DHSS colleagues will soon publish the report of their investigation into how SPT 135 a known sex offender, was able to obtain work in a voluntary capacity with NIACRO.

8. During the course of the DHSS Investigation St Patrick's Board of Management were asked to conduct an internal investigation into allegations of sexual abuse made by SPT 135 against unspecified persons. Bishop Farquhar, Chairman, commissioned BR 26 who subsequently reported verbally to the NIO that nothing was found which would substantiate SPT 135 allegations.

9. The RUC team investigating SPT 134 and SPT 96 allegations recently interviewed Huston. He has now made a statement describing, but not naming, a person who abused him. The RUC believe that the description matches one of the Brothers named by SPT 96. This Brother is now deceased. SPT 135 does not implicate BR 26. As a result of this fresh information Bishop Farguhar has been asked to confirm the result of the internal investigation in writing.

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12930

CONFIDENTIAL

# The Dilemma

10. I shared this information with our professional advisers, SSI, last week. Dr Kevin McCoy, Chief Inspector SSI, and I met with Superintendent Nesbitt, RUC, on Friday, 19 November to discuss this matter more fully.

11. The dilemma, facing the department, is whether to advise the Chairman of the Management Board, Bishop Farguhar, of the specific allegation made by SPT 96 against BR 26 The Bishop is already aware of allegations against unspecified individuals made by SPT 134 and SPT 135 He is presently ignorant of SPT 96 allegations.

### RUC Postion

12. The RUC are anxious that their investigation is not compromised by allowing a potential suspect to be forewarned of allegations, thereby giving him an opportunity to, at worse, leave the jurisdiction, and at best, prepare "his story". Naturally they wish to complete their inquiries and obtain corroborative evidence so that at the termination of any interview they could arrest and charge. At present they do not have sufficient evidence to cause them to want to interview

BR 26 at this stage. Nothwithstanding the outcome of further interviews the RUC have stated that they will be interviewing BR 26 under caution.

#### DHSS/SSI Advice

13. SSI, as our professional advisers, consider that, in the interests of the children presently at the school, the NIO should share this information on BR 26 with the Bishop. This would allow the Bishop to decide what the present risk is, and to take appropriate action. Although sensitive to the RUC concerns

#### CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12931

CONFIDENTIAL

(that an approach to the Bishop would be counter-productive to their inquiries) SSI consider that the NIO must act to inform management of the school and advise them of the possible course of action.

### NIO's Options

14. The NIO could elect to do nothing until the RUC have completed their inquiries. This could be some months away. If, on completion, BR 26 is arrested the NIO could be subject to criticism for allowing BR 26 to remain in a position of power and authority despite having the benefit of the SPT 96 information. The department could also be criticised by the Management Board for not giving them the opportunity of suspending BR 26 pending investigation and thereby leaving them vulnerable to criticism.

15. Informing Bishop Farguhar, on the advice of SSI is not without its difficulties. The Bishop could:

- decide to allow BR 26 to continue in his present post on the basis that the allegations are some 30 years old and unsubstantiated.
- retire BR 26 early and remove him from the school. This is defensible as BR 26 is within years of retirement.

\* suspend BR 26 pending completion of the RUC investigation.

CONFIDENTIAL

# SPT-12932

#### CONFIDENTIAL

16. Each course of action open to the Bishop presents NIO with relationship difficulties. Alerting the Bishop to one man's allegations, some 30 years old and presently unsubstantiated, could damage relationships between the NIO and representatives of the Catholic Church and the School not only at the working level but also possibly at Ministerial level. The Bishop could write to the Secretary of State to protest at NIO officials acting, in his perception, on rather flimsy information.

17. If the Bishop suspended BR 26 it is likely that the media would, on hearing this news, draw comparisons with Kincora, link the SPT 135 allegations in the DHSS report to BR 26 departure and possibly criticise Government's lack of supervision and monitoring of training schools.

18. A further difficulty in the relationships could be caused between the department and the Order if Brother **BR 26** were to be moved out of the jurisdiction. This is exactly what the police fear as important questions would remain unanswered and a problem could possibly remain elsewhere. It could leave the department in the position of dealing with members of the same Order who collectively have moved a fellow Brother out of the jurisdiction. It must also be remembered that **SPT 96** did name some seven Brothers in all.

#### Conclusion and Recommendation

19. Despite these concerns SSI take the view that a serious allegation has been made, by a man (whom the RUC have judged to be reliable) against BR 26 of the school. They consider the allegations to be believable despite their age - because of their experience from the Kincora Enguiry. In SSI's view

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12933

#### CONFIDENTIAL

the children presently in the school are entitled to protection and the department must put their welfare first. NIO must be seen to act on a written statement of complaint to the RUC which makes very serious allegations against BR 26

20. There are two options open to the department:

- to ignore SSI advice and do nothing until the RUC has completed its investigation, or
- to advise the Bishop now of the allegations made by SPT 96 and invite him to consider
   BR 26 position.

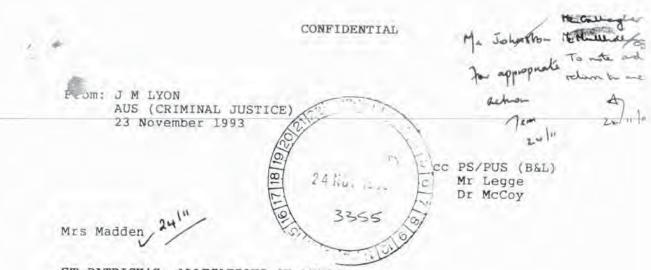
There are advantages and difficulties with the two options. Either will require Ministerial approval in my view. Recognising the sensitivities of this issue and before going to Ministers, I would be obliged if you could advise whether you are content with the recommendation I propose to offer which is to accept our professional advisers recommendation to approach the Bishop now.

C MARY E MADDEN

BT15093

CONFIDENTIAL

# SPT-12934



ST PATRICK'S: ALLEGATIONS OF ABUSE

This is to respond to your note of 23 November reporting the current position in respect of allegations of sexual abuse against staff in St Patrick's School.

2. Allegations like these are serious and deserve to be fully investigated. I am glad to see that that is what is the RUC is doing.

3. We know - and I am sure SSI will confirm - that such allegations are not uncommon in institutions dealing with children. It is part of work in this area. Not all are substantiated. Some are. It would not be right to make a presumption either way on the basis of an allegation. In such instances, while having regard to the position of the investigating authorities, it must be right that we follow the best practice as advised by SSI.

4. I think it would be helpful at this stage if SSI were to let us have his advice on the basis of the information in your submission.

5. Subject to Dr McCoy's considered advice on what is the accepted procedure in cases at this stage in their development, I believe it would be right and appropriate to inform the Bishop of the allegations and to invite him to consider what action might appropriately be taken. I would hope we could offer him the advice of SSI. We might also, I hope, be able to offer him a consultation with the RUC, if the RUC would agree to that.

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12935

# CONFIDENTIAL

6. My inclination would be to initiate this at a meeting with the Bishop - which I would be happy to chair if that would help followed up by a letter. I assume that the meeting would provide information about the allegations against all the staff identified by SPT96 and not just BR 26 Any meeting would, I suggest, best be arranged after this week so as to take account of any immediate outcome from the RUC's approach to potential witnesses in England.

7. I agree that it would be helpful to brief Ministers. My own view, however, is that a decision about approaching the Bishop is one for us appropriately to take - but that we should inform Ministers in advance what we have decided.

8. Subject to colleagues' views, therefore, I suggest we await Dr McCoy's guidance and, subject to that, you prepare a submission to Ministers informing them of our intention to brief the Bishop.

J M LYON DH 25321

à.

CONFIDENTIAL

9245

SPT-12936



### ST PATRICK'S: ALLEGATIONS OF ABUSE

PUS has seen your minute of 23 November to Mr Lyon, and Mr Lyon's response of the same date. PUS has commented that he agrees very much with Mr Lyon's advice, and especially with paragraph 7, which records Mr Lyon's view that a decision about approaching the Bishop is one for us to take, but that we should inform Ministers in advance what we have decided.

ye Johnston 29/11/93 To note. Jem

David Million

D T MCILROY PRIVATE SECRETARY 25 NOVEMBER 1993

CONFIDENTIAL

JEN/L/11/97/48209

SPT-12937

CONFIDENTIAL

FROM J M LYON AUS (CRIMINAL JUSTICE) 25 NOVEMBER 1993

> cc: PS/PUS(B&L) Mr Legge Dr McCoy Mr McElfatrick

MRS MADDEN

A.

ST PATRICK'S: ALLEGATIONS OF ABUSE

I discussed with Dr McCoy his helpful note to you of 25 November about the policy on handling complaints about children in residential care.

In the course of our discussion, we considered the particular 2. position of the current allegations against some St Patrick's staff which alleged the commission of serious criminal offences. While this was not the same as the commission of disciplinary breaches which appeared to be the focus of the DHSS circular and additional board guidance attached to Dr McCoy's note - Dr McCoy confirmed that, in such cases, the appropriate procedure was for the board of management to be informed. This was fully in accord with established precedents which related specifically to allegations about offences occurring some years before the date of the It was not unusual for the police investigating an allegation. allegation to be concerned that any action taken by the board might compromise the conduct of those investigations. The normal practice was for the police to appoint a liaison officer who would liaise with the board of management about the conduct of the investigation.

3. Dr McCoy confirmed also that, on the basis of precedents and best practice, it was for the board of management to decide what action to take in respect of the staff who were subject to the allegations. The Department would only wish to consider intervening if the decision was thought to be unreasonable on the basis of the circumstances of the particular case.

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12938

#### CONFIDENTIAL

-2-

4. Inderstand from Dr McCoy that he believes the RUC would be amenable to attending a meeting with the Bishop.

5. If I have inaccurately reflected Dr McCoy's further guidance, I am sure he will let us know. Otherwise, I suggest that you confirm with the RUC that we propose to see the Bishop, and would like to invite a representative of the RUC to attend. I think it would be helpful if Dr McCoy were also to be present and I am grateful for his willingness to do this.

6. I doubt if it would be helpful for our first contact with the Bishop on this matter to be through a deputation of the size which will be required. I suggest, therefore, that, once you have recontacted the RUC about their attendance at the meeting, and followed up their contact with the alleged witnesses in England, you call on the Bishop to let him know what has surfaced and invite him to agree to a fuller discussion - perhaps involving also Father McCann - a day or two later.

Tolu you

J M LYON DH Ext 25321

9281

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12939

CONFIDENTIAL

KC-480.93

FROM: K F McCOY Chief Inspector Social Services Inspectorate cc: PS/PUS (B&L) Mr Legge Mr Lyon Mr McElfatrick

DATE: 25 November 1993

Mrs Madden Northern Ireland Office

ST PATRICK'S: ALLEGATIONS OF ABUSE

In his minute of 23 November to you Mr Lyon asked me to let you have my advice on action to take in the light of the information in your submission.

The policy on handling of complaints about children in residential care in Health and Social Services Boards and voluntary organisation homes is set out in the DHSS Circular HSS(CC) 2/85 entitled "Provision of Information to and a Complaints Procedure for Children in Residential Care and their Parents". Paragraphs 40-44 of this Circular deals with the investigation of complaints. A copy of the Circular is attached.

The Circular has been implemented by Health and Social Services Boards and a copy of the Eastern Board's Complaints Procedure is also attached. Section D of this document sets out detailed procedures regarding complaints against a member of staff.

I am not sure if similar guidance was issued to training schools and if such detailed procedures were developed. However a report of the Inspection of Shamrock House Close Supervision Unit at St Patrick's conducted in January 1992 contained the following paragraph under the heading "Complaints".

"Staff procedural guidelines cover the policy on complaints procedure. However, although the guidelines set out, in general terms, the arrangements for dealing with the complaint the instructions need to be expanded and developed further. A document should be prepared for the information of boys and their families. The Inspectors discussed this with Senior Management and recommended that a document, similar to that currently being introduced in Health and Social Services Boards Children's Homes, should be produced and made available to the young people in Slemish."

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12940

#### CONFIDENTIAL

I understand that Mr Dummigan was asked by St Patrick's to head up a small committee to consider the extent to which the school could make use of the Board's system but we don't know what has happened as a result of the work of that group.

The Eastern Board procedure represents best practice in this area at present and I would confirm my earlier advice which is that the Bishop should be informed of the allegations which have been made and that he be advised about possible courses of action.

In the event of a meeting being held with the Bishop I would be willing to participate if you and colleagues thought this was useful and appropriate.

Volu las K F MCCOY

CONFIDENTIAL

SPT-12941

Reference Note for the Record I spoke to sup Neshit about the suggestion that a maker of the Ruce shared attand the proposed meet with the Bestrap and Conver H' Cam. Supt Nerlick ad we that he has descensed this with his supe they have seended that it would not be approp make for the RUC to altend, I shard this imponetion with De Mc Coy on Enday 20 ented he would November who coproved support and undetable we fulle screed into the admissibility of the RUC attending. hable - heres a toute to hadon He hyper nos and a 2.000 11.30 0 CODE 18 77

Page 58

1	A.	Oh, most certainly, yes.
2	Q.	And if I could just ask you to explain to the Panel both
3		of these men were heavily involved in assisting in
4		St. Patrick's. Can you give the Panel because again
5		there's not necessarily documentation to convey what you
б		were explaining to me. Can you explain to the Panel the
7		level of involvement of these two men in particular and
8		therefore how they would have known you in the way that
9		they appear to have said they did?
10	Α.	Both of these reverend gentlemen were at different times
11		chaplain to the training school. In the case of Father
12		McCann he was chaplain there for ten years and then he
13		moved on to parochial work. In the case of Bishop
14		Farquhar he was chaplain there for a number of years and
15		then he moved on to higher things, and then both of them
16		retained a tremendous interest in the school and were
17		very regular callers to the school informally, and yet
18		again and I think we might have touched on it earlier
19		on this morning an awful lot of very valuable work
20		was done in these informal visits and chats and
21		discussions about the school and the problem we were
22		having in the school and the things that were going
23		exceptionally well they shouldn't be forgotten about
24		either and the help we got from these two people was
25		just simply enormous on a very, very regular basis.

Page 60 1 what happened. 2 And --0. 3 Α. And we would have done a report to Ministers on the back of that information coming in indicating and letting 4 them know that was the outcome and what our next steps 5 б would be, which would be around monitoring the 7 situation, keeping in touch with the police, and if 8 there were any further allegations made, what steps we would then take, but those are the sort of reports. 9 10 Q. I am right in -- I am right in saying, Mary, that your 11 independent recollection at this remove effectively ends there. 12 13 Yes. Α. 14 Q. If the material is available beyond that, you would be able to refresh what was done at what time by whom --15 16 Α. Correct. -- and so on in terms of what the police communicated, 17 Q. 18 but ultimately the Panel are aware that no prosecution 19 was directed, but the issue that is at work here is the 20 approach taken by the bishop and the board, as it were, 21 the diocesan representatives, was contrary to what would 22 have been the understood position in life at that point in time --23 24 Α. Yes. Q. -- certainly in the public service. 25

### HIA Inquiry

Page 55

1 "They undertook to consider the matter urgently and 2 come back to us with their decision, which they 3 subsequently did."

Now Mary Madden's recollection, because it doesn't 4 seem to be based on a document as such, was that when 5 Bishop Farguhar and Canon McCann, whichever of them 6 contacted her after the meeting or possibly her 7 colleague, what she recollected was that they were told 8 9 that the allegations were put to you and you had denied them vehemently, and you had confirmed you would submit 10 to a police interview under caution at any time. You 11 wouldn't leave the jurisdiction and so on. 12

The Management Board had discussed the matter and decided that they were unproven allegations. There was a strong denial of wrongdoing. They therefore would not remove you from your position \_\_\_\_\_.

17 So just before I ask you the question, the context 18 of this, because I am trying to summarise a huge volume of material at one time, you have become 19 . These allegations then surface towards 20 in 21 , and what is being said here is that the 22 when the Bishop Farquhar and Canon McCann become aware of them, they -- although they don't believe them 23 themselves, they take those allegations to you and ask 24 you about them and say, according to Mary Madden 25

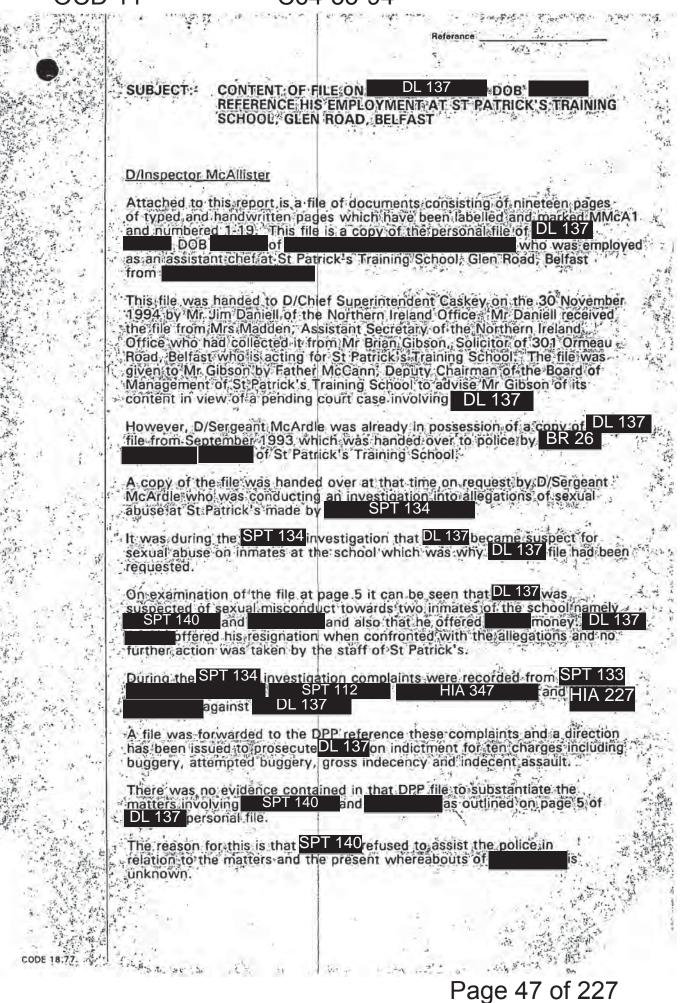
		Page 56
1		thereafter, that you said you weren't leaving, they were
2		not true and you would submit to a police investigation,
3		if that's what was required.
4		Can you remember these matters ever being brought to
5		your attention by Bishop Farquhar and Canon McCann?
б	Α.	No.
7	Q.	And when you said that to me earlier, I frankly
8		responded to you, and I am going to ask you about it
9		now, this isn't the type of thing you would forget,
10		BR26.
11	Α.	Not easily. One would never forget it.
12	Q.	Effectively you have been made the subject of what for
13		you are untrue gross allegations of an abuse of trust as
14		well as sexual impropriety with a boy in your care, and
15		two men that you have an enormous amount of respect for
16		are coming to you to have that discussion. So on your
17		psyche alone that would be a rather dramatic exchange
18		that you are unlikely to forget. Is that fair?
19	Α.	Absolutely.
20	Q.	Your recollection is that while you were certainly
21		spoken to by the police and were interviewed about these
22		things, and no doubt the allegations were made and were
23		being dealt with, you don't remember being engaged in
24		a discussion by anyone from the Management Board about
25		these allegations and your position?

Page 103 the suggestion that this particular man that you got to 1 know very well would have been interfering with 2 children. 3 I find that incredible both from the time that 4 Α. Yes. 5 I would have been in St. Pat's, because if I can put it into today's parlance, BR26 had ample opportunity to 6 7 groom me, because he was dealing with me at probably the 8 most vulnerable time in my life, and if he wanted to, he 9 could have, as I say, groomed me, and we spent a lot of time together, and I have to say I never ever sensed 10 11 that there was anything other than concern and support 12 from him, and I find it very hard to believe that he 13 would have interfered or in any way abused anyone else, because to me that was not the man that I knew and it's 14 15 not the man I know. SPT125, one of the questions I was asking you at the end 16 Q. of our conversation, we all hear and the Panel has heard 17 18 much criticism about juvenile justice systems and the system letting people down and not providing for people 19 or helping them back on their feet, and I was discussing 20 with you that you are probably from your own words 21 22 an example that that's not always the case. 23 Α. No. It is not always bad news. Can you explain to the 24 Q. 25 Panel, reflecting back, how the Training School Order

# OCD 11

# C64-35-94

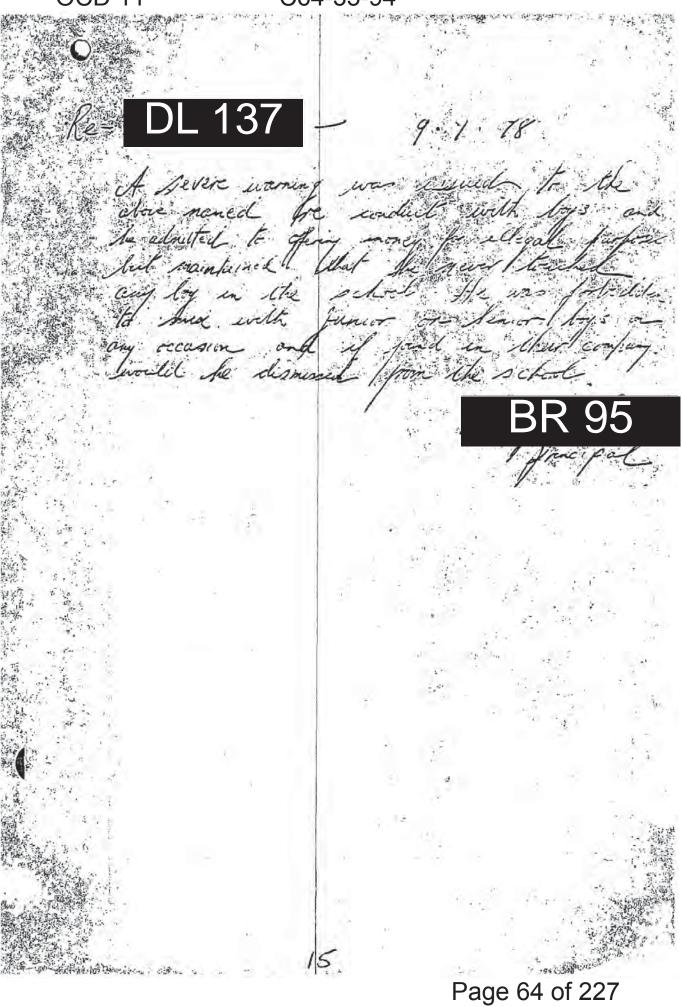
SPT-21365



# OCD 11

C64-35-94

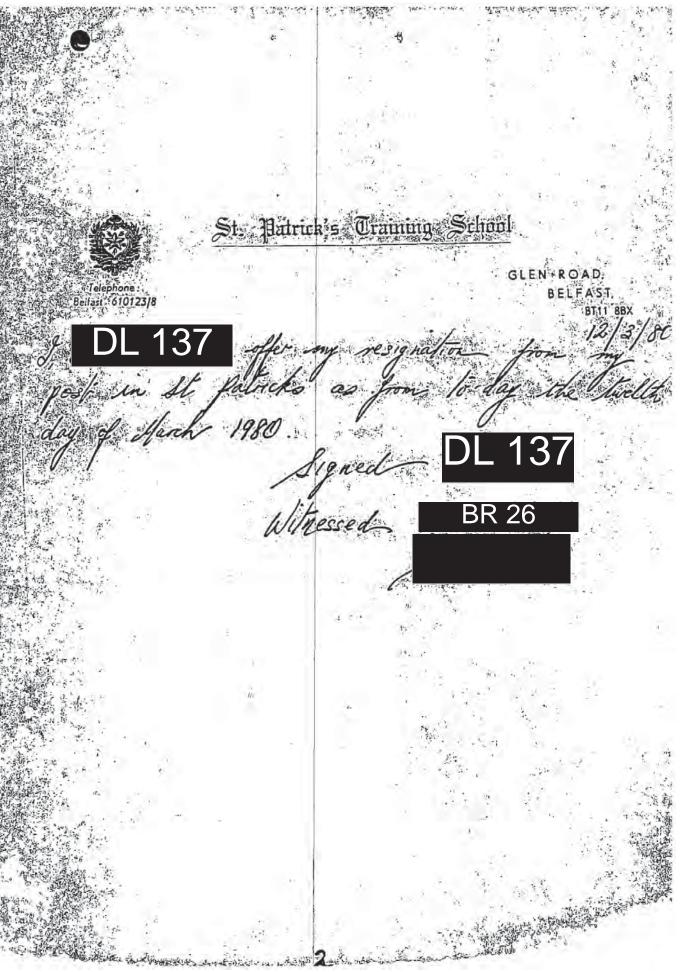
SPT-21382



# OCD 11

# C64-35-94

# SPT-21369



Page 51 of 227

		Page 44
1	Q.	DL137. I am going to just bring up on the screen the
2		documents you and I were looking at, but what you were
3		explaining to me and I am going to summarise it, and
4		then you can correct me, SPT53, where I get it wrong
5		that you were working in the senior school and you came
6		across a boy that you knew, SPT140 who was
7		sitting on the bench in the seniors' room. You were
8		explaining to me how the boys used to not sit on the
9		bench itself, but sit on the top of the bench with their
10		feet on the bench, the radiators, and he was crying.
11		You had a discussion with him about what was wrong and
12		he was reluctant to tell you, but eventually he
13		explained to you that he had been propositioned, as it
14		were, was the word you used for me, that DL137 had
15		offered him money if he would allow him or
16		cigarettes sorry you said to me cigarettes
17	Α.	Cigarettes.
18	Q.	if he would allow him to put his hand down his
19		underpants.
20	Α.	That's correct, yes.
21	Q.	And if we can look at 21372, this is a document the
22		Panel will have seen before, SPT53. You were looking at
23		it with me this morning. It seems to be BR95, who was
24		at the time. You explained to me that you
25		told SPT140 to sit there, and if anyone came near

		Page 45
1		him and wanted to move him on, you told him to tell them
2		you were coming back and he was to stay where he was,
3		and you went down to the main office
4	Α.	Uh-huh.
5	Q.	and saw BR95.
б	Α.	That's correct.
7	Q.	You were saying to me you think this is the first time
8		that you had ever come across anything like this where
9		a member of staff was potentially doing something wrong
10		with a boy.
11	Α.	Absolutely.
12	Q.	And you said to me you weren't sure whether he had
13		committed an offence or not, because SPT140 was
14		not telling you that he touched him as such, but that he
15		propositioned him?
16	Α.	That's correct, yes.
17	Q.	And you went and told BR95, and we were doing some
18		recollecting over the precise events, which were a long
19		time ago, but it seems that BR95 did take some action in
20		that the documents show him bringing DL137 in and
21		ultimately two days later it seems DL137 resigned from
22		the school, but am I right in saying that you weren't
23		aware we discover in 1994 four other boys who claim
		1
24		they were abused by DL137 and he was convicted of

		Page 46
1	Α.	Yes.
2	Q.	You weren't aware of anyone other than SPT140 at
3		the time this happens in 1980?
4	A.	Absolutely, not.
5	Q.	I was showing you a document that surprised you in terms
6		of your recollection.
7	Α.	Yes.
8	Q.	If we look at 21369, we can see that it's the
9		resignation letter from DL137 and it is dated 12th
10		March 1980. So that's two days after, according to
11		BR95's record, he was told about DL137, although you
12		think he was never back in the school from you from
13		the day you told BR95, you think he was never back again
14		other than maybe to be dealt with?
15	Α.	My recollection he was never back in the school, no.
16	Q.	And this document is him resigning his position. It
17		seems to be witnessed by BR26 and then by you.
18	Α.	Yes.
19	Q.	You couldn't when we were talking about this, you
20		don't have a memory of that happening.
21	Α.	I didn't remember that.
22	Q.	You thought when did you your Inquiry statement that he
23		had been dismissed.
24	Α.	My recollection was that he was dismissed, but if
25		I signed it at that time, he obviously wasn't dismissed.

Page 46

1 Management, who were simply told in the normal run of 2 things was resigning at the same time 3 as the gardener was moving on. He doesn't seem to have 4 reported it to the police.

5 Can you remember much discussion with you and with 6 other Brothers about, "How do we deal with this, the 7 fact that it is being said to us that a member of staff 8 is propositioning sexually boys?"

9 In the first instance if you hear things, you know, you Α. 10 become very, very alert and you would make it your 11 business to have your eyes and ears well open. Having 12 said that, you have to sift out through what you get and 13 have you got concrete evidence? Now in the case of DL137 BR95 called me and asked -- told me that SPT53 had 14 15 brought this young lad in and he told them that he was 16 propositioned by DL137. The spoke to DL137 17 and seemingly he admitted it and he resigned, and BR95 18 asked me to witness the letter of resignation, which I did and SPT53. That was the first I had heard of that 19 particular incident just as it was enacted in the 20 21 office, called to sign his resignation.

Having said that, there were rumours, yes, but nothing -- nothing for me to go on positively.

25 Q. About him?

		Page 12
1	Q.	What about your senior staff? I mean, could you have
2		gone and spoken to the senior staff or did you feel they
3		were in the same position?
4	Α.	The senior staff were in the same position, yes.
5	Q.	One person we know who was convicted of abusing children
б		in the home is DL137, and we know that he abused boys
7		between 1977 and 1980, and I wondered what your
8		experience was of him. Were you aware of anything
9		untoward between him, or what is your knowledge?
10	Α.	I was aware of his background, his recent background,
11		again which I didn't take too lightly to at the end of
12		it. I tried to discourage the young people from having
13		any contact with him at the end of it. I refused point
14		blank he always went to the swimming pool. I refused
15		point blank to let any of the children in the junior
16		school to go to the swimming pool when he was there, and
17		again he was I think he was barred from attending
18		from going to the pool at the end of it. Again I didn't
19		like I didn't like DL137. I didn't like him being
20		there. I didn't like him to have contact with any of
21		the children.
22	Q.	I think you explained to me that there had been rumour
23		and gossip within the community outside of St. Pat's
24	Α.	Yes. Uh-huh. Yes.
25	Q.	in relation to this man

### 13 October 2015

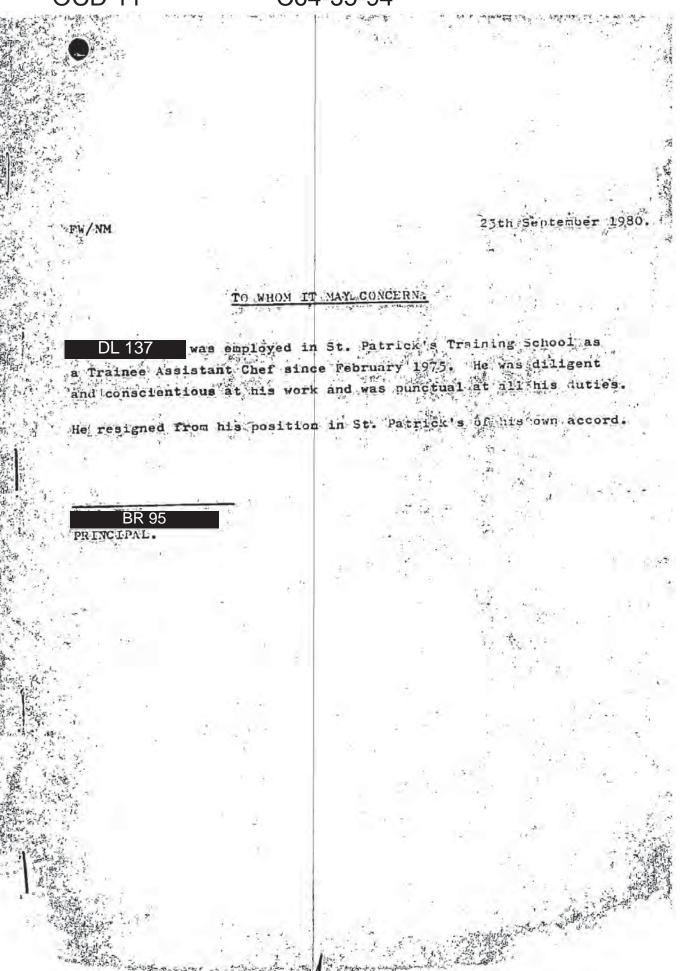
		Page 20
1		flows out of that is whether there were any others who
2		were ever dealt with in the same way, and again that's
3		something we will pick up with BR26, because it is not
4		something you would know anything about.
5	A.	Correct. Yes.
6	Q.	We then come to I was discussing with you this
7		morning the incident involving DL137, who was
8		the in St. Patrick's. BR95 was the
9		l of St. Patrick's at the time between and
10		, and I was drawing to your attention again, Brother
11		Francis, that he received allegations of sexual
12		propositioning by DL137 to a boy in and
13		gave him a warning at the time, and it appears and
14		again one can only rely on what is in the content of
15		the minutes of the Board of Management and, of course,
16		that never speaks to what might have been said that's
17		not recorded in minutes
18	A.	Yes.
19	Q.	the Panel are cognisant of that but there is no
20		record that the Board of Management was told about that
21		development. He obviously was warned rather than
22		dismissed.
23	Α.	Uh-huh.
24	Q.	It appears that BR95 did not tell the Provincial about
25		it and it appears that he did not tell the police about

SPT-80999 april 3th 1980 The meeting of April 30th was shaind by His Soudship the Balap. Also present were story Rev. Mign Mullaly, archdesca Montague, #. Wekellop, Le Muleann Fr. Whinly Fr Murphy & Fr. Myanny An apology was received from Fo Damagh The minutes of the January meeting were reads approved & regred arising from the minutes the Secretary revisalated members with a copy of the Board' relement to the Minuten and a roppy of the Minuterineply. Staff Resignations & appointments: The P nincipal informed the Board ofthe resignation of -temporary informed the Board ofthe resignation of chif in the Brothers' Revidence and of this replacement by Principal also informed the Board of the resignation of DL 137 who was an arristant shop in the school fitchen. No replacement had been found for DL 137 bours: The Secretary informed the Board that (technician) had nequerted expenses for a week's coaching in Badminton at Pargo in Scotland ho is includ with receation activities and rammitted to taking reloal teams this request was spyroved by the Board. The Secretary also recommended grant and for the completion of B. Ed count to at It Josephi In School bollege, This was approved by the Board.

SPT-21368

## OCD 11

## C64-35-94



Page 50 of 227

### MANGAN MEDICAL SERVICES LTD NI065907 Dr Brian Mangan MD MRCPsych

Email:

Medical Associates, 25 Derryvolgie Avenue, Belfast 9. Appointments and Correspondence to: Tel: 07981388229 Bluestone Unit, Craigavon Area Hospital Lurgan Road, Craigavon

SPT-30158

Our ref: Bm/gg

Your ref: BEG/005/0019FS/FMcC

manganmedical@googlemail.com

5 July 2010

Higgins Hollywood Deazley Solicitors 523 Antrim Road Belfast BT15 3BS

MEDICO-LEGAL REPORT ON

## SPT 113

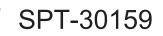
Date of Birth:

#### Introduction

I interviewed the above-named plaintiff at Craigavon Area Hospital on 5 July 2010 at the request of Higgins Hollywood Deazley. Solicitors, for the purposes of preparing this medico-legal report. I understand SPT 113 is seeking compensation for psychological injuries he developed as a consequence of childhood sexual abuse whilst in care. I had access to a copy of the plaintiff's general practitioner notes and records.

Plaintiff's Account of Childhood Traumatic Experiences and Subsequent Psychological Impact

SPT 113 informed me he was physically, mentally and sexually abused whilst in care. He explained that he was placed in care at the age of approximately 7. Initially he was placed in Nazareth Lodge in Belfast and subsequently transferred to the Convent of Mercy in Newry. He was later placed in St Patrick's Training School on the Glen Road in Belfast in and around 1979. He explained that he was frequently beaten with sticks whilst in care. He explained that he was also physically assaulted by staff and made to stand against a wall for long periods. He said he was treated harshly when he was bathed. He explained that his back was scrubbed with a deck scrubber until his skin was raw and began to bleed. He explained on several occasions he was placed in a large tumble dryer for punishment. He said that he was told by nuns that he didn't belong to a family and instead belonged to the nuns and God and "the devil is in you". He





placed in the Young Offenders Centre. He explained that he wanted to obtain a criminal record. He explained that he was convicted of stealing an ambulance. He explained that he has received custodial sentences of 12 and 10 years duration. He estimates that he has had 80 convictions. He was released from prison 5 years ago. He explained he now feels he is too old to return to a prison environment.

He reports that he was in paid employment 3 years ago. He was employed in security work on a building site for approximately a year. He is currently unemployed.

SPT 113 informed me he began dating at the age of 15 or 16. He married his first wife at the age of 24. The marriage ended 8 years later. He informed me his first wife developed alcoholism and became a prostitute. He has 3 children from this relationship aged He continues to have contact with his elder children and but does not have contact with his son who has been fostered.

He describes difficulties in his relationship with his partner He explained that he is intensely jealous and does not like to see his partner in the company of other men. He reports ongoing difficulties controlling aggressive impulses.

He informed me that he has few interests. He does go to a gym every other day and takes his dog out for a walk. He explained he spends long periods sitting at home.

## Family History

The patient's father died 8-9 years ago at the age of 53. He had suffered a heart attack. Mr SPT 113 was in prison at the time of his father's death. He describes his father as "a very hyper man". He explained that despite his imprisonments and periods of his life in care he remained close to his father. He informed me his father was employed as a window closers. It is not in the second seco

ins a window cleaner. He received a He is uncertain of the age of his

before his mother's death.

He reports that he is eldest of a sibship of 4. He explained that his sister and has a history of mental health problems. He informed me his sister committed suicide 5-6 years ago at the age of 36. He believes his sister's death related to traumatic experiences whilst in care. The plaintiff's younger siblings were also placed in care. He believes his sister has a conviction for theft.

SPT-30160

## SPT-30161

1

### Previous Medical History

The patient informed me he experienced a stroke whilst imprisoned in Maghaberry prison 6 years ago. He said he was paralysed down the left side of his body. He also has been treated for stomach ulceration.

## Previous Psychiatric History

The patient informed me he has attended psychiatrists whilst in prison. He has a history of deliberate self-harm from the age of 16/17. He explained he swallowed light bulbs and razor blades. He continued engaging in deliberate self-harm for several years. He explained that he has been prescribed courses of Temazepam for sleep disturbance, the last time being 2 weeks ago. In the past he has been prescribed medication for his anxiety problems but has difficulties tolerating prescribed medications.

## Substance Misuse History

The patient began smoking at the age of 12 or 13. He smokes 20 cigarettes per day. He informed me he drank himself into a stupor at the age of 13 when he consumed a bottle of whiskey. He subsequently developed hypothermia. As a consequence of this experience he did not drink alcohol again.

He reports a history of drug addiction. He explained that he was taking cocaine on a daily basis until approximately 3 months ago. He was taking up to one ounce of cocaine daily. He began using amphetamines at the age of 16 or 17 and continued to use this drug until approximately 4 months ago. He used amphetamines 2 or 3 nights per week "to block things out". He began smoking cannabis at the age of 14. He still smokes cannabis on a daily basis up to 7 cannabis joints daily. He explained that for a year he misused solvents at the age of 12. He has not used intravenous drugs.

## Forensic History

SPT 113 informed me he has been in prison for a total of approximately 20 years. His first offence was in 1979 for taking and driving away a vehicle. He believes he has approximately 20 convictions for car theft. His first custodial sentence was for 6 months in a Young Offenders Centre. He explained he was also imprisoned in the Maze prison for possession of a firearm. He served 2 years of a 4 year sentence. He received a 12 year custodial sentence for conspiracy to armed robbery and a 10 year sentence for armed robbery, imprisonment and kidnapping. He explained that he has about 80 convictions.

## SPT-30162

Current Medication Losec and Plavix.

#### Mental State Examination

The patient was co-operative throughout the interview. He was distressed when talking about his difficulties. He continues to describe difficulties falling and remaining asleep. He describes ongoing nightmares relating to his childhood sexual abuse and physical abuse. He describes hypervigilance and a heightened startle reflex. He reports problems with irritability and mood swings. He describes ongoing problems with sexual intimacy. The patient had no difficulties with attention and concentration during the course of the interview. There was no abnormality of recent memory.

### Review of General Practitioner Notes and Records

The patient's notes and records confirm his admission to the Belfast City Hospital on the 1 June 2008 with a two day history of haematemesis. The patient was diagnosed as suffering from a gastro-oesophageal reflux disease with oesophagitis. It is documented he had a previous history of gastro-intestinal bleeding and a possible cerebrovascular accident in 2006.

SPT 113 records contain correspondence from Dr Una O'Hegarty, staff grade Forensic Psychiatrist dated 22 April 2004. It is documented "SPT 113 is a 37 year old married man who has never worked and is currently serving an 8 year sentence for armed robbery related offences. He does describe intermittent anxiety and depressive symptoms for most of his life but does not appear to have seen these as a significant problem until recently. He suffered a cerebrovascular accident in June 2003 and was recently treated in the Royal Victoria Hospital. In February 2004 he was moved from Maghaberry to Magilligan due to an alleged loyalist plot to murder him there". It is documented his mood had deteriorated significantly since this move. "He now feels constantly anxious and worried, particularly about the possibility of a further cerebrovascular attack". It is documented he had been placed on the sex-offenders wing for his own protection. It is documented he found his sister's suicide in 2001 difficult to cope with. There was no evidence of a significant depressive illness.

Correspondence from Dr Gibson, Consultant Neurologist dated 29 July 2003 confirms the patient was admitted to the Northern Ireland Neurology Service in the Royal Victoria Hospital from 20 June 2003 – 30 June 2003 for brain stem stroke.

The patient's computerised notes and records confirm he was involved in a road traffic accident in November 2001. An entry of the 28 November 2001 indicates he had problems initiating and

# SPT-30163

maintaining sleep, "stress related". An entry of the 28 December 2001 reports "anxiety state postpetrol bombing, no alcohol, denies recent drug usage". An entry of the 22 April 2004 reports "anxiousness".

The patient's records contain an entry of the 24 June 2002 reporting that he had tonsillectomy in 1971, that he suffered from dyspepsia and was a smoker. It is documented he had problems with anxiety.

childhood post-traumatic stress disorder

### Opinion

Diagnosis

substance dependency

This 43 year old man suffered physical, sexual and emotional abuse whilst in care. As a consequence of his traumatic experiences in care he developed childhood post-traumatic stress disorder. Post-traumatic stress disorder arises as a delayed or protracted response to a stressful event or situation of either brief or long duration of an exceptionally threatening or catastrophic nature which is likely to cause pervasive distress in almost anyone. His post-traumatic stress disorder was characterised by distressing flashbacks and nightmares occurring against a background of emotional constriction and avoidance behaviour. **SPT 113** developed significant problems of hyperarousal characterised by hypervigilance, a heightened startle reflex, difficulties falling and remaining asleep, irritability and difficulties controlling aggressive impulses.

In my opinion SPT 113 emotional difficulties in childhood had a significant bearing on his development of antisocial behaviours. He reports significant conduct disturbance and substance misuse from early adolescence. The patient's early separation from his parents and the death of his mother whilst in childhood would have predisposed him to developing a more protracted traumatic stress response following his first experiences whilst in care.

SPT 113 has had lifelong problems with substance dependency. I am of the opinion his traumatic experiences in childhood would have increased his vulnerability to developing problems with substance dependency. By his own admission SPT 113 set out to engage in criminal behaviour from an early age. He only had very brief periods of paid employment. His lifelong involvement in criminal behaviour would have also had a significant bearing on the chronicity of his addiction problems.

SPT 113 continues to describe problems in adulthood with sexual intimacy arising from his childhood sexual abuse. He continues to describe distressing nightmares and flashbacks in relation to sexual abuse which took place in St Patrick's training college. The suicide of Mr SPT 113 sister would have also been a maintaining factor for problems with substance dependency.

## SPT-30164

In my opinion SPT 113 no longer meets ICD10 or DMS4 criteria for post-traumatic stress disorder but continues to show evidence of chronic emotional health as a consequence of his traumatic experiences.

### Declaration

I declare that: (1)

- I understand that my primary duty in furnishing written reports and giving evidence is to assist the court and that this take priority over any duties which I may owe to the part or parties by whom I have been engaged or by whom I have been paid or am liable to be paid. I confirm that I have complied and will continue to comply with this duty:
- I have endeavoured in my reports and in my opinions to be accurate and to have covered (2)all relevant issues concerning the matters stated, which I have been asked to address, and the opinions expressed represent my true and complete professional opinion;
- I have endeavoured to include in my report those matters of which I have knowledge and (3) of which I have been made aware which might adversely affect the validity of my opinion;
- (4)
- I have indicated the sources of all information that I have used; (5)
- I have where possible formed an independent view on matters suggested to me by others including my instructing lawyers and their client; where I have relied upon information from others, including my instructing lawyers and their client, I have so disclosed in my (6)
- I will notify those instructing me immediately and confirm in writing if, for any reason, my existing report or opinion requires any correction or qualification; I understand that: (7)
- - (a) My report, subject to any corrections before swearing as to its correctness, will form the evidence which I will give under outh or affirmation; (b) I may be cross-examined on my report by a cross-examiner assisted by an expert;

  - (c) I am likely to be the subject of public adverse criticism by the judge if the court concludes that I have not taken reasonable care in trying to meet the standard set out
- I confirm that I have not entered into any arrangement whereby the amount or payment of (8)my fees, charges or expenses is in any way dependent upon the outcome of this case.

Dr Brian Mangan, MD MRCPsych **Consultant** Psychiatrist

## MANGAN MEDICAL SERVICES LTD NI065907 Dr Brian Mangan MD MRCPsych

Medical Associates, 25 Derryvolgie Avenue, Belfast 9. Appointments and Correspondence (o: Tel: 07981388229

Bluestone Unit, Craigavon Area Hospital Lurgan Road, Craigavon

SPT-30165

Our ref: Bm/gg

Your ref: /005/0019FS/FMcC

Email: manganmedical@googlemail.com

11 August 2011

Higgins Hollywood Deazley Solicitors 523 Antrim Road Belfast BT15 3BS

ADDENDUM REPORT ON

SPT 113

Date of Birth:

#### Introduction

I had previously prepared a report on the above-named patient's condition dated 5 July 2010. I have now been asked to give an opinion on the specific impact of the patient's experiences of \_ childhood sexual abuse and subsequent psychological wellbeing. I had access to my original notes and records and my previous report.

At the time of my initial assessment of SPT 113 he informed me that he was sexually abused by a cook approximately 18 times between the ages of 12 and 14. As a consequence of his childhood sexual abuse he developed childhood post-traumatic stress disorder. He experienced distressing nightmares in relation to his childhood sexual abuse. He had problems with nocturnal entresis. He developed significant problems with hyperarousal and continued to have problems throughout his adult life dealing with his feelings of anger. In adulthood he has significant distress when watching television programmes in relation to childhood sexual abuse. SPT 113 also has had problems with intimacy throughout his adult life as a consequence of his sexual abusive experiences.

SPT 113 developed significant problems with alcohol misuse in his early teenage years. He subsequently engaged in deliberate self-harm in his mid teenage years, around the ages of 16 and

SPT-30166

17. His sexual abuse occurred at a critical stage in his development. This significantly increased his vulnerability to developing problems with substance dependency.

In my opinion the patient's childhood sexual abuse had a greater impact on his subsequent psychological development than the physical and emotional abuse he experienced whilst in care. The traumatic death of his mother would have also had a significant bearing on his emotional development.

Patients who are sexually traumatised are at much great risk of developing disorders of their personality development. **SPT 113** case there is a significant linkage between his life-long criminal behaviour and his addiction problems.

SPT 113 continues to have significant problems with his emotional wellbeing as a consequence of his childhood sexual abuse. These difficulties are likely to continue to run a fluctuating course.

Dr Brian Mangan, MD MRCPsych Consultant Psychiatrist

# SPT-30167

ř.	
	PSYCHIATRIC REPORT
	on
	SPT 113
	ADDRESS:
	DATE OF REPORT: 27.11.12
	PREFARED BY:
	PROFESSOR TOM FAHY, MD MPhil FRCPsych
	Professor of Forensic Mental Health Institute of Psychiatry, PO61, Room E1.22, De Crespigny Park, Denmark Hill, London SE5 8AP Tel: 020 3237 1090/Fax: 020 7848 0627

# SPT-30168

### # 23/01/2013 10:12

lones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

03/72

#### SPT 113

PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, duted 21 January 2013

### INTRODUCTION

I am preparing this report at the request of Jones & Company Solicitors in relation to Mr SPT 113 legal claim against Sisters of Nazareth, Institute of the Brothers of the Christian Schools and Congregation of the Sisters of Mercy (Northern Province). In preparing this report I interviewed SPT 113 in Belfast on 26 November 2012. I have also reviewed the following papers;

- 1. Pleadings
- 2. Psychiatric reports by Dr Mangan dated 5 July 2010 and 11 August 2011.
- 3. GP notes and records.
- 4. Forensic report from Goldblatt McGuigan.
- 5. HMP Magiaberry medical notes and records.
- 6. Discovery received from the Youth Justice Agency.
- 7. Letter of Claim.
- 8. Information received from Sisters of Nazareth.

## BACKGROUND AND PERSONAL HISTORY

 SPT 113 was porn and raised in Northern Ireland, His father worked as a window cleaner.

 He died approximately twelve years ago.

 SPT 113

 father was convicted of the and received a prison sentence.

 SPT 113

understands that his father was in prison for 3 or 4 years. Following his release from prison he visited SPT 113 on a regular basis while he remained in care. SPT 113 said that he had a good relationship with his father. He described his father as a quiet man, who had a quick temper. He described him as his "hero", SPT 113 said that his father was not violent to the children.

# SPT-30169

SPT 113 PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013 SPT 113 has two surviving sisters. The has a history of mental health problems, committed suicide ten years ago, works in SPT 113 describes her as	# 23/01/2013 10:12	Jones & Co Sollcitors	Administrator⇒90330330	04/2
PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 27 January 2013 SPT 113 has two surviving sisters. thas a history of mental health problems.				
PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 27 January 2013 SPT 113 has two surviving sisters. thas a history of mental health problems.				
PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 27 January 2013 SPT 113 has two surviving sisters. thas a history of mental health problems.	1.1.1			
		duted 21 January 2013		
	SPT 113	o numilation alterna		2 - A
		as a histor		

SPT 113 states that he was a healthy child.

SCHOOLING AND OCCUPATIONAL HISTORY

SPT 113 states that he was provided with educational opportunities in his residential homes and at St. Patrick's, but he did not engage. He recalls doing only one exam, in Maths. He states that he was awarded a distinction in this subject.

SPT 113 worked as a security officer for two years after leaving prison. However, his employer encountered financial difficulties and the company closed. SPT 113 has not worked since then.

#### FORENSIC HISTORY

SPT 113 states that he was first in trouble with the police at the age of 11 years when he was charged with original damage. He states that during his time in St. Patrick's he resolved to become a career original. He states that this was partly a reaction to his status at St. Patrick's, where he was classified as a care and protection case (the other children were placed in the unit following criminal charges).

SPT 113 characterises his life (until six years ago) as an alternating pattern of survival by criminal activity in the community, and imprisonment. At the age of 16 years he was convicted of possessing a shotgun. He informed me that in his twenties he received a lengthy prison sentence for false imprisonment and possession of a sawn-off shotgun (he was released as part of the Good Friday Agreement). He was subsequently convicted of conspiracy to commit armed robbory and sentenced to twelve years. He said that this final period of imprisonment "broke me". He suffered a stroke in prison. He became fearful of dying in

# SPT-30170

### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Sclicitors

Administrator⇒90330330

05/22

#### SPT 113 PSYCHIATRIC REFORIT, dated 21 January 2013

prison. He states that since his release he has avoided criminal activity, though he has recently been sentenced to a period of community service for driving without a licence and insurance.

SPT 113 informed me that his criminal activities have led to conflict with paramilitary groups. When aged 11 years his arms and legs were broken by the IRA. On another occasion his house was set on fire. He said that gunmen were waiting outside the house, but he stayed indoors until emergency services arrived, and he was able to exit safely. He said that a death threat has hung over him for many years. However, he states that his attitude towards these threats is one of fearlessness.

### FAMILY AND SOCIAL SITUATION

SPT 113 informed me that he first married when he was in prison. He said that when he was released from prison he came to realise that his wife was a severe alcoholic. He separated from her. She subsequently became destitute.

SPT 113 married on the second occasion approximately five years ago. He does not live with his wife, but they come and go from one another's homes. He said that if they spend too long together, relations become fractious.

SPT 113 has three children. The eldest has a drug and alcohol problem. He is currently residing with SPT 113 on bail and wearing a tag. The younger two children are employed and have not been in trouble with the law.

SPT 113 lives in satisfactory housing executive accommodation. His income is derived from ESA.

#### MEDICAL HISTORY

SPT 113<sub>suffered</sub> a left-sided stroke in prison. Initially, he was immobilised and visually impaired. However, he made a good recovery. He still experiences odd sensations on the left

# SPT-30171

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

06/22

#### SPT 113 PSYCHLATRIC REPORT, dated 21 Jonuary 2013

side of his body and is vulnerable to vertigo. He also suffers gastric ulcers, which may be related to swallowing metal objects such as blades (these could not be removed from his stomach).

### PSYCHIATRIC HISTORY

SPT 113 has had extensive contact with Prison Mental Health Services. As a youth he swallowed razorblades and light bulbs, he cut himself, tried to hang himself and set fire to his cell. He said that he "grew out of these behaviours" in his twenties, though he states that until his stroke he often felt that prison was the best place for him.

#### ALCOHOL AND DRUGS

SPT 113 took an accidental overdose of alcohol at the age of twelve years. He said that this led to an aversion to alcohol, and he has never been a regular heavy drinker. He said that he used cannabis regularly when he was a young man, though this sometimes led him to become paranoid. He used Valium in prison. He took Eestasy and amphetamines in the 1990s. He has not used cocaine or opiates. At present he asks the GP for Diazepam if he is feeling depressed. He denies using other drugs.

#### PERSONALITY

SPT 113 reports that he can be short-tempered. Although he can enjoy social contact he also needs to maintain space from others. He attends the gym regularly, and this is a useful outlet for feelings of low mood or frustration. He enjoys walking his dog and maintaining contact with family members.

#### INDEX EVENTS

SPT 113 was taken into care at the age of 3 years. He remained in care until 14/15 years. He believes that he may have spent a year with his grandmother, though she returned him to

~

# SPT-30172

### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

07/22

### SPT 113

SYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

Care as she could not cope with him and another child that she was looking after at the time,

SPT 113 was under the care of the Sisters of Nazareth between the ages of 3 and 8 years. He said that the only enjoyable period was during the monthly family visit. He describes the following problems while in care;

- He reports that the nuns were very strict and would beat him for minor infringements. Sometimes he did not know why he was being punished.
- At bathtime he would have to line up, naked, with the other children. He was scrubbed with a deck scrubbing brush. Disinfectant or a similar liquid burnt his eyes.
- He was forced to sat foods that he disliked, e.g. marmalade, and punished if he did not comply. He commented that it was taboo not to eat the food.
- He states that Sister C and Sister M did most of the bathing and would aggressively comb his hair to remove nits.

· He said that staff would sometimes taugt him with references to his father

· He was forced to carry a sheet saying that he had wet the bed.

SPT 113 was transferred to Orana House aged approximately 8 years. He said that at this location he received the following abusive experiences;

- · He was slapped on a daily basis.
- · He feels that he was victimised.
- · He was bathed in scalding water and sorubbed.

# SPT-30173

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

08/22

#### SPT 113

SYCHLATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

- There were no close relationships with caring staff.
- He states that he rebelled. Staff could not control him. On one occasion he climbed on the roof and urinated on staff. His grandmother had to be called to talk him down.

Following the roof protest, SPT 113 was transferred for a holding period to Lurgan and then to St. Patrick's.

SPT 113 was placed at the St. Patrick's unit between 12 and 14 years. He said that most of the other children were placed there because of criminal activities. They would taunt him because of his Care and Protection status, for example singing "nobody's child" when he entered the canteen. He said that there was much teasing and humiliation.

SPT 113 states that at St. Patrick's he was sexually abused by the cook. He said that the cook offered to look after him. He would take him to a room and lock the door. He would then fondle SPT 113 genitals and force SPT 113 to reciprocate. He said that the cook tried to perform oral sex but SPT 113 resisted. He used to engage in mock wrestling with SPT 113 which would then progress to sexual contact. The cook would sometimes ejaculate. After these episodes the cook would give SPT 113 ice-cream and let him go. Mr SPT 113 said that during the episodes he felt puzzled and nervous. However, he also felt protected by the cook, who stopped the other boys from bullying and taunting him. Later, the cook went on to have contact with other Care and Protection boys.

SPT 113 said that on one occasion when the cook was waiting for SPT 113 to join him at the swimming pool he told the other boys about the cook's behaviour. A group of boys went to confront the cook. After this incident, there was no more sexual abuse.

SPT 113 said that following the above incident he moved to chalets at St. Patrick's. He was happy to move there as this meant that he was no longer having contact with the cook. However, at the age of 15 years he was transferred to Hydebank Prison after receiving a six month sentence for burglary. SPT 113 said that the transfer to prison reinforced his resolve

# SPT-30174

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator→90330330

09/22

### SPT 113

PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2015

to become a career criminal. He was content with this decision. He feels that he made a good adjustment to his subsequent lifestyle and one of the advantages of prison life was that nobody came near him. There were no further episodes of physical or sexual abuse in custody.

I asked SPT 113 to itemise his most distressing or troubling experiences. He stated that these were as follows;

- Being combed for nits (he said that this was sometimes done in such a rough style that he bled).
- Being hit by "a wee fragile woman" while in care, and seeing his sisters being beaten by her.

I asked him how distressing the sexual abuse had been. He said that at the time it was not distressing as the abuser was not hitting or harming him, "There was no violence".

### PSYCHIATRIC HISTORY

SPT 113 states that he was oppositional during his time in care. He wet the bed until the age of 16. He began to harm himself, partly in an attempt to soek attention but also in response to genuine suicidal ideation.

SPT 113 states that he has not suffered from depression. He relieves negative doughts and emotions by going to the gym.

He acknowledges a history of anxiety symptoms. He states that he is self-conscious in crowds. He has used beta-blockers to relieve anxiety symptoms.

He describes a persistent problem with short temper.

I asked him about preoccupations and distress about his childhood experiences. He replied,

# SPT-30175

### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

10/22

#### SPT 113 PSYCHLATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

"No, I pushed it to the back of my head and got on with the life I was living. It was only when things happened, for example the states that after his sister's death he felt as if his life was falling apart as his parents were deceased and he was now the eldest in the family.

I asked about sexual maladjustment. He said that in later life, when having sexual intercourse, he has sometimes been troubled by intrusive memories of childhood abuse. This can bring sexual arousal to a halt. He states that at no point did he doubt his sexual orientation or develop homophobic attitudes or behaviours.

### PSYCHIATRIC TREATMENT

SPT 113 had extensive contact with prison mental health teams, who assessed his mental state, provided reatment and wrote reports. He has not had psychiatric input in the community. He has recently expressed a willingness to attend a rehabilitation service, Helping Hands, with the aim of acquiring IT skills. He informed me that he improved his literacy skills in prison and that he is now competent in reading and writing.

I asked about a reference in the GP records to a peurol bomb incident in 2001. SPT 113 states that the IRA came to his home to kill him. They set fire to his property. He states that IRA men waited outside, armed with AK47s. For this reason he stayed in the house until the roof collapsed. His dog died. He described the incident as, "Just another stepping stone in my life. No fear".

Other traumatic incidents have included car crashes, though he does not report the development of psychiatric symptoms following such incidents.

#### MENTAL STATE EXAMINATION

SPT 113 was a cooperative, animated interviewee who provided his account in a vivid and occasionally humerous style. His face was scarred (from a road traffic accident). His mood

# SPT-30176

10

# 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

11/22

#### SPT 113

SYCHIATRIC REPORT dated 21 January 2013

during the interview was unremarkable, with no evidence of depression or anxiety. He described his recent mood as "dead on". Apart from occasional sleep disruption and a report of poor concentration, I did not obtain an account of depressive symptoms.

i enquired about a full range of anxiety and post-traumatic symptoms:

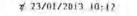
- He does not describe specific anxieties or vulnerability to panic attacks.
- He denies preoccupation with the index events, stating that he tries not to think about them.
- He said that he used to have bad dreams about "the baths" but this is no longer the case.
- Media reports of childhood abuse can trigger a train of thought and memories about his own experiences and he may question if he has met the victims and wonders if they had similar experiences to his own.
- He states that thoughts and distress related to the index events emerged following his sister's suicide. She had led the family's complaints about their childhood experiences, including reporting these to the police. SPT 113 indicated that his involvement in the case was prompted by his sister rather than under his own initiative.
- FIc reports that he used to feel considerable anger towards his abusers, especially the cook, but this is no longer the case.
- · He said that he can find it hard to trust other people.

I did not obtain an account of significant behavioural avoidance or problems with emotional withdrawal/restricted affect.

SPT 113 concluded the interview by asserting that he hoped to "keep surviving". During the course of the interview he did not appear aroused, anxious, agitated or distressed as he

# SPT-30177

11



Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

12722

SPT 113 PSYCHIATRIC REPOR<sup>1</sup>, dated 21 January 2013

described his childhood experiences.

#### MEDICAL RECORDS

The GP records from 9 April 1999 make a reference to depression and anger.

- There is a reference to an anxiety state following a petrol bombing dated 28 December 2001.
- 28 October 2002. There is a reference to anxiety in the GP's handwritten records.
- During a prison sentence for armed robbery SPT 113 suffered a stroke in June 2003.
- In April 2004 SPT 113 was seen in prison by Dr O'Hegarty, Psychiatrist. She wrote that he had recovered from his stroke. Following a prison transfer his mood had deteriorated. He felt anxious about the possibility about a further stroke. He felt at risk due to the lower security environment. He was further from his family. His sleep was poor and his appetite was affected. Dr O'Hegarty attributed the deterioration in Mr SPT 113 mental state to his situational difficulties. She also noted that SPT 113 had described intermittent anxiety and depressive symptoms for most of his life, but he did not appear to have seen these as a significant problem until recently.
- 17 August 2009. SPT 113 attended the GP and reported that he felt depressed for four months. He was worrying about his ex-wife and family tragedies. He felt hyper at times, anxious and bottled up. He had received anger management in the past.

### RECORDS FROM YOUTH JUSTICE AGENCY

These records note that SPT 113 family was known to the Social Services Department since November 1977 SPT 113 was aged 4 years). His mother approached the office requesting assistance with financial and marital problems and complaining about her husband's aggressive behaviour and extreme possessiveness. Visits by the social worker

# SPT-30178

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

13/12

#### SPT 113 PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

revealed a certain amount of child neglect in respect of feeding, clothing, hygiene and apathy about school attendance. SPT 113 had to receive medical treatment on several occasions as a result of beatings from her husband. SPT 113 took an overdose of sleeping tablets in *April 1973*. The children were subsequently admitted into care and placed in Nazareth Lodge and St. Joseph's Babies Home in *April 1973*. In *June 1973* was arrested

He was subsequently sentenced to two years imprisonment. The children were taken out of Care by their grandparents but they were unable to cope with looking after four children and in *August 1974* the four children were admitted to hospital suffering from scables and impetigo.

It was noted that in September 1975 the children were transferred to Palmerston Assessment Centre at the request of staff who were finding SPT 113 behaviour very disruptive. In June 1976 the children were reunited with their father who had obtained rented accommodation. His inability to cope with the demands of the young children culminated in him asking Social Services to take them into care.

It was noted that SPT 113 was most active as a young child. He was a poor sleeper, frequently wet the bed and was generally very destructive. He was a moody child and often had temper tantnums. Nother parent knew how to cope with his behaviour and it often provoked arguments between the parents. In Palmerston SPT 113 bound difficulty in mixing with other children and his approach to them was constantly a challenge for supremacy. He exhibited behavioural problems such as nail biting, eye twitching, bed wetting, lying and stealing. He often exhibited very aggressive behaviour, though in reality he was afraid of actual violence. He attached himself to boys involved in anti-social behaviour.

It is noted that SPT 113 behaviour deteriorated in November 1977 and Mr expressed his inability to control SPT 113 He was referred to the Child Psychiatry Department. It was noted that SPT 113 would present a problem irrespective of the quality of parenting he received. An effort was made to deliver a simple treatment and support programme at home but this was unsuccessful due to Mr failure to keep appointments and SPT 113 increasing truanting from school. An admission to Fallowfield School was felt to be most appropriate.

12

# SPT-30179

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator  $\rightarrow 90330330$ 

14/22

#### SPT 113

PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

Following the admission to Fallowfield there were problems including refusing to return after weekends and involvement in petty crime. SPT 113 was subsequently placed in St. Patrick's Training School in *November 1978*.

A report from St. Pairick's Training School dated 26 February 1980 stated that unpredictable sort of boy capable of reasonable adjustment from time to time but he seemed unable to sustain his commitment for any length of time. Around the school he could be troublesome and adopted a stubborn attitude. He appeared to have little regard for staff and was loath to accept correction.

A <u>report in 1983</u> stated that in 1982 SPT 113 commenced a work experience programme in a supermarket, and got on well with his workmates. In *January 1983* SPT 113 was charged with criminal damage, puncturing a fire hydrant hose. His behaviour in the school was generally well-accepted and he had improved. He was likeable and willing to assist. The relationship with his father had improved.

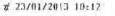
## INFORMATION FROM SISTERS OF NAZARETH

These papers state that SPT 113 was in the care of Nazareth House between April and September 1973.

#### PLEADINGS

The Statement of Claim states that in or about 1973 when SPT 113 was resident in Nazareth Lodge he was constantly psychologically abused by the nuns. He was told that he did not belong to his parents but that he belonged to them and to God. He was continually told that his parents were bad people and that he had the devil inside him. He was beaten with wooden implements and he was assaulted, hit on the ear and head. He was harshly treated and made to stand in the corner of the hallway and face the wall, head-on, head down, for a no apparent reason. He was put into a stationary large tumble drier to stop him crying. He was constantly

# SPT-30180



Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

15/22

#### SPT 113 PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

and consistently apused.

It is also claimed that while at the Convent of Mercy, in Newry, he was continually slapped and abused for not eating marmalade. He was continually covered in bruising as a result of beatings and harsh treatment.

It is claimed that between 1979 and 1982, when resident at St. Patrick's Care Home, he was sexually assaulted by the cook. Sexual abuse continued until he was about 14 years of age.

It is claimed that SPT 113 suffered Childhood Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder. He also suffered substance dependency, continuing psychological and psychiatric problems and chronic emotional ill health.

#### DEFENCE

It is stated that corporal punishment by staff at the time alleged was appropriate and commensurate to the accepted educational practices.

### PSYCHIATRIC REPORTS

I have read Dr Mangan's first psychiatric report of 5 July 2010. Dr Mangan states that Mr SPT 113 lescribes physical, mental and sexual abuse while in care. He claimed that he was frequently beaten with sticks, he was assaulted by staff and made to stand against a wall for long periods. He was treated harshly when he was bathed. The nuns told him that the devil was in him. He was sexually abused by the cook. He said that because of his experiences he had great difficulty controlling his temper. He had difficulties at school. He was teased by other children. He accumulated an extensive criminal record. He described a history of cocaine abuse.

Dr Mangan noted that SPT 113 was distressed when he described his difficulties. He reported difficulties falling and remaining asleep. He described ongoing nightmares relating to his childbood sexual abuse and physical abuse. He described hypervigilance and a heightened

# SPT-30181

23701/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

16/22

### SPT 113

VCHIATRIC REPORT, datext 21 January 2013

startle reflex. He reported problems with irritability and mood swings.

Dr Mangan diagnoses Childhood Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder. Dr Mangan also concludes that SPT 113 emotional difficulties in childhood had a significant hearing on his development of antisocial behaviours. His traumatic experiences in childhood also increased his vulnerability to developing problems with substance dependency. SPT 113 no longer meets criteria for PTSD but continues to show evidence of chronic emotional health problems.

In his supplementary report dated 11 August 2011 Dr Mangan states that SPT 113<sub>also</sub> developed childhood PTSD as a consequence of his childhood sexual abuse. He experienced nightmares in relation to this abuse.

Dr Mangan does not comment on the Social Services' records, which provide a useful insight into the chronology of SPT 113childhood behavioural problems.

#### OPINION

- 1. SPT 113 was born into a disturbed family environment. The Social Services' records note that SPT 113 father had personality problems and that he was physically abusive to his wife. SPT 113 father went on to the Social Services' records clearly state that SPT 113 had exhibited behavioural disturbance including temper tantrums before and before entering Cara. There was evidence of child neglect. In view of the severe nature of the family's emotional and behavioural problems, as well as the possible contribution of inherited personality, emotional and behavioural disturbance, even if he had not been taken into care.
- It is also clear from the chronology provided by the Social Services that efforts to care for and manage SPT 113 behaviour in a domestic environment (when he was looked after by his mother, his grandparents and his father) all failed. These records

# SPT-30182

23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

17/22

#### SPT 113 SYCEDA LICK REPORT, dated 21 Jonnary 2013

suggest that the reason SPT 113 spont so many years in care during his childhood and adolescence was because his behaviour was unmanageable in an ordinary domestic environment. The records from St. Patrick's suggest that there was in fact some benefit from the structured environment of this residence. Review of these records suggests that if SPT 113 had not been taken into care, the outcome for his personality and behavioural disturbance would probably have been worse than it was.

- 3. SPT 113 childhood was characterised by neurotic behaviours (bed-wetting, nailbiting and anxiety) and oppositional/antisocial behaviour (truanting, fighting, stealing, lying etc.). The childhood diagnosis is one of Severe Conduct Disorder (DSM-IV 312.81). This condition has evolved, as it frequently does, into Adult Antisocial Personality Disorder (DSM-IV 301.7). SPT 113 adult life has been characterised by unlawful behaviours, impulsivity, reckless disregard for safety, consistent irresponsibility and lack of remorse - all characteristic of Antisocial Personality Disorder. Also characteristic of this disturbance of personality has been his inability to sustain paid employment or to maintain enduring intimate relationships.
- SPT 113 complaints about his childhood experiences in care include accounts of emotional and physical neglect, harsh punishment and a period of sexual abuse. The complaints about emotional neglect and physical punishment will be a matter for the Court to consider, taking into account societal standards at the time of these alleged experiences. From the psychiatric perspective, SPT 113 account must also be placed in the context of his family life, which was extremely disturbed, and unlikely to provide consistent parenting and emotional matture. Given the level of psychological damage that preceded his entry into care (as evidenced in the Social Services' records) and the inability of family members to manage SPT 113 continuing emotional and behavioural disturbance, I do not consider that his experiences of emotional neglect and physical punishment in care have made a substantial contribution to his severe, enduring personality disturbance.

 SPT 113 describes an experience of sexual abuse by the cook at St. Patrick's Home. While in no way intending to minimise the seriousness of such abusive behaviour. Mr

# SPT-30183

7 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator→90330330

18/22

#### SPT 113 SVCHLATRIC REPORT de

VCHLATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

SPT 113 account of these experiences suggests to me that they were not particularly damaging to his psyche. He reports that these experiences left him feeling perplexed and nervous, but that he also felt protected by the abuser. SPT 113 described these experiences to me without becoming anxious or distressed. The impression that he conveys is that he coped with these experiences without becoming overtly, clinically anxious or distressed, probably a reflection of his already severely disturbed personality and interpersonal relationships.

6. Dr Mangan obtained a history of flashbacks, intrusive memories, hypervigilance and other childhood post-traumatic symptoms. I enquired about these symptoms but did not obtained a similar clinical history, including in relation to the alleged sexual abuse experiences. Instead, I obtained a history of Childhood Conduct Disorder evolving into Adult Personality Disorder. These diagnoses are not referenced by Dr Mangan, though SPT 113 clinical history is highly typical of these disorders, and of the type of clinical presentation that I am familiar with in my clinical work with men in forensic settings who suffer from Personality Disorder. In my opinion, Dr Mangan's analysis of causation is also flawed, perhaps because he has not had the opportunity to read the Social Services' records.

7. On clinical interview SPT 113 reports that his mental state and behaviour has settled in recent years. He has abandoned serious criminal activity and is attempting to lead a more stable domestic and family life. On interview he is not anxious or depressed. He delivers his account in a superficial style, and it is possible that differences in the account obtained by Dr Mangan and by me can be traced back to a degree of suggestibility in the context of this type of medico-legal assessment.

8. In conclusion, from the earlier stages of his life SPT 113 was exposed to and may have inherited significant risk factors for emotional, behavioural and personality disturbance. His early life experiences included exposure to family disharmony, domestic violence and parental separation. His mother His behaviour had already deteriorated, and throughout childbood and adolescence, both family and institutional carers found it difficult to cope with and manage his behaviours. If there

## SPT-30184

# 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

19/22

#### SPT 113 PSYCHLATRIC REPORT, doted 21 January 2013

were adverse experiences in care, it is likely that these contributed to no more than a minor degree to his evolving personality disorder. In adulthood he has displayed the typical characteristics of Antisocial Personality Disorder as well as episodic emotional instability, impulsivity, self-harming behaviours and substance misuse. There has been a gradual stabilisation in his personality and behaviour, which can probably be traced back to his stroke in prison in 2003. Any residual emotional and mood problems are managed by the GP through short-term prescriptions of tranquilising medication. There is no indication for any further psychiatric or psychological treatment at present, and I have not identified any specific treatment needs arising from the alleged childhood experiences that are the subject of the current litigation.

#### I, Thomas Fully declare that

- I understand that my primary duty in written reports and giving evidence is to the Court, rather than the party who engaged me;
- (2) I have endeavoured in my report and in my opinions to be accurate and to have covered all relevant issues concerning the matters stated which i have been asked to address;
- (3) I have endeavoured to include in my report those matters, which I have knowledge of or of which I have been made aware, that might adversely affect the validity of my opinion;
- (4) I have indicated the sources of all information I have used;
- (5) I have not without forming an independent view included or excluded anything which has been suggested to me by others (in particular my instructing lawyors);
- (6) I will notify those instructing the immediately and confirm in writing if for any reason my existing report requires any correction or qualification;
- (7) 1 understand that:-
  - (a) My report, subject to any corrections before swearing as to its correctness, will form the evidence to be given under oath or affirmation;

# SPT-30185

26/22

01/2013	10:12	Jones & Co Solic	itors	Administrator→	90330330	
	PT 113 Hiatric Repo	RO, duted 21 January 2013				
	(b)	nay be goes-examined on my report b	у а стозз-олатіпо	rassisted by an Export;		
	1.0	am likely to be the subject of public ad have not taken reasonable care in trying	and the constant of		concludes that	
(8)	I confirm that I have not entered into any arrangement where the amount or payment of my fees is in way dependent on the outcome of the case.					
(9)	I confirm t report.	hat I have no conflict of interest of an	iy kind, other that	a any which I have dis	closed in this	
(10)	I confirm d	nat I do not consider that any interest w	hich I have disclos	ed affects my suitabilit	y as an expert	

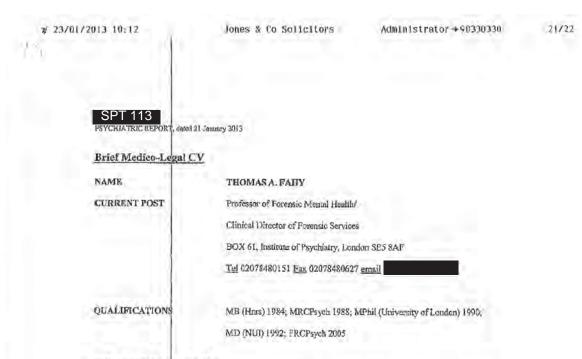
# 23/

- witness on any issue on which I have given evidence.
- (11) I confirm that I will advise the party by whom I am instructed if, between the date of my report and the trial, there is any change in circumstances which affects my answers to either of the above two points.
- (12) I understand that my overriding duty is to the court and I have complied with that duty and will continue to comply with n. I am aware of the requirements of Part 35 and Practice Direction 35 and the CJC Protocol for the Instruction of Expects to give evidence in Civil Claims.
- (13) I confirm that I have made clear which facts and matters referred to in this report are within my own knowledge and which are not. Those that are within my own knowledge I confirm to be true. The opinions I have expressed represent my true and complete professional opinions on the matters to which they refer.

Professor Tom Faby, MD MPhil FRCPsych Professor of Forensic Mental Health.

)Q

# SPT-30186



#### PSYCHIATRIC EXPERIENCE

I trained in psychiatry at St Thomas' Hospital and Bethlem Royal and Maudsley Hospital, London. Before taking up my current post I was Locturer in Psychological Medicine King's College Hospital Medical School and then Consultant Psychiatrist, Maudsley Hospital.

#### SPECIALIST TRAINING COURSES

I have undertaken specialist training courses in cognitive behaviour therapy, assessment of personality disorder, risk assessment, expert witness skills and PTSD.

#### DISTINCTIONS & PRIZES

Prizes for olinical and research work include Professor H. Love Cup, Sir Dennis Hill Research Prize and Gaskell Medal, Royal College of Psychiatrists.

#### PUBLICATIONS

I have published approximately 100 peer reviewed scientific papers, 40 scientific abstracts and several book chapters or monographs. I have extensive experience as an editor of psychiatric journals.

#### MEDICO-LEGAL WORK

I undertake a limited amount of medico-legal work compatible with my academic and ellnical commitments. I receive instruction of a variety of subjects related to psychiatry, including complex cases. I have prepared reports on a wide range of topics including ellinical negligence, PTSD, stress at work, Employment Tribunal, psychiatric sequeiae of exposure to toxins, adverse effects of childhood abuse and head injury. I have given evidence in several complex class actions, including cases in the UK and Ireland These have included homicide and complex class defenses in the UK and Ireland These have included homicide and complex class, defense and prosecution in criminal cases in the request of claimants and defendants in personal injury cases, defense and prosecution in criminal proceedings, Employment Tribunals, Occupational Health departments, Financial Services Authority, Treasury/Crown Solicitors, Coroner's Court, Employers and Universities. Instructions from the UK, Ireland, Australia, Cayman Islands. I have given evidence in court on many occasions. I am one of the organisers and a speaker on the Institute of Psychiatry/Gray's Inn Expert Witness Course. **Brief Medico-Legal CV** 

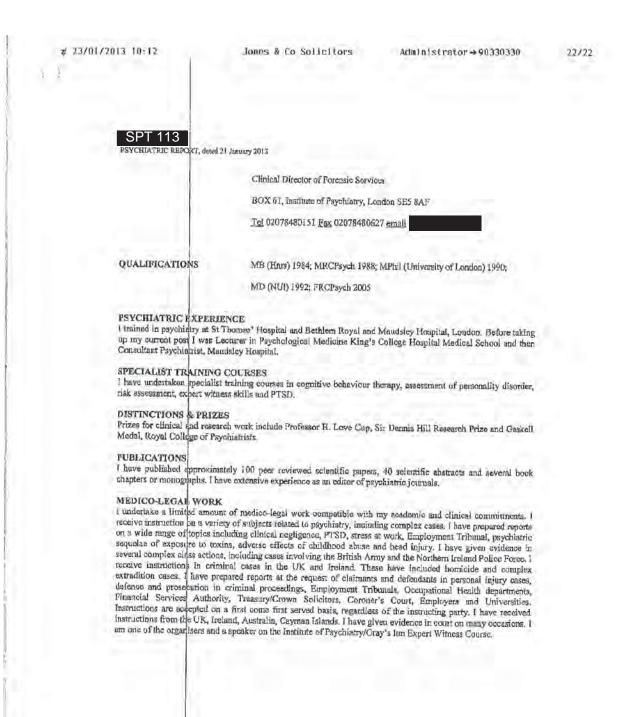
#### NAME

#### THOMAS A. FAHY

CURRENT POST

#### Professor of Forensis Mental Health/

# SPT-30187



### DR BRIAN MANGAN MD, FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

MUSGRAVE HOUSE 10 Stockman's Lane Belfast BT9 7JA

BLUESTONE UNIT Craigavon Area Hospital Lurgan Road Craigavon BT62 5QQ

SPT-30188

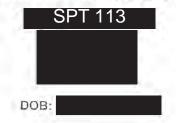
Appointments and Correspondence to: Musgrave House, 10 Stockman's Lane, Belfast, BT9 7JA. Tel: 07981 388229 Email: manganmedical@googlemail.com

26<sup>th</sup> June 2013

Your Ref: 005/0019FS/FMCC Our Ref: BM/LS/ADD

Higgins Hollywood Deazley Solicitors, 296 Cliftonville Road, Belfast, BT14 6LE.

### ADDENDUM MEDICO-LEGAL REPORT ON:



1 had previously prepared reports on the above named plaintiff's condition dated 5<sup>th</sup> July 2010 and 11<sup>th</sup> August 2011. I have now been provided with a report prepared by Professor Tom Fahy, Consultant Psychiatrist, dated 27<sup>th</sup> November 2012, HMP Maghaberry medical notes and records and Youth Justice documentation. This report summarises the relevant materials and addresses Professor Fahy's findings.

A social report on the family confirms that they became known to Social Services in 1971. Mrs made a request for assistance with financial and marital problems and complaining about her husband's aggressive behaviour and extreme possessiveness. The report stated that marital harmony increased until Mrs was admitted to the Mater Hospital on 19<sup>th</sup> April 1973 after taking an overdose of sleeping tablets. Her children were

SPT-30189

Joe and St Joseph's Babies Home, on 20<sup>th</sup> April 1973. After discharge from hospital Mrs went to live with her mother and avoided contact with her husband and Social Worker. It noted that Mrs had been granted a separation order and custody of the children, however she showed no intention of bringing the children out of care. Mr became increasingly anxious about this. He became agitated and distressed and felt so very helpless in the situation that on 15<sup>th</sup> June 1973 he was arrested for A plea of

was accepted and he was subsequently sentenced to 2 years imprisonment. It noted that SPT 113 was most active as a young child. He was a poor sleeper, frequently wet the bed and was generally very destructive. He was a moody child and often had temper tantrums when he could not have his own way.

The records indicate that on 9<sup>th</sup> September 1975 the children were transferred to the Palmerston Assessment Centre. Whilst in Palmerston SPT 113 found difficulty in mixing with the other children in the centre and his approach to them was constantly challenged for supremacy. He exhibited other behaviour problems such as nail biting, eye twitching, bed wetting, lying and stealing. He often exhibited very aggressive behaviour.

The records indicate that he was admitted to Fallowfield Residential School on 15<sup>th</sup> May 1978. It was noted that he did not make progress in Fallowfield and sometimes would sleep rough. A decision was made to place SPT 113 in St Patrick's Training School.

A report from Fallowfield School stated that his school attendance was very poor. He would evade and run away from the Social Worker on many occasions.

A report from St Patrick's Training School dated February 1980 confirms that SPT113 then aged 13, was behaving in a childish and immature way. It was noted that he had to endure many traumatic experiences in his life, the death of his mother, and subsequent removal of his 3 sisters into care. He does however seem to have a strong relationship with his father who in turn has expressed a willingness to help him with his problems. It was noted that SPT113 had been al St Patrick's now for approximately 14 months and had not at that stage made any significant progress.

Prison notes and records confirm his problems with asthma and his previous cerebro-vascular accident. Reflux symptoms were also noted.

Medical Records Department Healthcare Centre, HMP Maghaberry, confirms on release from custody on 8<sup>th</sup> February 2007 his medication was Losec 40mg and Plavix 1 tablet daily.

to Professor Fahy (until 6 years ago) as an alternating pattern of survival by criminal activity in the community and imprisonment. He confirms that he suffered a stroke in prison. He reported that his criminal activities led to conflict with paramilitary groups and at the age of 11 his arms

SPT-30190

*a* legs were broken by the IRA. Professor Fahy confirms his extensive history of Illicit drug usage. He also confirms that he took an accidental overdose of alcohol in his early adolescence and subsequently was never a regular heavy drinker. **SPT 113** confirms the abusive experiences he had whilst in care. He confirmed that he had been sexually abused by a cook. With regard to his psychiatric history he reported to Professor Fahy that he had a history of anxiety symptoms, was self-conscious in crowds, and had used betablockers to relieve anxiety symptoms. He describes persistent problems with short temper. He reported that in later adult life when having sexual intercourse he has sometimes been troubled by intrusive memories of childhood abuse. This can bring sexual arousal to a halt. Professor Fahy summarises the plaintiff's notes and records.

With regard to Professor Fahy's opinion I accept that SPT 113 was born into a disturbed family environment. I accept that he was exhibiting behavioural disturbance including temper tantrums and indeed before entering care. I accept Professor Fahy's before opinion that it is clear that there was a very high risk of him developing personality, emotional and behavioural disturbances even if he had not been taken into care. I also accept Professor Fahy's opinion that the reason SPT 113 spent so many years in care during his childhood and adolescence was because his behaviour was unmanageable in an ordinary domestic environment. I do not accept however Professor Fahy's opinion that had SPT 113 not been taken into care the outcome of his personality and behavioural disturbance would probably have been worse than it was. I have no difficulty accepting Professor Fahy's diagnoses of a conduct disorder and later an antisocial personality disorder in adulthood. The plaintiff's records, particularly the Social Services records and reports, are entirely consistent with this diagnosis. As Professor Fahy has stated I did not have access to Social Services records at the time of my initial assessment. It is however clear the differences of opinion between Professor Fahy and myself on the impact of the emotional and physical neglect, harsh punishment and sexual abuse on the plaintiff's mental health. Professor Fahy and I both agree that the plaintiff already had significant emotional problems even before he was taken into care. He was therefore more vulnerable to developing more long term psychological sequelae as a consequence of his abusive experiences. It is well recognised that sexual abuse in childhood and adolescence increase significantly the development of personality disorder, alcohol and substance dependency, depressive disorders, and indeed psychosis. There is no evidence in SPT 113 case of him later developing problems with psychosis nor clinical depression but he continues to have lifelong emotional disturbance as a consequence of his abusive experiences in childhood. I note that Professor Fahy was unable to obtain the history of flashbacks, intrusive memories, hypervigilance and other childhood post traumatic symptoms, but he does confirm in his own report that the plaintiff continued in later life when having sexual intercourse to be troubled by intrusive memories of childhood abuse. This can bring sexual arousal to a halt. The history

SPT-30191

In by the plaintiff to Professor Fahy that he felt perplexed and anxious yet protected by his abuser, is a not uncommon clinical finding in patients who have been sexually abused and who subsequently later develop more protracted psychological sequelae as a consequence of their traumatic experiences. I therefore do not accept Professor Fahy's opinion that his adverse experiences in care are likely to have contributed to no more than a minor degree of his evolving personality disorder. I would accept however his opinion that there has been a gradual stabilisation in his personality and behaviour following his stroke in prison in 2003. I remain of the view however that SPT 113 will continue to have significant problems with his emotional wellbeing as a consequence of his childhood sexual abuse.

#### DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

#### DECLARATION;

19 4 1 St 14

- understand that my primary duty in furnishing written reports and giving evidence is to assist the court and that this takes (1) priority over any duties which I may owe to the part or parties by whom I have been engaged or by whom I have been paid or am liable to be paid. I confirm that I have complied and will conlinue with this duty.
- I have endeavoured in my reports and in my opinions to be accurate and to have covered all relevant issues concerning the (2) matters stated, which I have been asked to address, and the opinions expressed represent my true and complete professional opinion.
- have endeavoured to include in my report these matters of which I have knowledge and of which I have been made aware (3) which might adversely affect the validity of my opinion.
- I have indicated the sources of all information that I have used
- (4) (5) I have where possible formed an independent view on matters suggested to me by others including my instructing lawyers and their client; where I have relied upon information from others, including my instructing lawyers and their client, I have so disclosed in my report.
- (6) will notify those instructing me immediately and confirm in writing if, for any reason, my existing report or opinion requires any correction or qualification.
- understand that (7)
  - (a) My report, subject to any corrections before swearing as to its correctness, will form the evidence which I will give under oath or affirmation.
  - (b) I may be cross-examined on my report by a cross-examiner assisted by an expert.
     (c) I am likely to be the subject of public adverse criticism by the judge if the court concludes that I have not taken reasonable.
  - care in trying to meet the standard set out above. I confirm that I have not entered into any arrangement whereby the amount or payment of my fees, charges or expenses is in
- (8) any way dependent upon the outcome of this case

DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

# SPT-30192

29-JUL-2013 11:19 FROM:

Belfast

BT97JA

TD:028 90330330

BLUESTONE UNIT Craigavon Area Hospital

Lurgan Road

Craigavon

BT62 5QQ

P.002/005

÷

# DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

MUSGRAVE HOUSE 10 Stockman's Lane

Appointments and Correspondence to: Musgrave House, 10 Stockman's Lane, Belfast, BT97JA. Tel: 07981 388229 Email: manganmedical@googlemail.com

Your Ref: 005/0019FS/FMCC Our Ref: BM/ML/3337

25 July 2013

Higgins Hollywood Deazley Solicitors 523 Antrim Road Belfast Antrim **BT15 3BS** 

MEDICO-LEGAL REPORT ON:



I had previously prepared reports on the above named plaintiff dated 5th July 2010, 11th August 2011 and 26<sup>th</sup> June 2013. I have now been provided with a report prepared by Dr Kennedy, Consultant Psychiatrist, dated 12th February 2013. This report addresses Dr Kennedy's findings.

I note that Dr Kennedy has been asked to state the degree of percentage to which the alleged physical abuse the plaintiff experienced in care has contributed to his mental health issues. Dr Kennedy had access to reports provided by myself, extensive General Practitioner notes and records, and some reports from Social Workers in the early 1970s

SPT-30193

29-JUL-2013 11:19 FROM:

TO:028 90330330

P.003/005

about the plaintiff's family. I note that Dr Kennedy's overall findings are similar to those of myself when I interviewed SPT 113 in July 2010 in terms of history and diagnosis.

Dr Kennedy confirms that the plaintiff's father was arrested June 1973. He was found guilty of

and sentenced to 2 years imprisonment. Dr Kennedy confirms that the plaintiff was subsequently placed in care. Dr Kennedy confirms that the plaintiff was admitted to St-Patrick's Training School in Belfast at the end of 1978 because of his difficult behaviour. He notes that in 1975 an IQ (est was performed and the plaintiff was assessed as having an IQ of 83 which is at the lower and average. Dr Kennedy outlines the plaintiff's criminal activities. I would agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that the early years of SPT 113 life were marked by marital discord and volatility. I agree that it is difficult to give a precise figure on the degree of dontribution of these first 3 years and I would not disagree with his assessment that they contributed to at least 20% of his subsequent difficulties. Indeed, in my report of 26th June 2013, I accepted that Professor Fahy's opinion that it is clear that there was a very high risk of him developing personality, emotional and behavioural disturbance even if he had not been taken into care. I also agree with Dr Kennedy that the plaintiff has been honest in his account of his adverse experiences whilst in care. Dr Kennedy details his adverse experiences in care and confirms that he was humiliated for any weakness, being consistently beaten and made to do adult chores as a punishment. Dr Kennedy confirms that the plaintiff was sexually molested whilst he was in St Patrick's Training School. I agree with Dr Kennedy's findings that when the plaintiff was placed in care he was already in a very vulnerable state. I strongly agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that it would have been very important at that time for him to receive empathetic loving care and concern. Whilst it is difficult to establish exactly what percentage of his subsequent edult difficulties relate to his advarse experiences whilst in care, I would not disagree with Dr Kennedy's estimate of approximately 60% contribution to his later difficulties.

I note the very high level of agreement with Dr Kennedy's opinion and that of myself. This is in marked contrast to Professor Fahy's opinion that his adverse experiences in care are likely to have contributed to no more than a minor degree of his evolving personality disorder. Dr Kennedy confirms my own diagnosis of post traumatic stress disorder in the plaintiff's case. This is in marked contrast to the opinion given by Professor Fahy who found no evidence to support this diagnosis. In addition, I agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that the plaintiff continues to suffer from a number of post traumatic stress disorder symptoms

29-JUL-2013 11:20 FROM:

TD:028 90330330

P.004/005

SPT-30194

including flashbacks of past trauma, avoidance of situations that remind him of the trauma, sleep disturbance, anxiety states and interference with his life.

I would agree with Dr Kenhedy that the plaintiff would benefit from either trauma focused cognitive behavioural therapy or EMDR treatment. I strongly agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that there is considerable evidence that child maltreatment is linked with a range of long term negative psychological outcomes which persist. The combination of physical abuse, physical neglect and verbal abuse correlates particularly strongly with adjustment problems in young offenders. I also agree with his opinion that emotional abuse in the form of verbal abuse is a particularly damaging form of child abuse leading to increased risk of personality disorder. I would agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that an inability to work is consistent with an antisocial personality disorder. I would also agree that since experiencing his stroke in 2003 SPT 113 would be able to make a very clear argument that he is no longer able to work. I also agree with Dr Kennedy's view that if one accepts that 60% of the psychiatric injury has been attributed to his time at the Convent of Meroy then a similar amount of percentage if injury should be attributed to his inability to work.

Whilst I accept that cognitive behavioural therapy and EMDR treatment will lead to some resolution of his post traumatic symptomatology. I believe he will continue to have chronic emotional ill health as a consequence of his adverse experiences whilst in care. Even thought I remain of the opinion that SPT 113 does not have full ICD:10 or DSM:4 criteria for post traumatic stress disorder, his residual traumatic symptomatology continue to have a significant adverse impact on his functioning. In conclusion, there is a high level of agreement between the opinions given by Dr Kennedy and myself. This is in contrast with the optnions given by Professor Fahy In his report of 27<sup>th</sup> November 2012.

DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

# SPT-30195

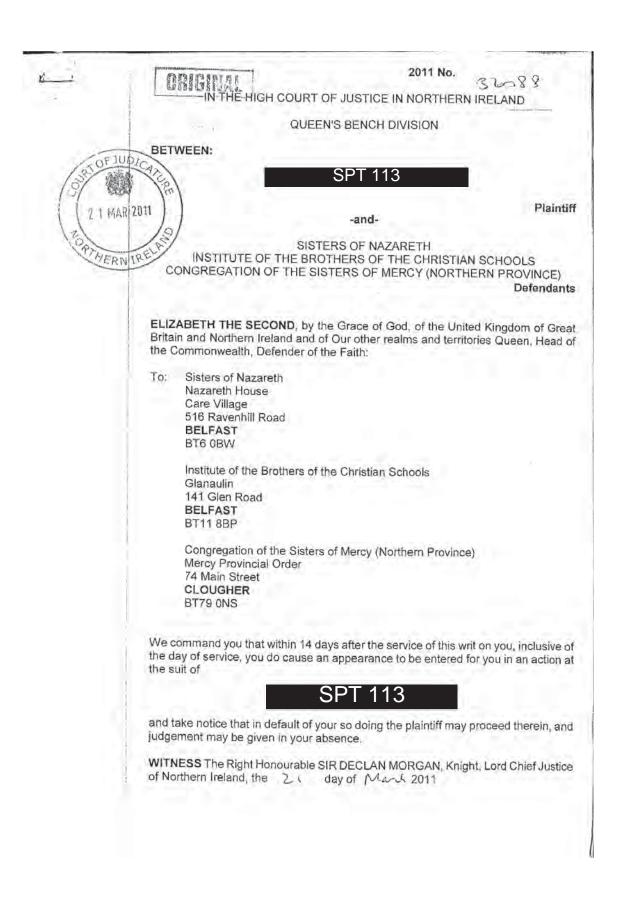
Ŧ

3-JUL-2013 11:8		TD:028 90330330	P.005/00
DECLARA	TONE		
(1)	I understand that my primary duty in furnishing writte that this takes priority over any duties which I may or by whom I have been paid or am liable to be baid. I	confirm that I have complied and will contin	nue with this .
(2)	duty. I have endeavoured in my reports and in my opinion concerning the matters stated, which I have been at my true and complete professionel opinion.	Ned to everythink the	
(3)	I have endeavoured to include in my report those m	validity of my ophicient	nor mere
(4)	I have indicated the sources of all information that I	have used.	va pribu
(4) (5)	I have where possible formed an independent view Instructing lawyers and their client; where I have rel	ied upon information from others, including	
(6)	lawyers and their client, I have so disclosed in my n i will notify those instructing me immediately and co opinion requires any correction or qualification.	infirm in writing it, for any reason, my existing	ng rape
(7)	<ul> <li>Lunderstand that:- i</li> <li>My report, subject to any corrections before aw will give under beth or affirmation.</li> <li>(b) I may be cross-examined on my report by a cross-e</li></ul>	autominar sectated by an arcan.	
(8)	(c) I am likely to be the subject of public adverse taken reasonable care in trying to meet the ste i confirm that i have not entered into any errangem or expenses is in any way dependent upon the out	ant wheraby the amount or payment of my	

DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

ίx.

SPT-30196



#### DIRECTIONS FOR ENTERING APPEARANCE

The Defendant may enter an appearance in person or by a solicitor either (1) by handing in the appropriate forms, duly completed, at the Central Office or Chancery Office [as appropriate], Royal Courts of Justice, Chichester Street, Belfast BT1 3JF, or (2) by sending them to that office by post. The appropriate forms may be purchased from HMSO Bookshop, 16 Arthur Street, Belfast BT1 4GD.

The Plaintiff's claim is for damages for personal injury, loss and damage sustained by him by reason of the negligence, breach of statutory duty, assault, battery and trespass to the person of the Plaintiff by servants and agents of the Defendants when the Plaintiff was a resident of De La Salle Brothers Home, Belfast, between 1979 and 1983 and a resident of Sisters of Nazareth, Belfast, from 1972-1973 and from 1973 to 1974 and resident of Sisters of Mercy, Newry, between 1974 and 1975.

A CORRIGAN BL

SPT-30197

(Signed):

Higgins Hollywood Deazley

This Writ was issued by Higgins Hollywood Deazley	
of 523 Antrim Road, Belfast, in the County of the City of Belfast.	
Solicitor for the said Plaintiff whose address is	

#### DIRECTIONS FOR ENTERING APPEARANCE

The Defendant may enter an appearance in person or by a solicitor either (1) by handing in the appropriate forms, duly completed, at the Central Office or Chancery Office [as appropriate], Royal Courts of Justice, Chichester Street, Belfast BT1 3JF, or (2) by sending them to that office by post. The appropriate forms may be purchased from HMSO Bookshop, 16 Arthur Street, Belfast BT1 4GD.

The Plaintiff's claim is for damages for personal injury, loss and damage sustained by him by reason of the negligence, breach of statutory duty, assault, battery and trespass to the person of the Plaintiff by servants and agents of the Defendants when the Plaintiff was a resident of De La Salle Brothers Home, Belfast, between 1979 and 1983 and a resident of Sisters of Nazareth, Belfast, from 1972-1973 and from 1973 to 1974 and resident of Sisters of Mercy, Newry, between 1974 and 1975.

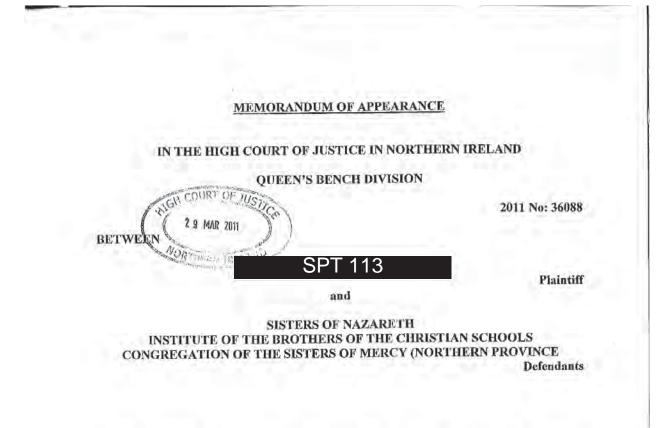
A CORRIGAN BL

SPT-30199

(Signed):

Higgins Hollywood Deazley

# SPT-30200



Please enter an Appearance for INSTITUTE OF THE BROTHERS OF THE CHRISTIAN SCHOOLS

Dated this 29th day of March 2011

Whose address for service is 1-9 Castle Arcade High Street Belfast BT1 5DF

	2011 No. 36088
	IN THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE IN NORTHERN IRELAND
	QUEEN'S BENCH DIVISION
	BETWEEN
	SPT 113
	and
	SISTERS OF NAZARETH
	1 <sup>st</sup> Defendant
	INSTITUTE OF THE BROTHERS OF THE CHRISTIAN SCHOOLS
	2 <sup>nd</sup> Defendant
	CONGREGATION OF THE SISTERS OF MERCY (NORTHERN PROVINCE)
	3 <sup>rd</sup> Defendant
	STATEMENT OF CLAIM
	Served this 10 <sup>th</sup> day of November 2011 By Higgins Hollywood Deazley solicitors of 523 Antrīm Road, Belfast, BT15 3BS
	Writ issued the 21 <sup>st</sup> March 2011.
	1. The Plaintiff resides at an and his date of birth is
	2. At all times material to this action the Plaintiff was a resident of Nazareth Lodge, Ormeau Road, Belfast, from approximately April 1973 to September 1973 which was run, managed, controlled and administered by the First named Defendant, its servants or agents. Further, he was a resident in a home run by the Third named Defendant, namely the Sister of Mercy, Newry, from approximately 1974 to 1975 which was run, managed, controlled and administered by the Third named Defendant and a resident of St. Patrick's School, Glen Road, Belfast, from approximately 1979 to 1983 which was administered, managed and controlled by the Second named Defendant.

# SPT-30202

3. In or about 1973 when the Plaintiff was a resident of Nazareth Lodge he was constantly, psychologically abused by the Nuns, servants and agents of the Defendants. He was told that he did not belong to his parents but that he belonged to them and to God. He was continually told that his parents were bad people and that he had the devil inside him. He was beaten with wooden implements and he was assaulted by way of being hit on the ear and head. He was harshly treated and made to stand in the corner of the hallway and face the wall, head down, for no apparent reason. He was put into a stationary large tumble dryer to stop him crying. He was constantly and consistently abused.

4. In and about 1975 the Plaintiff was aged 8 years of age and whilst at the Convent of Mercy, Newry, which was administered by the Third named Defendant, he was continuously slapped and abused for not eating marmalade on a regular basis. He was force fed with marmalade down his throat. He was forced to be sick. He was continuously sick. Further, in and about 1975, he was continuously covered in bruising as a result of beatings and harsh treatment by servants or agents of the said Defendants at the said Convent.

5. In and about 1979 to 1982 the Plaintiff was aged 12 to 14 years he was a resident in St. Patrick's Care Home, Glen Road, Belfast, which was run and administered by the Second named Defendant. He was sexually assaulted by a person known as DL 137 The Plaintiff was taken into a room in the kitchen where his genitals were touched and mutual masturbation took place. This and similar sexual abuse took place over a period until he was about 14 years of age. The said individual came into the Plaintiff's bedroom and again would sexually abuse him. The said individual was a servant or agent of the Defendant.

 By reason of the aforesaid the Plaintiff sustained personal injuries, battery and trespass to the person by the Plaintiff, the servants and agents of the Defendant and each of them.

PARTICULARS OF ASSAULT, BATTERY AND TRESPASS TO THE PERSON

- (a) Assaulting the Plaintiff.
- (b) Sexually abusing the Plaintiff.
- (c) Causing the Plaintiff to be apprehensive for his own safety
- (d) Causing the plaintiff to suffer great distress.

Further and in the alternative, the Defendants, and each of them, were guilty of negligence.

SPT-30203

	PARTICULARS OF NEGLIGENCE
(a)	Causing and permitting the Plaintiff to be sexually abused.
(b)	Causing and permitting the Plaintiff to be physically abused.
(c)	Failing to supervise or inspect the Home regularly or at all.
(d)	Failing to have any or any adequate regard for the injuries the Plaintiff was
(-/	being subjected to.
(e)	Failing to adequately inspect or check the staff out.
(f)	Employing staff who were totally inappropriate in the circumstances.
(g)	Failing to have any or adequate regard for the safety of the Plaintiff with
(87	respect to the said staff.
(h)	Failing to inspect or supervise the school adequately or at all.
(i)	Causing and permitting the Plaintiff to be physically and sexually abused.
(i)	Failing to have any or adequate regard for the safety of the Plaintiff.
(k)	Failing to acknowledge and enforce an appropriate supervision system
1.4	specifically designed to supervise those individuals who were given care
	and control of the Plaintiff.
(1)	Failing to have any or adequate supervision and checking of personnel in
14	the Home
(m)	Failing to provide a safe environment for the Plaintiff to live in free from
1.14	sexual abuse
(n)	Failing to provide a safe environment for the Plaintiff to live in free from
	physical abuse.
(o)	Failing to ensure that the staff were adequately instructed and skilled in the
124	appropriate child care.
(p)	Failing to provide a safe environment for the Plaintiff.
to as	Plaintiff will further rely on the fact that the Defendants were in breach referred the loco parentis with respect to the Plaintiff.
total Child Horr child cont	her, or in the alternative, the Homes where the Plaintiff was resident during the ity of his stay, where the Voluntary Homes as defined as Section 126 of the dren's and Young Person's Act (Northern Ireland) 1968, in that they were nes used for boarding, protection, care and maintenance of poor children or liren otherwise in need of help, being a Home supported by voluntary ribution, the subject of that Act aforesaid and the regulations made under it n so registered.
7.	Further, the Plaintiff states the Defendants were in breach of the Childrer and Young Persons Act (Voluntary Homes) Regulations (Northern Ireland) 1952 as follows:
(	i) The Defendants were in breach of Regulation 4 of the said Regulations in that any such home must be conducted in such a manner and unde such principles as will further the wellbeing of the children in the home
The pl	aintiff repeats the above Particulars and incidents demonstrating the ants were in breach of same and stating that such treatment received grossly nined his welfare and wellbeing.
underm	lined his wendle and wendenig.
underm	(ii) Regulation 11(1) which states that the persons running the Homes sha ensure generally order is maintained by those persons of influence and understanding of the staff and resorting to corporal punishment shall be avoided as far as possible.
underm	(ii) Regulation 11(1) which states that the persons running the Homes sha ensure generally order is maintained by those persons of influence and understanding of the staff and resorting to corporal punishment shall be
underm	(ii) Regulation 11(1) which states that the persons running the Homes sha ensure generally order is maintained by those persons of influence and understanding of the staff and resorting to corporal punishment shall be
underm	(ii) Regulation 11(1) which states that the persons running the Homes sha ensure generally order is maintained by those persons of influence and understanding of the staff and resorting to corporal punishment shall be
underm	(ii) Regulation 11(1) which states that the persons running the Homes sha ensure generally order is maintained by those persons of influence and understanding of the staff and resorting to corporal punishment shall be

# OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL

SPT-30204

The Plaintiff states that the incidents of abuse were totally unnecessary and abusive to the Plaintiff and there was no attempt to avoid corporal punishment which was the norm in the Home.

- (iii) Regulation 11(2) states where corporal punishment is needed for minor accidents of behaviour the punishment should take the form of forfeiture of rewards and privileges (pocket money or temporary loss of privileges) and providing that a light tap on the hand may occasionally be applied to the hand of the child with the object of indicating urgent disapproval rather than applying pain. The Plaintiff states there was never any issue of any such prescribed practice and repeats unnecessary violence and abuse was the accepted norm in the house and relies on the Particulars above.
- (iv) Regulation 11(3) states that any other forms of corporal punishment shall be subject to the following:
  - (a) Only on the hand or the posterior with a light cane and shall not exceed six strokes in the case of a child over ten years and three in the case of a child between eight and ten years. No child under eight years shall be so punished.
  - (b) It shall be administered by the person in charge of the Home.
  - (c) A second member of staff should be present.
  - (d) No caning in the present of other children

The Plaintiff states that none of the above happened and he was subjected to cruelty and abuse to an extent which was outside the limits defined.

- 8. The said Regulations were re-enacted by virtue of the Children and Young Persons (Voluntary Homes) Regulations (Northern Ireland) 1975 in their entirety and the Plaintiff relies on those breaches which are outlined above and which were valid until 1975, and relies on all of the above in proof of the said breaches applicable to the period of 1975 onwards.
- By reason of the aforesaid the Plaintiff suffered great pain and distress. His enjoyments of the amenities of life have been greatly interfered with and he has and will suffer loss and damage.

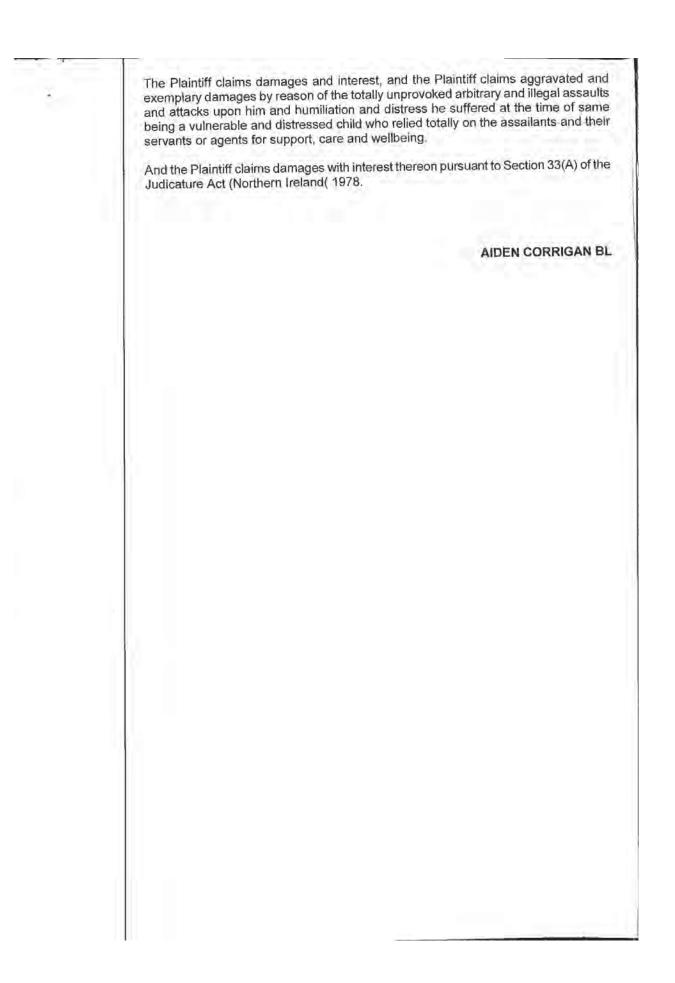
#### PARTICULARS OF PERSONAL INJURIES

Childhood post traumatic stress disorder. Substance dependency. Continuing psychological and psychiatric problems. Chronic emotional ill health. Continuing problems.

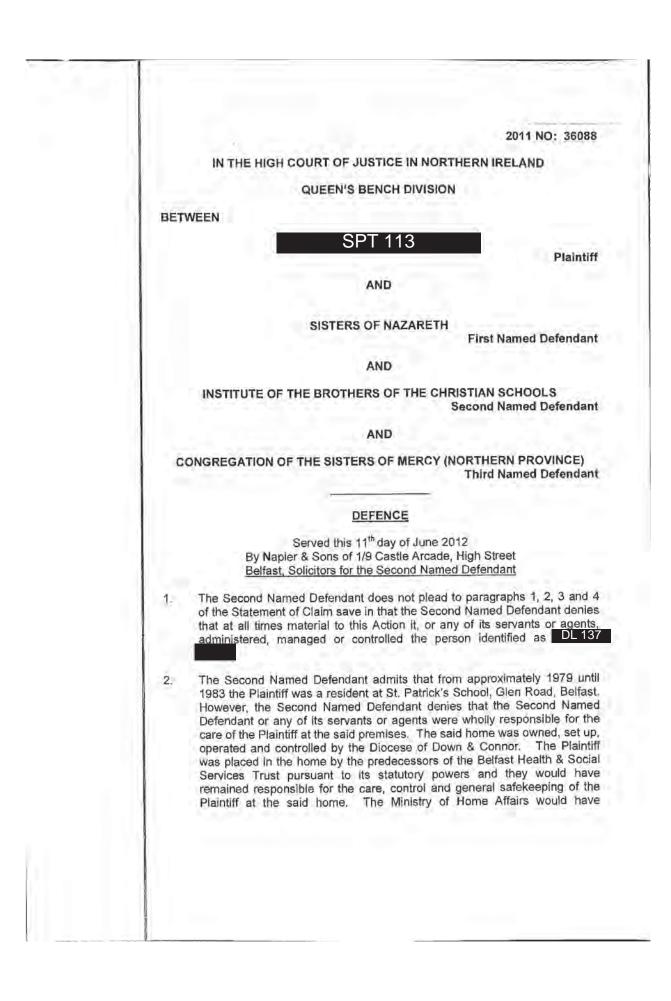
And the Plaintiff claims damages with respect to such financial loss as is commensurate with such injuries and suffering that the Plaintiff has been exposed to.

The Plaintiff by reason of exposure to such prolonged abuse and as a result of his resultant psychiatric and psychological condition has been unable to obtain employment or such employment as would have been commensurate with his abilities.

SPT-30205



SPT-30206



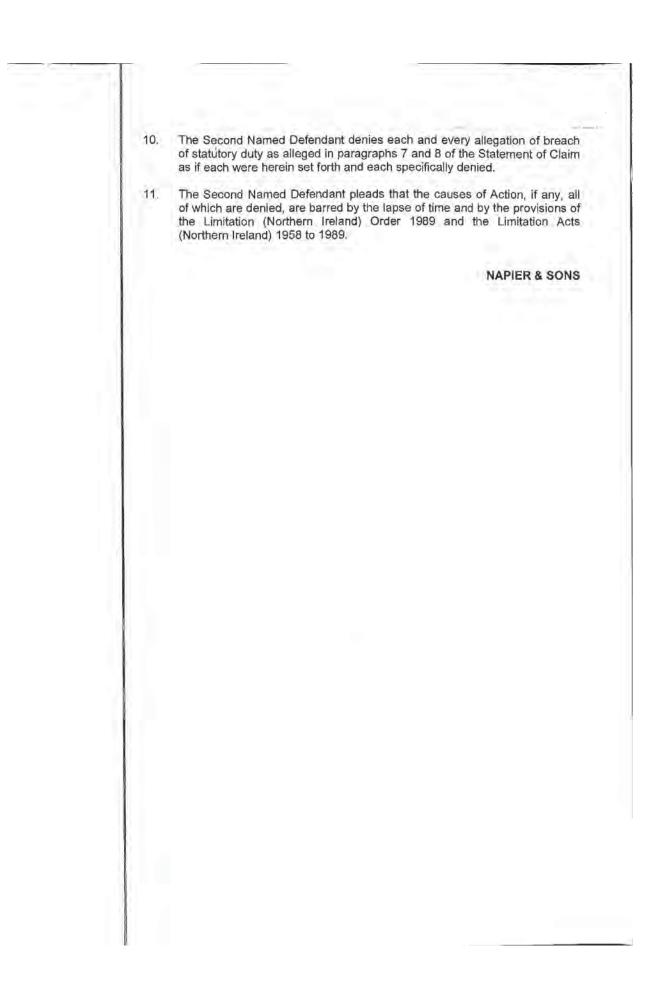
# SPT-30207

exercised supervisory powers of control and regulation over the said home and staff employed at the said home, including DL 137

3. The Second Named Defendant denies that the Plaintiff was subjected to assaults, sexual assaults, batteries and trespass to the person by DL 137 as alleged in paragraph 5 of the Statement of Claim and specifically denies each and every particular as set out in paragraph 5 as if same were herein set forth and each specifically traversed.

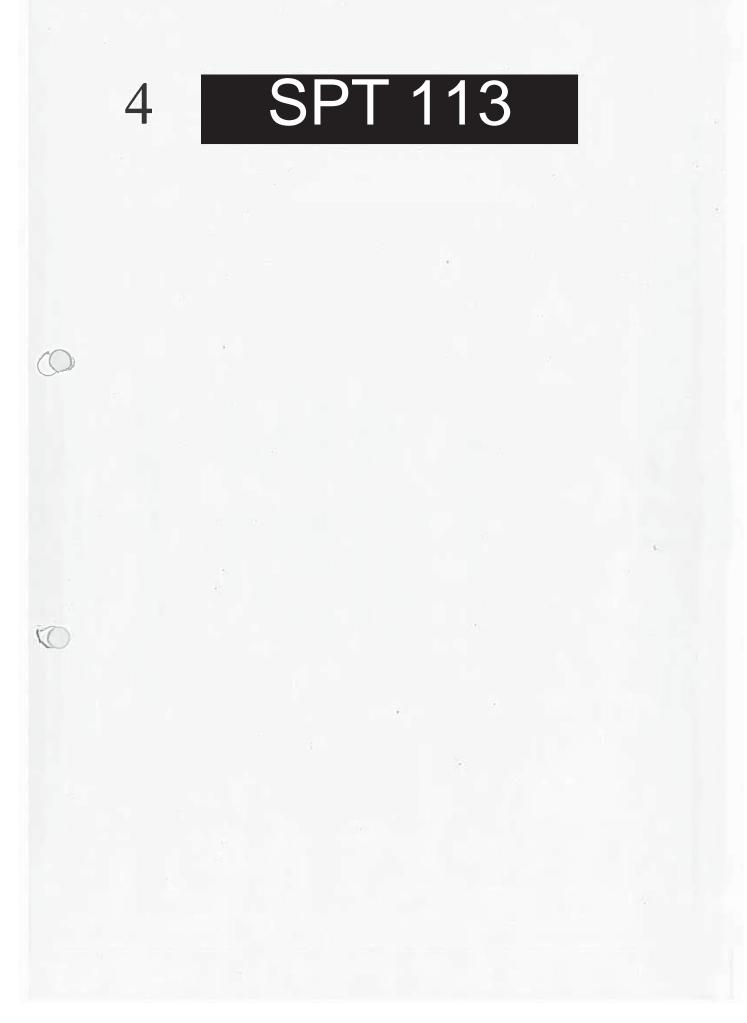
- The Second Named Defendant denies that at all times material to this Action, the said DL 137 was employed by the Second Named Defendant, or that he was a servant or agent of the Second Named Defendant, or that it exercised any care and control over the said individual as alleged in the Statement of Claim or at all.
- 5. At all times material to this Action, the Second Named Defendant denies that it, or any of its servants or agents, were guilty of the alleged or any sexual assaults, assaults, batteries and trespasses and further denies that it, or any of its servants or agents were guilty of the alleged or any negligence, and specifically denies each and every particular set out in paragraph 6 of the Statement of Claim as if the same were herein set forth and each specifically traversed.
- 6. If, which is denied, the Plaintiff did sustain the alleged or any psychiatric damage, personal injuries, loss, damage or incapacity, none of the same was caused or occasioned by reason of any act, neglect, fault or trespass to the Plaintiff's person by the Second Named Defendant, or any of its servants or agents.
- 7. If, which is denied, the alleged or any acts were, in fact, perpetrated by the said DL 137 and it is deemed that this individual was employed by or was a servant or agent of the Second Named Defendant, the Second Named Defendant pleads that the alleged or any such acts perpetrated by DL 137 were conducted wholly outside the scope of his employment with the Second Named Defendant.
- 8. If, which is denied, the alleged or any acts were perpetrated by the said DL 137 whether inside or outside the said premises, the Second Named Defendant pleads that it did not have any knowledge or means of knowledge of the alleged acts, that the Plaintiff did not make any complaints or reports to the Second Named Defendant, its servants or agents, and thereby the Second Named Defendant cannot be held responsible for the acts of others which occurred without its knowledge and beyond its control.
- The Second Named Defendant denies each and every allegation, whether of fact, negligence, assaults, batteries or trespass to the person as alleged in the Statement of Claim as if each were herein set forth and each specifically denied.

SPT-30208





SPT-30905



HIGGINS · HOLLYWOOD · DEAZLEY

solicitors

SPT-30906

Damian Deazley, LL.B. Michael J. Hollywood, B.A. atthew F Higgins, LL.B.

Caroline Dunlop, LL.B., M.Sc Fiona Sterritt, LL.B.

Lisa McMath, LL.B. Jenna Boyce, LL.B. Suzanne Keenan, LL.B. Charlene Graham LL.B., LL.M Peter Brennan BA Hons 005/0019/FS/FMCC

Our Ref:

Your Ref:

523 Antrim Road BELFAST BT15 3BS.

Telephone: 028 9077 0770 Facsimile: 028 9077 0700 DX 4500NR Belfast 15 Email: enquiries@HHDsolicitors.com

17 January 2013

Department of Justice Block B **Castle Buildings** Stormont Estate BELFAST **BT4 3SG** 

Dear Sirs.

RE: OUR CLIENT SPT 113 .v. INSTITUTE OF THE BROTHERS OF THE CHRISTIAN SCHOOLS

We act on behalf of Mr. SPT 113 of

It is our instructions that our client was injured whilst under your care as a resident at St. Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast, from in and about 1979 to 1983.

It is our client's specific instructions that he was injured as a result individual known as DL 137 later identified as of abuse from an . 137

We now write to claim damages on behalf of our client for personal injury, loss and damage sustained as the result of the negligence, assault, battery and trespass to the person by you're your servants and agents.

At this stage of our enquiries we would expect you to disclose any documentation you hold relevant and material to his action and, in particular, our client's records whilst resident at St. Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast.

12 ....

Also at 296 Cliftonville Road Belfast BT14 6LE Telephone: 028 9077 0770 Facsimile: 028 9074 9989 Practice Manager: Nan Mallett

> This firm is a member of the Home Charter Scheme. Jenna Boyce is a member of the Association of Collaborative Lawyers

SPT-30907

-2-

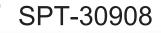
It is our understanding that the Northern Ireland Office had a responsibility for St. Patrick's Training School when direct rule was introduced post 1970.

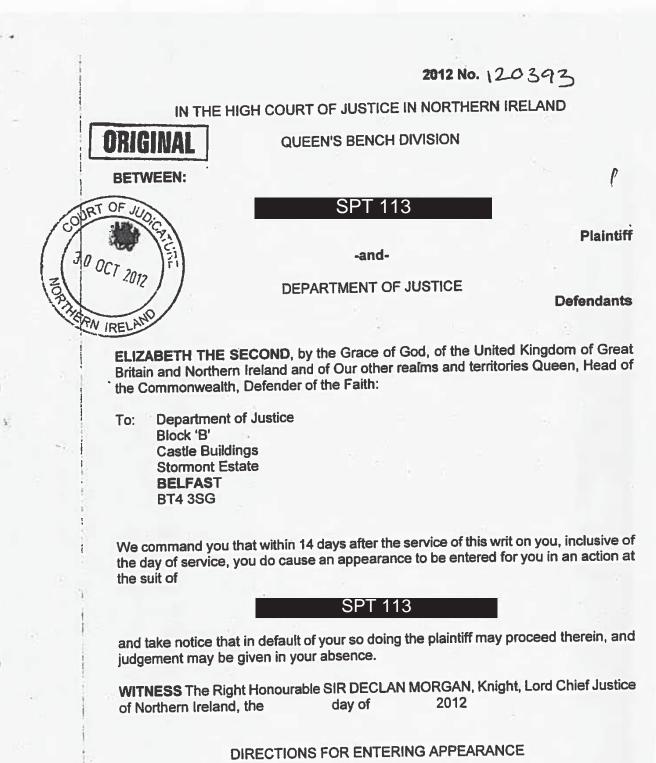
Yours faithfully,

C

HHBeazley

HIGGINS HOLLYWOOD DEAZLEY SOLICITORS





The Defendant may enter an appearance in person or by a solicitor either (1) by handing in the appropriate forms, duly completed, at the Central Office or Chancery Office [as appropriate], Royal Courts of Justice, Chichester Street, Belfast BT1 3JF, or (2) by sending them to that office by post. The appropriate forms may be purchased from HMSO Bookshop, 16 Arthur Street, Belfast BT1 4GD.

# SPT-30909

Real Plaintiff's claim is for damages for personal injury, loss and damage sustained by him by reason of the negligence, breach of statutory duty, assault, battery and treboass to the person of the Plaintiff by servants and agents of the Defendants when the Plaintiff was a resident in De La Salle Brothers Home, St. Patrick's Training School, Belfast, between 1979 and 1983.

#### A CORRIGAN BL

(Signed): Higgins Hollywood Deazley

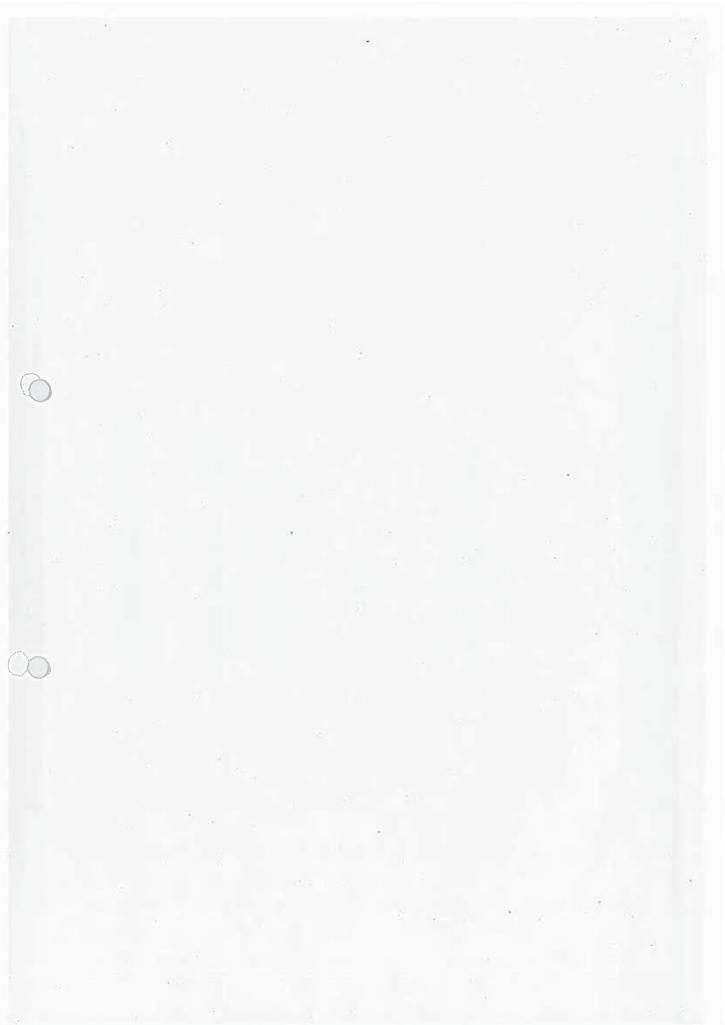
SPT-30910

This Writ was issued by Higgins Hollywood Deazley

of 523 Antrim Road, Belfast, in the County of the City of Belfast.

Solicitor for the said Plaintiff whose address is

# SPT-30911



SPT-30912

2012 No

# IN THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE OF NORTHERN IRELAND

# QUEEN'S BENCH DIVISION

**BETWEEN:** 

SPT 113

Plaintiff

-and-

DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE

Defendants

# WRIT OF SUMMONS

\_\_\_\_\_

**GENERAL FORM** 

Higgins Hollywood Deazley 523 Antrim Road Belfast BT15 3BS

SPT-30913

# No 12 **MEMORANDUM OF APPEARANCE** ORDER 12 RULE 3(2)) This and the two attached copies to be completed and delivered or sent to the appropriate Office, Royal Courts of Chichester Street, Belfast. COURT IN THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE IN NORTHERN IRELAND ERN IRELAND number from writ. 2012, No.120393 (2) Enter name of Division as shown in writ Queen's Bench Division **Between** (3) Copy name(s) of plaintiff(s) from writ. <sup>3</sup>Plaintiff(s) and DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE (4) Copy name(s) of defendant(s) from writ. <sup>4</sup>Defendant(s) (5) Give full names of defendant wishing to Please enter an Appearance for appear (see Note 1 on back) Department of Justice (6) Give name by which defendant is described [SUED AS] in writ if this differs from defendant's full name, otherwise delete words in square brackets. in this action day of february 2013 Paul in Dated the (7) To be signed by the defendant or solicitor Signed<sup>7</sup> entering the appearance. (8) A defendant appearing in person must give Whose address for service is his residence and, if he does not reside in **Departmental Solicitors Office** Northern Ireland some other place in Northern Centre House Ireland to which communications for him should be sent. Where the defendant appears by **79 Chichester Street** solicitor, the solicitor's place of business in Belfast BT1 4JE Northern Ireland should be given. N.B. - Additional notes for the guidance of defendants seeking to enter an appearance are given on the back. Please read them carefully. The form may have to be returned if any of the information required is omitted or given incorrectly. The delay may result in judgment being entered against the defendant. If judgment is entered, the defendant or his solicitor may have to pay the costs of applying to set it aside.

# SPT-30914

[Supply. No. 27 Feb 1997)]

1.

# (Back) ADDITIONAL NOTES

The defendant must give his or her full name.

2. Where the defendant is a firm, the appearance must be entered by the individual partners by name with the description "Partner in the firm of ..."

3. Where the defendant is an individual trading in a name other than his own, the appearance must be entered by him in his own name with the addition of the description Trading as ...".

4. Where the defendant is a limited liability company, or a minor or other person under disability, the appearance must be entered by a solicitor.

5. If the defendant has no defence or admits the plaintiff's claim, the entry of appearance will delay judgment and may increase the costs payable by the defendant. Any proposal for the payment of a debt by instalments or otherwise must be made direct to the plaintiff or his solicitor and not to the court.

6. A defendant who wishes to appear in person may obtain help in completing this form from the Central Office, the Chancery Office or the Probate and Matrimonial Office at the Royal Courts of Justice, Chichester Street, Belfast, as appropriate.

7. Where the defendant is unable to give the number of the action or any other information required to identify it, the writ served on the defendant should be produced for the court's inspection when the appearance is entered.

8. Where the appearance is being entered by leave of the court, a copy of the order granting leave must accompany this form.

9. These notes deal only with the more usual cases. In cases of any difficulty it is advisable to attend at the court office fort he purpose of entering an appearance.

[(a) No. 12A]

(a) Form 12A not printed in this edition but available separately as S.R. 1997 No. 70

# SPT-30915

2012 No. 120393

### IN THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE IN NORTHERN IRELAND

#### QUEEN'S BENCH DIVISION

**BETWEEN:** 

SPT 113

Plaintiff

DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE

and

Defendant

### STATEMENT OF CLAIM

Served this H day of July 2013 By Higgins Hollywood Deazley solicitors of 523 Antrim Road, Belfast, BT15 3BS

Writ issued the 30<sup>th</sup> October 2012.

1.

The Plaintiff resides at

and his date of birth is **a structure** At all times material to this action the Plaintiff was a resident of St. Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast, from approximately 1979 until 1983. He school was administered. Managed and controlled by servants and agents of the Defendant/predecessors in title, namely the Northern Ireland Office.

- 2. In or about 1979-1983 when the Plaintiff was aged 12-14 years he was sexually assaulted by a person known as DL 137 The Plaintiff was sexually abuses by this employee. His genitals were touched and mutual masturbation took place. This and similar sexual abuse took place over a period until he was about 14 years of age. The said individual was the servant or agent of the Defendant.
- 3. By reason of the aforesaid the Plaintiff sustained personal injuries, loss and damage. The said personal injuries, loss and damage were caused by the trespass to the person of the Plaintiff by servants or agents of the Defendant, negligence and breach of statutory duty.

#### PARTICULARS OF ASSAULT, BATTERY AND TRESPASS TO THE PERSON

(a) Assaulting the Plaintiff.

# SPT-30916

- (b) Sexually abusing the Plaintiff.
- (c) Causing the Plaintiff to be apprehensive for his own safety.
- (d) Causing the plaintiff to suffer great distress.

Further and in the alternative, the Defendant was guilty of negligence.

#### PARTICULARS OF NEGLIGENCE

- (a) Causing and permitting the Plaintiff to be sexually abused.
- (b) Causing and permitting the Plaintiff to be physically abused.
- (c) Failing to supervise or inspect the Home regularly or at all.
- (d) Failing to have any or any adequate regard for the injuries the Plaintiff was being subjected to.
- (e) Failing to inspect or check that the staff members were appropriate for the said Home.
- (f) Employing staff without checking their suitability for working in and around young people.
- (g) Failing to supervise the school adequately or at all.
- (h) Failing to inspect the school adequately or at all.
- (i) Failing to put in place and enforce an appropriate supervision system specifically to supervise those individuals who were given care, control or access to the Plaintiff.
- (j) Failing to provide a safe environment for the Plaintiff to live free from sexual abuse.
- (k) Causing the Plaintiff to suffer sexual abuse.

The Plaintiff will further rely on the fact that the Defendant was in breach of their duty of loco parentis with respect to the Plaintiff and repeat the above particulars.

 By reason of the aforesaid the Plaintiff suffered great pain and distress. His enjoyment of the amenities of life was and is interfered with and he has and will suffer loss and damage.

#### PARTICULARS OF PERSONAL INJURIES

Childhood post traumatic stress disorder. Substance dependency. Continuing psychological and psychiatric problems. Chronic emotional ill health. Continuing problems.

And the Plaintiff claims damages with respect to such financial loss as is commensurate with such injuries and suffering that the Plaintiff has been exposed to and the resultant mental injuries.

As a result of his psychiatric and psychological condition has been unable to obtain employment or such employment as would have been commensurate with his abilities.

#### PARTICULRS OF SPECIAL DAMAGE

#### Summary of Claims : Both Scenarios

	2A	2B	
	Total - £	Total - £	Range - £
Past loss of earnings	197,720	165,954	(24,765)
Future loss of earnings to Age 66	162,930	147,660	(15,270)
Less: Residual earnings to Age 65	( 20,066)	( 20,066)	
Expected Employer Pension Contributions to Age 66	3,326	2,810	( 516)
	4A	4B	
Interest on Past Losses	91,420	79,549	( 11,871)
TOTAL CLAIM	427,994	375,572	( 52,423)

The Plaintiff claims aggravated and exemplary by reason of the unprovoked arbitrary and illegal assaults and attacks upon him and by reason of the humiliation and distress he suffered at the time. He was a vulnerable, distressed young person who relied totally on the Defendant and its servants or agents for support, care and wellbeing.

And the Plaintiff claims damages with interest thereon pursuant to Section 33(A) of the Judicature Act (Northern Ireland) 1978.

AIDEN C. CORRIGAN BL

# SPT-30918

2012 No 120393

#### IN THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE IN NORTHERN IRELAND

#### **QUEEN'S BENCH DIVISION**

**BETWEEN:** 

SPT 113

Plaintiff:

and

#### DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE

Defendant:

#### DEFENCE

Served this ZTuck day of Character 2013 by The Solicitor, Department of Finance and Personnel Departmental Solicitor's Office, Centre House, 2nd Floor 79 Chichester Street, Belfast, Solicitor for the Defendant

- 1. The Defendant admits the contents of paragraph 1 of the Statement of Claim in so far as same relates to the Plaintiff's address and date of birth.
  - The Defendant does not admit that the Plaintiff was a resident of St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast from approximately 1979 to 1983 or at all.
  - 3. The Defendant denies that the said school was administered, managed or controlled by servants and agents of the Defendant or of the Northern Ireland Office. Pursuant to the Training School Rules (NI) 1952, the administration, management and control of Training Schools, such as St Patrick's, was the responsibility of the School's Board of Management.
  - The Defendant does not admit to the content of the first four sentences of paragraph 2 of the statement of claim.
  - 5. The Defendant denies that the person referred to at paragraph 2 of the statement of claim as DL 137 was a servant or agent of the

DF1/13/769139 KJB/EC

# SPT-30919

Defendant or of the Northern Ireland Office. Any such staff member was an employee of the Board of Management.

- 6. Further and in the alternative if, which is denied, DL 137 was a servant or agent of the Defendant or the Northern Ireland Office, the Defendant denies that either the Defendant or the Northern Ireland Office is vicariously or otherwise liable for the purposes of this action for any trespass, sexual assault or other wrongful act on the part of DL 137 against the Plaintiff.
- 7. The Defendant denies that the Plaintiff has sustained personal injuries, loss and damage as alleged or at all.
  - In the alternative, if the Plaintiff has suffered personal injuries, loss and damage as alleged or at all (which is denied), the Defendant denies that same were occasioned by trespass to the person, negligence, or breach of statutory duty on the part of the Defendant, the Northern Ireland Office, their servants or agents, as alleged or at all.
- The Defendant denies the Particulars of Assault, Battery and Trespass to the Person pleaded by the Plaintiff as if same were set out herein seriatim and each specifically denied.
- 10. The Defendant denies the Particulars of Negligence pleaded by the Plaintiff as if same were set out herein seriatim and each specifically denied.
- 11. To the extent that the Defendant or the Northern Ireland Office was under any duty to supervise or inspect the Home regularly and failed to do so, all of which is denied, it is denied that this amounted to the causing or permitting of the alleged sexual abuse or that such supervision or inspection would have prevented same.
- 12. To the extent that the Defendant or the Northern Ireland Office was under any duty to inspect or check that staff members were appropriate for the said Home and failed to do so, all of which is denied, it is denied that this

DF1/13/769139 KJB/EC

amounted to the causing or permitting of the alleged sexual abuse or that such inspection or checking would have prevented same.

- 13. The Defendant denies, if the Plaintiff has been unable to obtain employment or such employment as would have been commensurate with his abilities (which is not admitted), that same arises as a result of any alleged psychiatric or psychological condition, and further and in any event denies that it arises solely or at all in connection with the alleged sexual abuse.
- 14. The Defendant denies that the Plaintiff is entitled to aggravated or exemplary damages.
- 15. The Defendant denies that the Plaintiff relied on the Defendant, its servants or agents (or on the Northern Ireland Office, its servants or agents) for support, care and wellbeing.
- 16. The Defendant says that the Plaintiff's causes of action, if any, are barred by operation of law, specifically the Limitation (NI) Order 1989, and by previous enactments repealed by that Order.
- 17. To the extent that it is found that the Northern Ireland Office is liable to the Plaintiff in respect of this action, which is denied, the Defendant further denies that in any event it incurs that liability now on behalf of the Northern Ireland Office as successor in title or otherwise, on the basis of the operation of Article 18 (and in particular Article 18(5)) of the Northern Ireland Act 1998 (Devolution of Policing and Justice Functions) Order 2010, or otherwise at all.

Save as otherwise appears, the Defendant denies each and every allegation of fact in the Statement of Claim as if the same were set forth and specifically traversed seriatim.

**PGJ Coll** 

DF1/13/769139 KJB/EC

# SPT-30921

2011 No. 36088

#### IN THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE IN NORTHERN IRELAND

#### QUEEN'S BENCH DIVISION

**BETWEEN:** 

13 .

SPT 113

Plaintiff

and

#### SISTERS OF NAZARETH

1<sup>st</sup> Defendant

INSTITUTE OF THE BROTHERS OF THE CHRISTIAN SCHOOLS

2<sup>nd</sup> Defendant

CONGREGATION OF THE SISTERS OF MERCY (NORTHERN PROVINCE)

3<sup>rd</sup> Defendant

#### AMENDED STATEMENT OF CLAIM

Served this 23<sup>rd</sup> day of December 2011 By Higgins Hollywood Deazley solicitors of 523 Antrim Road, Belfast, BT15 3BS

Writ issued-the 21st March-2041. ---

1. The Plaintiff resides at and his date of birth is 28<sup>th</sup> March 1967.

2. At all times material to this action the Plaintiff was a resident of Nazareth Lodge, Ormeau Road, Belfast, from approximately April 1973 to September 1973 which was run, managed, controlled and administered by the First named Defendant, its servants or agents. Further, he was a resident in a home run by the Third named Defendant, namely the Sister of Mercy, Newry, from approximately 1974 to 1975 which was run, managed, controlled and administered by the Third named Defendant and a resident of St. Patrick's School, Glen Road, Belfast, from approximately 1979 to 1983 which was administered, managed and controlled by the Second named Defendant.

# SPT-30922

- 3. In or about 1973 when the Plaintiff was a resident of Nazareth Lodge he was constantly, psychologically abused by the Nuns, servants and agents of the Defendants. He was told that he did not belong to his parents but that he belonged to them and to God. He was continually told that his parents were bad people and that he had the devil inside him. He was beaten with wooden implements and he was assaulted by way of being hit on the ear and head. He was harshly treated and made to stand in the corner of the hallway and face the wall, head down, for no apparent reason. He was put into a stationary large tumble dryer to stop him crying. He was constantly and consistently abused.
- 4. In and about 1975 the Plaintiff was aged 8 years of age and whilst at the Convent of Mercy, Newry, which was administered by the Third named Defendant, he was continuously slapped and abused for not eating marmalade on a regular basis. He was force fed with marmalade down his throat. He was forced to be sick. He was continuously sick. Further, in and about 1975, he was continuously covered in bruising as a result of beatings and harsh treatment by servants or agents of the said Defendants at the said Convent.
  - In and about 1979 to 1982 the Plaintiff was aged 12 to 14 years he was a resident in St. Patrick's Care Home, Glen Road, Belfast, which was run and administered by the Second named Defendant. He was sexually assaulted by a person known as DL 137 The Plaintiff was taken into a room in the kitchen where his genitals were touched and mutual masturbation took place. This and similar sexual abuse took place over a period until he was about 14 years of age. The said individual came into the Plaintiff's bedroom and again would sexually abuse him. The said individual was a servant or agent of the Defendant.
- 6. By reason of the aforesaid the Plaintiff sustained personal injuries, battery and trespass to the person by the Plaintiff, the servants and agents of the Defendant and each of them.

# PARTICULARS OF ASSAULT, BATTERY AND TRESPASS TO THE PERSON

(a) Assaulting the Plaintiff.

5.

- (b) Sexually abusing the Plaintiff.
- (c) Causing the Plaintiff to be apprehensive for his own safety.
- (d) Causing the plaintiff to suffer great distress.

Further and in the alternative, the Defendants, and each of them, were guilty of negligence.

ая <sub>11</sub>	
- m	PARTICULARS OF NEGLIGENCE
	(a) Causing and permitting the Plaintiff to be sexually abused.
<sup>- 2</sup>	<ul> <li>(b) Causing and permitting the Plaintiff to be physically abused.</li> <li>(c) Failing to supervise or inspect the Home regularly or at all.</li> </ul>
	(d) Failing to have any or any adequate regard for the injuries the Plaintiff was
	<ul><li>being subjected to.</li><li>(e) Failing to adequately inspect or check the staff out.</li></ul>
	(f) Employing staff who were totally inappropriate in the circumstances.
	(g) Failing to have any or adequate regard for the safety of the Plaintiff with respect to the said staff.
1 () and a set of the	<ul> <li>(h) Failing to inspect or supervise the school adequately or at all.</li> <li>(i) Causing and permitting the Plaintiff to be physically and sexually abused.</li> </ul>
	(j) Failing to have any or adequate regard for the safety of the Plaintiff.
	(k) Failing to acknowledge and enforce an appropriate supervision system specifically designed to supervise those individuals who were given care and control of the Plaintiff.
	<ul> <li>Failing to have any or adequate supervision and checking of personnel in the Home.</li> </ul>
0	(m) Failing to provide a safe environment for the Plaintiff to live in free from sexual abuse.
0	<ul> <li>(n) Failing to provide a safe environment for the Plaintiff to live in free from physical abuse.</li> </ul>
	(o) Failing to ensure that the staff were adequately instructed and skilled in the appropriate child care.
	(p) Failing to provide a safe environment for the Plaintiff.
	The Plaintiff will further rely on the fact that the Defendants were in breach referred to as the loco parentis with respect to the Plaintiff.
	Further, or in the alternative, the Homes where the Plaintiff was resident during the totality of his stay, where the Voluntary Homes as defined as Section 126 of the Children's and Young Person's Act (Northern Ireland) 1968, in that they were Homes used for boarding, protection, care and maintenance of poor children or children otherwise in need of help, being a Home supported by voluntary contribution, the subject of that Act aforesaid and the regulations made under it when so registered.
00	
	(i) The Defendants were in breach of Regulation 4 of the said Regulations in that any such home must be conducted in such a manner and under such principles as will further the wellbeing of the children in the home.
	The plaintiff repeats the above Particulars and incidents demonstrating the Defendants were in breach of same and stating that such treatment received grossly undermined his welfare and wellbeing.
27.5	(ii) Regulation 11(1) which states that the persons running the Homes shall ensure generally order is maintained by those persons of influence and understanding of the staff and resorting to corporal punishment shall be avoided as far as possible.
	4 A S
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	

# SPT-30924

naintiff states that the incidents of abuse were totally unnecessary and abusive to the Plaintiff and there was no attempt to avoid corporal punishment which was the norm in the Home.

- (iii) Regulation 11(2) states where corporal punishment is needed for minor accidents of behaviour the punishment should take the form of forfeiture of rewards and privileges (pocket money or temporary loss of privileges) and providing that a light tap on the hand may occasionally be applied to the hand of the child with the object of indicating urgent disapproval rather than applying pain. The Plaintiff states there was never any issue of any such prescribed practice and repeats unnecessary violence and abuse was the accepted norm in the house and relies on the Particulars above.
- (iv) Regulation 11(3) states that any other forms of corporal punishment shall be subject to the following:
  - (a) Only on the hand or the posterior with a light cane and shall not exceed six strokes in the case of a child over ten years and three in the case of a child between eight and ten years. No child under eight years shall be so punished.
  - (b) It shall be administered by the person in charge of the Home.
  - (c) A second member of staff should be present.
  - (d) No caning in the present of other children

The Plaintiff states that none of the above happened and he was subjected to cruelty and abuse to an extent which was outside the limits defined.

- 8. The said Regulations were re-enacted by virtue of the Children and Young Persons (Voluntary Homes) Regulations (Northern Ireland) 1975 in their entirety and the Plaintiff relies on those breaches which are outlined above and which were valid until 1975, and relies on all of the above in proof of the said breaches applicable to the period of 1975 onwards.
- 9. By reason of the aforesaid the Plaintiff suffered great pain and distress. His enjoyments of the amenities of life have been greatly interfered with and he has and will suffer loss and damage.

# PARTICULARS OF PERSONAL INJURIES

Childhood post traumatic stress disorder. Substance dependency. Continuing psychological and psychiatric problems. Chronic emotional ill health. Continuing problems.

And the Plaintiff claims damages with respect to such financial loss as is commensurate with such injuries and suffering that the Plaintiff has been exposed to.

The Plaintiff by reason of exposure to such prolonged abuse and as a result of his resultant psychiatric and psychological condition has been unable to obtain employment or such employment as would have been commensurate with his abilities.

The Plaintiff claims damages and interest, and the Plaintiff claims aggravated and exemplary damages by reason of the totally unprovoked arbitrary and illegal assaults and attacks upon him and humiliation and distress he suffered at the time of same being a vulnerable and distressed child who relied totally on the assailants and their servants or agents for support, care and wellbeing.

# PARTICULARS OF SPECIAL DAMAGE

Summary of Claims : Both Scenarios

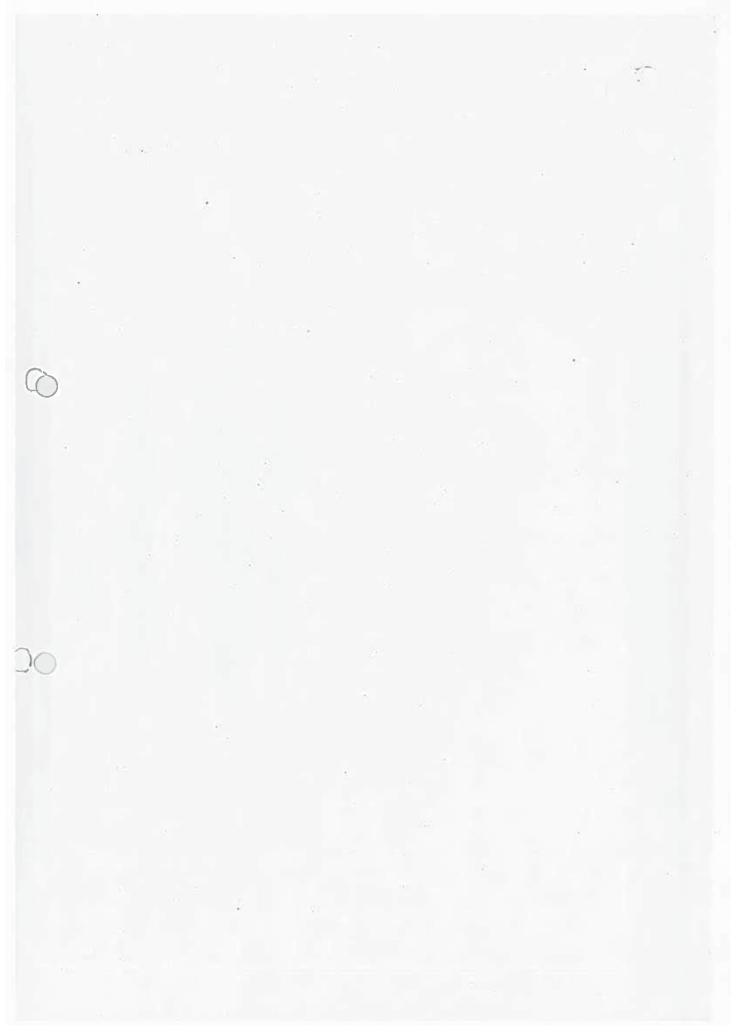
		Scenario A	Scenario B	1.11
		(Skills Level 2)	(Skills Level 1	
	Appendix	Total - £	Total - £	Range - £
Past loss of earnings	_2A/2B_	190,720	165.954	(24.765)
Future loss of earnings to Age 66	<u>2A/2B</u>	162,930	147,660	(15,270)
Less:				
Residual earnings to				
Age 65	<u>2A.2B</u>	(20,066)	(20,066)	-
Expected Employer	3	3,326	2,810	( 516)
Pension Contributions				
to Age 66 Less:				
Residual Employer				
Pension Contributions				(Second
to Age 65	3	(335)	(335)	-
		336,574	296.023	( 40.552)
Interest on Past Losses	_4A/4B_	91.420	79,549	(11,871)
TOTAL CLAIM		427,994	375,572	( 52,423)

And the Plaintiff claims damages with interest thereon pursuant to Section 33(A) of the Judicature Act (Northern Ireland(1978.

AIDEN CORRIGAN BL

SPT-30925

SPT-30926



SPT-30927



0

50

# **Medical Evidence**

# SPT-30928

#### MANGAN MEDICAL SERVICES LTD NI065907 Dr Brian Mangan MD MRCPsych

Email:

Your ref:

Medical Associates, 25 Derryvolgie Avenue, Belfast 9.

Bluestone Unit, Craigavon Area Hospital Lurgan Road, Craigavon

005/0019FS/FMcC

**Appointments and Correspondence to:** Tel: 07981388229

manganmedical@googlemail.com

#### Our ref: Bm/gg

5 July 2010

Higgins Hollywood Deazley Solicitors 523 Antrim Road Belfast BT15 3BS

#### MEDICO-LEGAL REPORT ON

#### SPT 113

Date of Birth:

#### Introduction

I interviewed the above-named plaintiff at Craigavon Area Hospital on 5 July 2010 at the request of Higgins Hollywood Deazley. Solicitors, for the purposes of preparing this medico-legal report. I understand SPT 113 is seeking compensation for psychological injuries he developed as a consequence of childhood sexual abuse whilst in care. I had access to a copy of the plaintiff's general practitioner notes and records.

Plaintiff's Account of Childhood Traumatic Experiences and Subsequent Psychological Impact

SPT 113 informed me he was physically, mentally and sexually abused whilst in care. He explained that he was placed in care at the age of approximately 7. Initially he was placed in Nazareth Lodge in Belfast and subsequently transferred to the Convent of Mercy in Newry. He was later placed in St Patrick's Training School on the Glen Road in Belfast in and around 1979. He explained that he was frequently beaten with sticks whilst in care. He explained that he was also physically assaulted by staff and made to stand against a wall for long periods. He said he was treated harshly when he was bathed. He explained that his back was scrubbed with a deck scrubber until his skin was raw and began to bleed. He explained on several occasions he was placed in a large tumble dryer for punishment. He said that he was told by nuns that he didn't belong to a family and instead belonged to the nuns and God and "the devil is in you". He

# SPT-30929

2

informed me he was sexually abused by a cook<sup>DL 137</sup> in St Patrick's Training school on the Glen Road in Belfast approximately 18 times between the age of 12 and 14.

**SPT 113** explained that because of his experiences in childhood he has great difficulties controlling his temper. He explained that "it is very hard for me not to strike out". He describes his temperament as "very violent". He informed me during fights with his wife he has physically struck out on many occasions. He explained that during arguments with his wife, when he is confronted by her he has flashbacks to being assaulted by nuns whilst in care.

He informed me he had problems with nocturnal enuresis until the age of 15. He alleges that he was "beaten to pulp" for wetting the bed. He reports ongoing nightmares relating to his childhood sexual abuse. He describes nightmares in relation to being physically reprimanded by nuns. He says as a child he felt "torn up". He explained that he was withdrawn, he was jumpy, he bit his nails. He explained he was force fed marmalade and porridge and in adulthood will not eat these foods.

He reports that he had difficulties at school and has few recollections of being in class. He reports that he has had difficulties with reading in adulthood. He had difficulties with intimacy in adulthood relating to his sexual abuse. He explained that when he has been with women he has had flashbacks to the incidents with DL 137. He explained that he cannot change with other men in the shower. He reports that because of his childhood experiences he will not attend church and doesn't want to be buried. He reports that his sleep pattern is "up the left". He reports that he has fits of crying when he watches television programmes relating to abuse.

SPT 113 informed me whilst in care he was teased by other children about not being wanted by his family. He explained that his mother and his father was subsequently imprisoned, having been convicted of He explained that other residents in St Patrick's training school had been placed there due to criminal behaviour. He

explained that he was intent on obtaining a criminal record so that he would not stand out from other boys in St Patrick's training school.

He reports that he has an extensive criminal record and estimates he has spent 20 years of his life in prison due to his offending behaviour. He reports that he has used drugs to block out painful feelings and has been addicted to amphetamines and cocaine for many years. He has only recently stopped taking these drugs.

He continues to report relationship difficulties due to his difficulties controlling his temper.

#### **Personal History**

The patient was born in the explained he initially lived in the the explained he initially lived in the text of the was taken into care at the age of 3. On leaving St Patrick's training school at the age of 14 he was

placed in the Young Offenders Centre. He explained that he wanted to obtain a criminal record. He explained that he was convicted of stealing an ambulance. He explained that he has received custodial sentences of 12 and 10 years duration. He estimates that he has had 80 convictions. He was released from prison 5 years ago. He explained he now feels he is too old to return to a prison environment.

He reports that he was in paid employment 3 years ago. He was employed in security work on a building site for approximately a year. He is currently unemployed.

SPT 113 informed me he began dating at the age of 15 or 16. He married his first wife at the age of 24. The marriage ended 8 years later. He informed me his first wife developed alcoholism and became a prostitute. He has 3 children from this relationship aged **Example 1**. He continues to have contact with his elder children **and beta and beta but does not have contact with** 

his son who has been fostered.

He describes difficulties in his relationship with his partner **explained** He explained that he is intensely jealous and does not like to see his partner in the company of other men. He reports ongoing difficulties controlling aggressive impulses.

He informed me that he has few interests. He does go to a gym every other day and takes his dog out for a walk. He explained he spends long periods sitting at home.

#### **Family History**

The patient's father died 8-9 years ago at the age of 53. He had suffered a heart attack. Mr SPT 113 was in prison at the time of his father's death. He describes his father as "a very hyper man". He explained that despite his imprisonments and periods of his life in care he remained close to his father. He informed me his father was employed as a 4 year custodial sentence for the mother at the time of her death. He believes his parents had a history of before his mother's death.

He reports that he is eldest of a sibship of He explained that his sister is aged and has children and his sister is aged and has children. His sister is aged has a history of mental health problems. He informed me his sister committed suicide years ago at the age of He believes his sister's death related to traumatic experiences whilst in care. The plaintiff's younger siblings were also placed in care. He believes his sister is has a conviction for theft.

SPT-30930

# SPT-30931

4

### **Previous Medical History**

The patient informed me he experienced a stroke whilst imprisoned in Maghaberry prison 6 years ago. He said he was paralysed down the left side of his body. He also has been treated for stomach ulceration.

### Previous Psychiatric History

The patient informed me he has attended psychiatrists whilst in prison. He has a history of deliberate self-harm from the age of 16/17. He explained he swallowed light bulbs and razor blades. He continued engaging in deliberate self-harm for several years. He explained that he has been prescribed courses of Temazepam for sleep disturbance, the last time being 2 weeks ago. In the past he has been prescribed medication for his anxiety problems but has difficulties tolerating prescribed medications.

### Substance Misuse History

The patient began smoking at the age of 12 or 13. He smokes 20 cigarettes per day. He informed me he drank himself into a stupor at the age of 13 when he consumed a bottle of whiskey. He subsequently developed hypothermia. As a consequence of this experience he did not drink alcohol again.

He reports a history of drug addiction. He explained that he was taking cocaine on a daily basis until approximately 3 months ago. He was taking up to one ounce of cocaine daily. He began using amphetamines at the age of 16 or 17 and continued to use this drug until approximately 4 months ago. He used amphetamines 2 or 3 nights per week "to block things out". He began smoking cannabis at the age of 14. He still smokes cannabis on a daily basis up to 7 cannabis joints daily. He explained that for a year he misused solvents at the age of 12. He has not used intravenous drugs.

# Forensic History

SPT 113 informed me he has been in prison for a total of approximately 20 years. His first offence was in 1979 for taking and driving away a vehicle. He believes he has approximately 20 convictions for car theft. His first custodial sentence was for 6 months in a Young Offenders Centre. He explained he was also imprisoned in the Maze prison for possession of a firearm. He served 2 years of a 4 year sentence. He received a 12 year custodial sentence for conspiracy to armed robbery and a 10 year sentence for armed robbery, imprisonment and kidnapping. He explained that he has about 80 convictions.

# SPT-30932

5

Current Medication Losec and Plavix.

#### **Mental State Examination**

The patient was co-operative throughout the interview. He was distressed when talking about his difficulties. He continues to describe difficulties falling and remaining asleep. He describes ongoing nightmares relating to his childhood sexual abuse and physical abuse. He describes hypervigilance and a heightened startle reflex. He reports problems with irritability and mood swings. He describes ongoing problems with sexual intimacy. The patient had no difficulties with attention and concentration during the course of the interview. There was no abnormality of recent memory.

### **Review of General Practitioner Notes and Records**

The patient's notes and records confirm his admission to the Belfast City Hospital on the 1 June 2008 with a two day history of haematemesis. The patient was diagnosed as suffering from a gastro-oesophageal reflux disease with oesophagitis. It is documented he had a previous history of gastro-intestinal bleeding and a possible cerebrovascular accident in 2006.

SPT 113 records contain correspondence from Dr Una O'Hegarty, staff grade Forensic Psychiatrist dated 22 April 2004. It is documented 'SPT 113 is a year old married man who has never worked and is currently serving an 8 year sentence for armed robbery related offences. He does describe intermittent anxiety and depressive symptoms for most of his life but does not appear to have seen these as a significant problem until recently. He suffered a cerebrovascular accident in June 2003 and was recently treated in the Royal Victoria Hospital. In

he was moved from Maghaberry to Magilligan due to an alleged loyalist plot to murder him there". It is documented his mood had deteriorated significantly since this move. "He now feels constantly anxious and worried, particularly about the possibility of a further cerebrovascular attack". It is documented he had been placed on the sex-offenders wing for his own protection. It is documented the patient had problems with sleep disturbance, initial insomnia and appetite impairment. It is documented he found his sister's suicide in 2001 difficult to cope with. There was no evidence of a significant depressive illness.

Correspondence from Dr Gibson, Consultant Neurologist dated 29 July 2003 confirms the patient was admitted to the Northern Ireland Neurology Service in the Royal Victoria Hospital from 20 June 2003 – 30 June 2003 for brain stem stroke.

The patient's computerised notes and records confirm he was involved in a road traffic accident in November 2001. An entry of the 28 November 2001 indicates he had problems initiating and

maintaining sleep, "stress related". An entry of the 28 December 2001 reports "anxiety state postpetrol bombing, no alcohol, denies recent drug usage". An entry of the 22 April 2004 reports "anxiousness".

The patient's records contain an entry of the 24 June 2002 reporting that he had tonsillectomy in 1971, that he suffered from dyspepsia and was a smoker. It is documented he had problems with anxiety.

#### Opinion

Diagnosis

- childhood post-traumatic stress disorder

substance dependency

This year old man suffered physical, sexual and emotional abuse whilst in care. As a consequence of his traumatic experiences in care he developed childhood post-traumatic stress disorder. Post-traumatic stress disorder arises as a delayed or protracted response to a stressful event or situation of either brief or long duration of an exceptionally threatening or catastrophic nature which is likely to cause pervasive distress in almost anyone. His post-traumatic stress disorder was characterised by distressing flashbacks and nightmares occurring against a background of emotional constriction and avoidance behaviour. SPT 113 developed significant problems of hyperarousal characterised by hypervigilance, a heightened startle reflex, difficulties falling and remaining asleep, irritability and difficulties controlling aggressive impulses.

In my opinion SPT 113 emotional difficulties in childhood had a significant bearing on his development of antisocial behaviours. He reports significant conduct disturbance and substance misuse from early adolescence. The patient's early separation from his parents and the death of his mother whilst in childhood would have predisposed him to developing a more protracted traumatic stress response following his first experiences whilst in care.

SPT 113 has had lifelong problems with substance dependency. I am of the opinion his traumatic experiences in childhood would have increased his vulnerability to developing problems with substance dependency. By his own admission SPT 113 set out to engage in criminal behaviour from an early age. He only had very brief periods of paid employment. His lifelong involvement in criminal behaviour would have also had a significant bearing on the chronicity of his addiction problems.

SPT 113 continues to describe problems in adulthood with sexual intimacy arising from his childhood sexual abuse. He continues to describe distressing nightmares and flashbacks in relation to sexual abuse which took place in St Patrick's training college. The suicide of Mr SPT 113 sister would have also been a maintaining factor for problems with substance dependency.

# SPT-30934

In my opinion SPT 113 no longer meets ICD10 or DMS4 criteria for post-traumatic stress disorder but continues to show evidence of chronic emotional health as a consequence of his traumatic experiences.

#### Declaration I declare that:

(3)

A

(1)	assist the court and that this take priority own written reports and giving evidence is to
	paid. I confirm that I have complied and will continue to comply with this duty;

ny reports and in my opinions to be accurate and to have covered all relevant issues concerning the matters stated, which I have been asked to address, and the opinions expressed represent my true and complete professional opinion;

I have endeavoured to include in my report those matters of which I have knowledge and of which I have been made aware which might adversely affect the validity of my opinion; I have indicated the sources of all information that I have used; (4)

I have where possible formed an independent view on matters suggested to me by others (5) including my instructing lawyers and their client; where I have relied upon information from others, including my instructing lawyers and their client, I have so disclosed in my

I will notify those instructing me immediately and confirm in writing if, for any reason, my (6) existing report or opinion requires any correction or qualification; (7) I understand that:

- (a) My report, subject to any corrections before swearing as to its correctness, will form the evidence which I will give under oath or affirmation;
- (b) I may be cross-examined on my report by a cross-examiner assisted by an expert; (c) I am likely to be the subject of public adverse criticism by the judge if the court concludes that I have not taken reasonable care in trying to meet the standard set out
- I confirm that I have not entered into any arrangement whereby the amount or payment of (8) my fees, charges or expenses is in any way dependent upon the outcome of this case.

Dr Brian Mangan, MD MRCPsych **Consultant Psychiatrist** 

### MANGAN MEDICAL SERVICES LTD NI065907 Dr Brian Mangan MD MRCPsych

Medical Associates, 25 Derryvolgie Avenue, Belfast 9. Appointments and Correspondence to: Tel: 07981388229

Bluestone Unit, Craigavon Area Hospital Lurgan Road, Craigavon

SPT-30935

Email: manganmedical@googlemail.com

Our ref: Bm/gg

Your ref:

/005/0019FS/FMcC

11 August 2011

Higgins Hollywood Deazley Solicitors 523 Antrim Road Belfast BT15 3BS

ADDENDUM REPORT ON

SPT 113

#### Date of Birth:

#### Introduction

I had previously prepared a report on the above-named patient's condition dated 5 July 2010. I have now been asked to give an opinion on the specific impact of the patient's experiences of \_ childhood sexual abuse and subsequent psychological wellbeing. I had access to my original notes and records and my previous report.

At the time of my initial assessment of SPT 113 he informed me that he was sexually abused by a cook approximately 18 times between the ages of 12 and 14. As a consequence of his childhood sexual abuse he developed childhood post-traumatic stress disorder. He experienced distressing nightmares in relation to his childhood sexual abuse. He had problems with nocturnal enuresis. He developed significant problems with hyperarousal and continued to have problems throughout his adult life dealing with his feelings of anger. In adulthood he has significant distress when watching television programmes in relation to childhood sexual abuse. SPT 113 also has had problems with intimacy throughout his adult life as a consequence of his sexual abusive experiences.

SPT 113, developed significant problems with alcohol misuse in his early teenage years. He subsequently engaged in deliberate self-harm in his mid teenage years, around the ages of 16 and

SPT-30936

17. His sexual abuse occurred at a critical stage in his development. This significantly increased his vulnerability to developing problems with substance dependency.

In my opinion the patient's childhood sexual abuse had a greater impact on his subsequent psychological development than the physical and emotional abuse he experienced whilst in care. The traumatic death of his mother would have also had a significant bearing on his emotional development.

Patients who are sexually traumatised are at much great risk of developing disorders of their personality development. In SPT 113 case there is a significant linkage between his life-long criminal behaviour and his addiction problems.

SPT 113 continues to have significant problems with his emotional wellbeing as a consequence of his childhood sexual abuse. These difficulties are likely to continue to run a fluctuating course.

Dr Brian Mangan, MD MRCPsych Consultant Psychiatrist

# SPT-30937

# DR BRIAN MANGAN MD, FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

MUSGRAVE HOUSE 10 Stockman's Lane Belfast BT9 7JA

BLUESTONE UNIT Craigavon Area Hospital Lurgan Road Craigavon BT62 5QQ

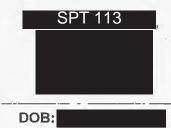
Appointments and Correspondence to: Musgrave House, 10 Stockman's Lane, Belfast, BT9 7JA. Tel: 07981 388229 Email: <u>manganmedical@googlemail.com</u>

26<sup>th</sup> June 2013

Your Ref: 005/0019FS/FMCC Our Ref: BM/LS/ADD

Higgins Hollywood Deazley Solicitors, 296 Cliftonville Road, Belfast, BT14 6LE.

# ADDENDUM MEDICO-LEGAL REPORT ON:



I had previously prepared reports on the above named plaintiff's condition dated 5<sup>th</sup> July 2010 and 11<sup>th</sup> August 2011. I have now been provided with a report prepared by Professor Tom Fahy, Consultant Psychiatrist, dated 27<sup>th</sup> November 2012, HMP Maghaberry medical notes and records and Youth Justice documentation. This report summarises the relevant materials and addresses Professor Fahy's findings.

A social report on the family confirms that they became known to Social Services in 1971. Mrs made a request for assistance with financial and marital problems and complaining about her husband's aggressive behaviour and extreme possessiveness. The report stated that marital harmony increased until Mrs was admitted to the Mater Hospital on 19<sup>th</sup> April 1973 after taking an overdose of sleeping tablets. Her children were

# SPT-30938

Insequently admitted to care, placed in Nazareth Lodge and St Joseph's Babies Home, on 20<sup>th</sup> April 1973. After discharge from hospital Mrs went to live with her mother and avoided contact with her husband and Social Worker. It noted that Mrs had been granted a separation order and custody of the children, however she showed no intention of bringing the children out of care. Mr became increasingly anxious about this. He became agitated and distressed and felt so very helpless in the situation that on

he was arrested for

he was subsequently sentenced to 2 years

imprisonment. It noted that SPT 113 was most active as a young child. He was a poor sleeper, frequently wet the bed and was generally very destructive. He was a moody child and often had temper tantrums when he could not have his own way.

The records indicate that on 9<sup>th</sup> September 1975 the children were transferred to the Palmerston Assessment Centre. Whilst in Palmerston SPT 113 found difficulty in mixing with the other children in the centre and his approach to them was constantly challenged for supremacy. He exhibited other behaviour problems such as nail biting, eye twitching, bed wetting, lying and stealing. He often exhibited very aggressive behaviour.

The records indicate that he was admitted to Fallowfield Residential School on 15<sup>th</sup> May 1978. It was noted that he did not make progress in Fallowfield and sometimes would sleep rough. A decision was made to place <sup>SPT 113</sup> in St Patrick's Training School.

A report from Fallowfield School stated that his school attendance was very poor. He would evade and run away from the Social Worker on many occasions.

A report from St Patrick's Training School dated February 1980 confirms that <sup>SPT 113</sup> then aged 13, was behaving in a childish and immature way. It was noted that he had to endure many traumatic experiences in his life, the death of his mother, and subsequent removal of his 3 sisters into care. He does however seem to have a strong relationship with his father who in turn has expressed a willingness to help him with his problems. It was noted that <sup>SPT 113</sup> had been at St Patrick's now for approximately 14 months and had not at that stage made any significant progress.

Prison notes and records confirm his problems with asthma and his previous cerebro-vascular accident. Reflux symptoms were also noted.

Medical Records Department Healthcare Centre, HMP Maghaberry, confirms on release from custody on 8<sup>th</sup> February 2007 his medication was Losec 40mg and Plavix 1 tablet daily.

I note the contents of Professor Fahy's report. He confirms that SPT 113 father was convicted of SPT 113 characterises his life

to Professor Fahy (until 6 years ago) as an alternating pattern of survival by criminal activity in the community and imprisonment. He confirms that he suffered a stroke in prison. He reported that his criminal activities led to conflict with paramilitary groups and at the age of 11 his arms

# SPT-30939

d legs were broken by the IRA. Professor Fahy confirms his extensive history of illicit drug usage. He also confirms that he took an accidental overdose of alcohol in his early adolescence and subsequently was never a regular heavy drinker. **SPT 113** confirms the abusive experiences he had whilst in care. He confirmed that he had been sexually abused by a cook. With regard to his psychiatric history he reported to Professor Fahy that he had a history of anxiety symptoms, was self-conscious in crowds, and had used betablockers to relieve anxiety symptoms. He describes persistent problems with short temper. He reported that in later adult life when having sexual intercourse he has sometimes been troubled by intrusive memories of childhood abuse. This can bring sexual arousal to a halt. Professor Fahy summarises the plaintiff's notes and records.

With regard to Professor Fahy's opinion I accept that SPT 113 was born into a disturbed family environment. I accept that he was exhibiting behavioural disturbance including temper tantrums before the killing of his mother and indeed before entering care. I accept Professor Fahy's opinion that it is clear that there was a very high risk of him developing personality, emotional and behavioural disturbances even if he had not been taken into care. I also accept Professor Fahy's opinion that the reason SPT 113 spent so many years in care during his childhood and adolescence was because his behaviour was unmanageable in an ordinary domestic environment. I do not accept however Professor Fahy's opinion that had SPT 113 not been taken into care the outcome of his personality and behavioural disturbance would probably have been worse than it was. I have no difficulty accepting Professor Fahy's diagnoses of a conduct disorder and later an antisocial personality disorder in adulthood. The plaintiffs records, particularly the Social Services records and reports, are entirely consistent with this diagnosis. As Professor Fahy has stated I did not have access to Social Services records at the time of my initial assessment. It is however clear the differences of opinion between Professor Fahy and myself on the impact of the emotional and physical neglect, harsh punishment and sexual abuse on the plaintiff's mental health. Professor Fahy and I both agree that the plaintiff already had significant emotional problems even before he was taken into care. He was therefore more vulnerable to developing more long term psychological sequelae as a consequence of his abusive experiences. It is well recognised that sexual abuse in childhood and adolescence increase significantly the development of personality disorder, alcohol and substance dependency, depressive disorders, and indeed psychosis. There is no evidence in SPT 113 case of him later developing problems with psychosis nor clinical depression but he continues to have lifelong emotional disturbance as a consequence of his abusive experiences in childhood. I note that Professor Fahy was unable to obtain the history of flashbacks, intrusive memories, hypervigilance and other childhood post traumatic symptoms, but he does confirm in his own report that the plaintiff continued in later life when having sexual intercourse to be troubled by intrusive memories of childhood abuse. This can bring sexual arousal to a halt. The history

SPT-30940

in by the plaintiff to Professor Fahy that he felt perplexed and anxious yet protected by his abuser, is a not uncommon clinical finding in patients who have been sexually abused and who subsequently later develop more protracted psychological sequelae as a consequence of their traumatic experiences. I therefore do not accept Professor Fahy's opinion that his adverse experiences in care are likely to have contributed to no more than a minor degree of his evolving personality disorder. I would accept however his opinion that there has been a gradual stabilisation in his personality and behaviour following his stroke in prison in 2003. I remain of the view however that SPT 113 will continue to have significant problems with his emotional wellbeing as a consequence of his childhood sexual abuse.

#### DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

#### **DECLARATION:**

(8)

I understand that my primary duty in furnishing written reports and giving evidence is to assist the court and that this takes (1) priority over any duties which I may owe to the part or parties by whom I have been engaged or by whom I have been paid or am liable to be paid. I confirm that I have complied and will continue with this duty.

I have endeavoured in my reports and in my opinions to be accurate and to have covered all relevant issues concerning the (2) matters stated, which I have been asked to address, and the opinions expressed represent my true and complete professional opinion.

I have endeavoured to include in my report those matters of which I have knowledge and of which I have been made aware which might adversely affect the validity of my opinion. (3)

I have indicated the sources of all information that I have used.

(4) (5) I have where possible formed an independent view on matters suggested to me by others including my instructing lawyers and their client; where I have relied upon information from others, including my instructing lawyers and their client, I have so disclosed in my report.

(6) I will notify those instructing me immediately and confirm in writing if, for any reason, my existing report or opinion requires any correction or qualification.

(7) I understand that-

My report, subject to any corrections before swearing as to its correctness, will form the evidence which I will give under (a) oalh or affirmation.

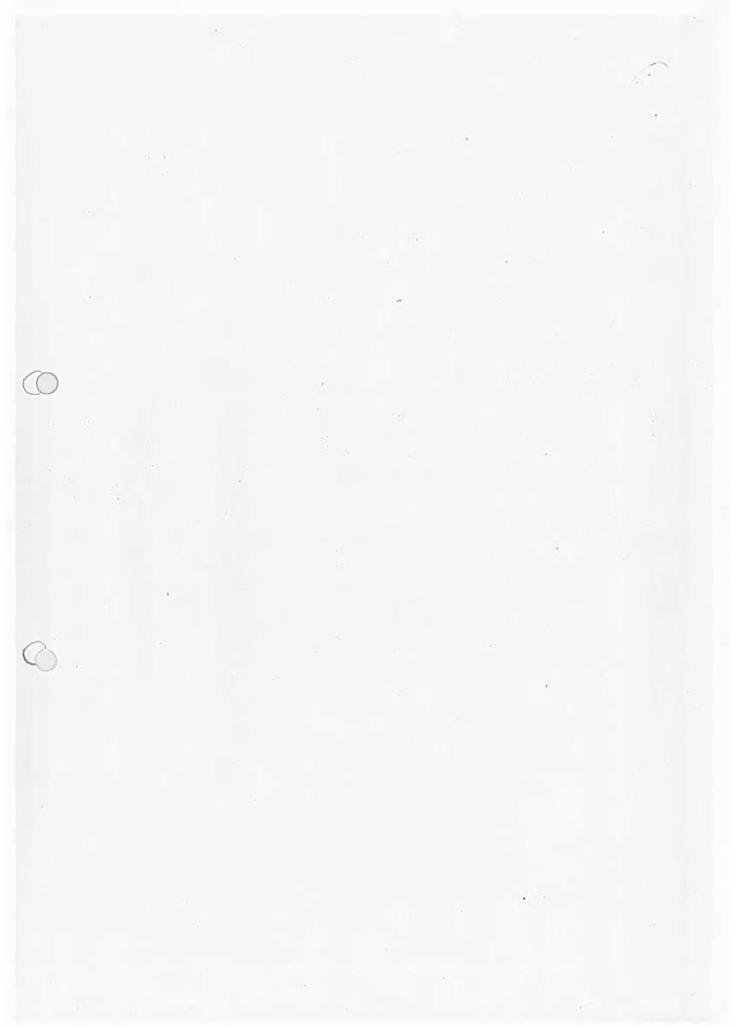
I may be cross-examined on my report by a cross-examiner assisted by an expert. **(b)** 

I am likely to be the subject of public adverse criticism by the judge if the court concludes that I have not taken reasonable (c) care in trying to meet the standard set out above.

I confirm that I have not entered into any arrangement whereby the amount or payment of my fees, charges or expenses is in any-way-dependent upon the outcome of this case.

DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych **CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST** 

SPT-30941



SPT -	CREPORT, dated 21 Journary 2013			
	PSYCHI	ATRIC REPOR	Г	-
		011		
		SPT 113		
		DOB:		
		ADDRESS:		
		ADDRESS.	÷	
	DATE	COF REPORT: 27.11.12		
		PREPARED BY:		
	Professo	COM FAHY, MD MPhil FRCP5 or of Forensic Mental Health	ych	
	De Crespigny Pa	Psychiatry, PO61, Room E1.22, ark, Denmark Hill, London SE5 8/ 3237 1090/Fex: 020 7848 0627	AP	
Y C	Lers & War	read the		
OF	iners of the		1	

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

03/22

SPT-30943

#### SPT 113 PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

INTRODUCTION

Lean-preparing this report at the request of Jones & Company Solicitors in relation to Mr SPT 113 legal claim against Sisters of Nazareth, Institute of the Brothers of the Christian Schools and Congregation of the Sisters of Mercy (Northern Province). In preparing this report I interviewed SPT 113 in Belfast on 26 November 2012. I have also reviewed the following papers;

- 1. Pleadings.
- 2. Psychiatric reports by Dr Mangan dated 5 July 2010 and 11 August 2011.
- 3. GP notes and records.
- 4. Forensic report from Goldblatt McGuigan.
- 5. HMP Maghaberry medical notes and records.
- 6. Discovery received from the Youth Justice Agency.
- 7. Letter of Claim.
- 8. Information received from Sisters of Nazareth.

#### BACKGROUND AND PERSONAL HISTORY

SPT 113 was born and raised in Northern Ireland. His father worked as a He died approximately twelve years ago. SPT 113 father was convicted of the and received a prison sentence. SPT 113 understands that his father was in prison for 3 or 4 years. Following his release from prison he visited SPT 113 on a regular basis while he remained in care. SPT 113 said that he had a good relationship with his father. He described his father as a quiet man, who had a quick temper. He described him as his "hero". SPT 113 said that his father was not violent to the children.

Reserved & Linderson

2

SPT-30944

3

# 23/01/2013 10:12	Jones & Co Solicitors	Admin1strator→90330330	04/22
$\sim$			
SPT 113	dated 21 January 2013		
SPT 113 has two	o surviving sisters. has a histor	ry of mental health problems.	
committed suicide	ten years ago. works in	SPT 113 describes her as	
	vous. The sisters also spent periods of	their childhood in care	

SPT 113 states that he was a healthy child.

#### SCHOOLING AND OCCUPATIONAL HISTORY

SPT 113 states that he was provided with educational opportunities in his residential homes and at St. Patrick's, but he did not engage. He recalls doing only one exam, in Maths. He states that he was awarded a distinction in this subject.

SPT 113 worked as a security officer for two years after leaving prison. However, his employer encountered financial difficulties and the company closed. SPT 113 has not worked since then.

#### FORENSIC HISTORY

SPT 113 states that he was first in trouble with the police at the age of 11 years when he was charged with criminal damage. He states that during his time in St. Patrick's he resolved to become a career criminal. He states that this was partly a reaction to his status at St. Patrick's, where he was classified as a care and protection case (the other children were placed in the unit following criminal charges).

SPT 113 characterises his life (until six years ago) as an alternating pattern of survival by criminal activity in the community, and imprisonment. At the age of 16 years he was convicted of possessing a shotgun. He informed me that in his twenties he received a lengthy prison sentence for false imprisonment and possession of a sawn-off shotgum (he was released as part of the Good Friday Agreement). He was subsequently convicted of conspiracy to commit armed robbery and sentenced to twelve years. He said that this final period of imprisonment "eroke me". He suffered a stroke in prison. He became fearful of dying in

# 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator→90330330

05/22

SPT-30945

SPT 113 SYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

prison. He states that since his release he has avoided oriminal activity, though he has recently been sentenced to a period of community service for driving without a licence and insurance.

SPT 113 informed me that his criminal activities have led to conflict with paramilitary groups. When aged 11 years his arms and legs were broken by the IRA. On another occasion his house was set on fire. He said that gunmen were waiting outside the house, but he stayed indoors until emergency services arrived, and he was able to exit safely. He said that a death threat has hung over him for many years. However, he states that his attitude towards these threats is one of fearlessness.

#### FAMILY AND SOCIAL SITUATION

SPT 113 informed me that he first married when he was in prison. He said that when he was released from prison he came to realise that his wife was a severe alcoholic. He separated from her. She subsequently became destitute.

SPT 113 married on the second occasion approximately five years ago. He does not live with his wife, but they come and go from one another's homes. He said that if they spend too long together, relations become fractious.

SPT 113 has three children. The eldest has a drug and alcohol problem. He is currently residing with SPT 113, on bail and wearing a tag. The younger two children are employed - and have not been in trouble with the law.

SPT 113 lives in satisfactory housing executive accommodation. His income is derived from ESA.

#### MEDICAL HISTORY

SPT 113 suffered a left-sided stroke in prison. Initially, he was immobilised and visually impaired. However, he made a good recovery. He still experiences odd sensations on the left

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

SPT 113

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

06/22

SPT-30946

5

#### HIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

side of his body and is vulnerable to vertigo. He also suffers gastric ulcers, which may be related to swallowing metal objects such as blades (these could not be removed from his stomach).

#### PSYCHIATRIC HISTORY

SPT 113 has had extensive contact with Prison Mental Health Services. As a youth he swallowed razortlades and light bulbs, he cut himself, tried to hang himself and set fire to his cell. He said that he "grew out of these behaviours" in his twenties, though he states that until his stroke he often felt that prison was the best place for him.

#### ALCOHOL AND DRUGS

SPT 113 took an accidental overdose of alcohol at the age of twelve years. He said that this led to an aversion to alcohol, and he has never been a regular heavy drinker. He said that he used cannabis regularly when he was a young man, though this sometimes led him to become paranoid. He used Valium in prison. He took Eostasy and amphetamines in the 1990s. He has not used cocaine or opiates. At present he asks the GP for Diazepam if he is feeling depressed. He denies using other drugs.

#### PERSONALITY

SPT 113 reports that he can be short-tempered. Although he can enjoy social contact he also. needs to maintain space from others. He attends the gym regularly, and this is a useful outlet for feelings of low mood or flustration. He enjoys walking his dog and maintaining contact with family members.

#### INDEX EVENTS

SPT 113 was taken into care at the age of 3 years. He remained in care until 14/15 years. He believes that he may have spent a year with his grandmother, though she returned him to

# 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

07/22

SPT-30947

6



EPORT, dated 21 January 2013

Care as she could not cope with him and another child that she was looking after at the time.

SPT 113 was under the care of the Sisters of Nazareth between the ages of 3 and 8 years. He said that the only enjoyable period was during the monthly family visit. He describes the following problems while in care;

- He reports that the nuns were very strict and would beat him for minor infringements. Sometimes he did not know why he was being punished.
- At bathnine he would have to line up, naked, with the other children. He was scrubbed with a deck scrubbing brush. Disinfectant or a similar liquid burnt his eyes.
- He was forced to eat foods that he disliked, e.g. marmalade, and punished if he did not comply. He commented that it was taboo not to eat the food.
- He states that Sister C and Sister M did most of the bathing and would aggressively comb his hair to remove nits.
- He said that staff would sometimes taunt him with references to his father killing his mother.
- · He was forced to carry a sheet saying that he had wet the bed.

SPT 113 was transferred to Orana House aged approximately 8 years. He said that at this location he received the following abusive experiences;

- He was slapped on a daily basis.
- He feels that he was victimized.
- He was bathed in scalding water and scrubbed.

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

08/22

SPT-30948

7

CHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

- There were no close relationships with caring staff.
- He states that he rebelled. Staff could not control him. On one occasion he climbed on the roof and urinated on staff. His grandmother had to be called to talk him down,

Following the roof protest, SPT 113 was transferred for a holding period to Lurgan and then to St. Patrick's.

SPT 113 was placed at the St. Patrick's unit between 12 and 14 years. He said that most of the other children were placed there because of criminal activities. They would taunt him because of his Care and Protection status, for example singing "nobody's child" when he entered the canteen. He said that there was much teasing and humiliation.

SPT 113 states that at St. Patrick's he was sexually abused by the cook. He said that the cook offered to look after him. He would take him to a room and lock the door. He would then fondle SPT 113 genitals and force SPT 113 to reciprocate. He said that the cook tried to perform oral sex but SPT 113 resisted. He used to engage in mock wrestling with SPT 113 which would then progress to sexual contact. The cook would sometimes ejaculate. After these episodes the cook would give SPT 113 ice-cream and let him go. Mr SPT 113 said that during the episodes he felt puzzled and nervous. However, he also felt protected by the cook, who stopped the other boys from bullying and taunting him. Later, the cook went on to have contact with other Care and Protection boys.

SPT 113 said that on one occasion when the cook was waiting for SPT 113 to join him at the swimming pool he told the other boys about the cook's behaviour. A group of boys went to confront the cook. After this incident, there was no more sexual abuse.

SPT 113 said that following the above incident he moved to chalets at St. Patrick's. He was happy to move there as this meant that he was no longer having contact with the cock. However, at the age of 15 years he was transferred to Hydebank Prison after receiving a six month sentence for burglary. SPT 113 said that the transfer to prison reinforced his resolve

# 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator →90330330

09/22

SPT-30949

8

#### SPT 113

CHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 Journey 2013

to become a carear criminal. He was content with this decision. He feels that he made a good adjustment to his subsequent lifestyle and one of the advantages of prison life was that nobody came near him. There were no further episodes of physical or aexual abuse in custody.

I asked SPI 113 to itemise his most distressing or troubling experiences. He stated that these were as follows;

- Being combed for nits (he said that this was sometimes done in such a rough style that he bled).
- Being hit by "a wee fragile woman" while in care, and seeing his sisters being beaten by her.

I asked him how distressing the sexual abuse had been. He said that at the time it was not distressing as the abuser was not hitting or harming him, "There was no violence".

#### **PSYCHIATRIC HISTORY**

SPT 113 states that he was oppositional during his time in care. He wet the bed until the age of 16. He began to harm himself, partly in an attempt to seek attention but also in response to genuine suicidal ideation.

SPT 113 states that he has not suffered from depression. He relieves negative thoughts and emotions by going to the gym.

He acknowledges a history of anxiety symptoms. He states that he is self-conscious in crowds. He has used beta-blockers to relieve anxiety symptoms.

He describes a persistent problem with short temper.

I asked him about preoccupations and distress about his childbood experiences. He replied,

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator→90330330

10/22

SPT-30950

9

# SPT 113

YCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

"No, I pushed it to the back of my head and got on with the life I was living. It was only when things happened, for example death". He states that after his sister's death he felt as if his life was falling apart as his parents were deceased and he was now the eldest in the family.

I asked about sexual maladjustment. He said that in later life, when having sexual intercourse, he has sometimes been troubled by intrusive memories of childhood abuse. This can bring sexual arousal to a halt. He states that at no point did he doubt his sexual orientation or develop homophobic attitudes or behaviours.

#### PSYCHIATRIC TREATMENT

SPT 113 had extensive contact with prison mental health teams, who assessed his mental state, provided reatment and wrote reports. He has not had psychiatric input in the community. He has recently expressed a willingness to attend a rehabilitation service, Helping Hands, with the aim of acquiring IT skills. He informed me that he improved his literacy skills in prison and that he is now competent in reading and writing.

I asked about a seference in the GP records to a petrol bomb incident in 2001. SPT 113 states that the IRA came to his home to kill him. They set fire to his property. He states that IRA men waited outside, armed with AK47s. For this reason he stayed in the house until the roof collapsed. His dog died. He described the incident as, "Just another stepping stone in my life. No fear".

Other traumatic incidents have included car crashes, though he does not report the development of psychiatric symptoms following such incidents.

#### MENTAL STATE EXAMINATION

SPT 113 was a cooperative, animated interviewee who provided his account in a vivid and occasionally humorous style. His face was scarred (from a road traffic accident). His mood

1

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

#### Administrator→90330330

11/22

SPT-30951

#### SPT 113

PSYCHIATRIC REPORT disted 21 January 2013

during the interview was unromarkable, with no evidence of depression or anxiety. He described his recent mood as "*dead on*". Apart from occasional sleep disruption and a report of poor concentration, I did not obtain an account of depressive symptoms.

I enquired about a full range of anxiety and post-traumatic symptoms;

- He does not describe specific anxieties or vulnerability to panic attacks.
- He denies preoccupation with the index events, stating that he tries not to think about them.
- He said that he used to have bad dreams about "the baths" but this is no longer the case.
- Media reports of childbood abuse can trigger a train of thought and memories about his own experiences and he may question if he has met the victims and wonders if they had similar experiences to his own.
- He states that thoughts and distress related to the index events emerged following his sister's suicide. She had led the family's complaints about their childhood experiences, including reporting these to the police. SPT 113 indicated that his involvement in the case was prompted by his sister rather than under his own initiative.
- He reports that he used to feel considerable anger towards his abusers, especially the cook, but this is no longer the case.
- He said that he can find it hard to trust other people.

I did not obtain an account of significant behavioural avoidance or problems with emotional withdrawal/restricted affect.

SPT 113 concluded the interview by asserting that he hoped to "keep surviving". During the course of the interview he did not appear aroused, anxious, agitated or distressed as he

# SPT-30952

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

12/22

PSYCHIATRIC REPORT. da

described his childhood experiences.

ed 21 January 2013

#### MEDICAL RECORDS

The GP records from 9 April 1999 make a reference to depression and anger.

- There is a reference to an anxiety state following a petrol bombing dated 28 December 2001.
- 28 October 2002. There is a reference to anxiety in the GP's handwritten records.
- During a prison sentence for armed robbery SPT 113 suffered a stroke in June 2003.
- In April 2004 SPT 113 was seen in prison by Dr O'Hegarty, Psychiatrist. She wrote that he had recovered from his stroke. Following a prison transfer his mood had deteriorated. He felt anxious about the possibility about a further stroke. He felt at risk due to the lower security environment. He was further from his family. His sleep was poor and his appetite was affected. Dr O'Hegarty attributed the deterioration in Mr SPT 113 mental state to his situational difficulties. She also noted that SPT 113 had described intermittent anxiety and depressive symptoms for most of his life, but he did not appear to have seen these as a significant problem until recently.
- 17 August 2009. SPT 113 attended the GP and reported that he felt depressed for four months. He was worrying about his ex-wife and family tragedies. He felt hyper attimes, anxious and bottled up. He had received anger management in the past.

#### **RECORDS FROM YOUTH JUSTICE AGENCY**

These records note that SPT 113 family was known to the Social Services Department since November 1977 SPT 113 was aged 4 years). His mother approached the office requesting assistance with financial and marital problems and complaining about her husband's aggressive behaviour and extreme possessiveness. Visits by the social worker

11

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

13/22

SPT-30953

# SPT 113

Cl, dated 21 January 2013

revealed a certain amount of child neglect in respect of feeding, clothing, hygiene and apathy about school attendance. SPT 113 had to receive medical treatment on several occassions as a result of beatings from her husband. SPT 113 took an overdose of sleeping tablets in April 1973. The children were subsequently admitted into care and placed in Nazareth Lodge and St. Joseph's Babies Home in April 1973. In June 1973 SPT 113 was arrested for the

He was subsequently sentenced to two years imprisonment. The children were taken out of Care by their grandparents but they were unable to cope with looking after four children and in *August 1974* the four children were admitted to hospital suffering from scabies and impefigo.

It was noted that in September 1975 the children were transferred to Palmerston Assessment Centre at the request of staff who were finding SPT 113 behaviour very disruptive. In June 1976 the children were remained with their father who had obtained rented accommodation. His inability to cope with the demands of the young children culminated in him asking Social Services to take them into care.

It was noted that SPITTS was most active as a young child. He was a poor sleeper, frequently wet the bed and was generally very destructive. He was a moody child and often had temper tantrums. Neither parent knew how to cope with his behaviour and it often provoked arguments between the parents. In Palmerston SPITTS found difficulty in mixing with other children and his approach to them was constantly a challenge for supremacy. He exhibited behavioural problems such as nail biting, eye twitching, bed wetting, lying and stealing. He often exhibited very aggressive behaviour, though in reality he was afraid of actual violence. He attached himself to boys involved in anti-social behaviour.

It is noted that SPT 113 behaviour deteriorated in November 1977 and Mr expressed his inability to control SPT 113 He was referred to the Child Psychiatry Department. It was noted that SPT 113 would present a problem irrespective of the quality of parenting he received. An affort was made to deliver a simple treatment and support programme at home but this was unsuccessful due to failure to keep appointments and SPT 113 increasing truanting from school. An admission to Fallowfield School was felt to be most appropriate.

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

14/22

SPT-30954

SPT 113

SYCHIATRIC REPORT, deted 21 January 2013

Following the admission to Fallowfield there were problems including refusing to return after weekends and involvement in petty orime. SPT 113 was subsequently placed in St. Patrick's Training School in November 1978.

A report from St. Patrick's Training School dated 26 February 1989 stated that was an unpredictable sort of boy capable of reasonable adjustment from time to time but he seemed unable to sustain his commitment for any length of time. Around the school he could be troublesome and adopted a stubborn attitude. He appeared to have little regard for staff and was loath to accept correction.

A report in 1983 stated that in 1982 SPT 113 commenced a work experience programme in a supermarket, and got on well with his workmates. In *January 1983* SPT 113 was charged with criminal damage, puncturing a fire hydrant hose. His behaviour in the school was generally well-accepted and he had improved. He was likeable and willing to assist. The relationship with his father had improved.

#### INFORMATION FROM SISTERS OF NAZARETH

These papers state that SPT 113 was in the care of Nazareth House between April and September 1973.

#### PLEADINGS

The Statement of Claim states that in or about 1973 when SPT 113 was resident in Nazareth Lodge he was constantly psychologically abused by the muns. He was told that he did not belong to his parents but that he belonged to them and to God. He was continually told that his parents were bad people and that he had the devil inside him. He was besten with wooden implements and he was assaulted, hit on the ear and head. He was harshly treated and made to stand in the corner of the hallway and face the wall, head-on, head down, for a no apparent reason. He was put into a stationary large tumble drier to stop him crying. He was constantly

# SPT-30955

# 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator→90330330

15/22

#### SPT 113 PSYCHIATERC REPORT dated 21 January 2013

and consistently abused,

It is also claimed that while at the Convent of Mercy, in Newry, he was continually slapped and abused for not eating marmalade. He was continually covered in bruising as a result of beatings and harsh treatment.

It is claimed that between 1979 and 1982, when resident at St. Patrick's Care Home, he was sexually assaulted by the cook. Sexual abuse continued until he was about 14 years of age.

It is claimed that SPT 113 suffered Childhood Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder. He also suffered substance dependency, continuing psychological and psychiatric problems and chronic emotional ill health.

#### DEFENCE

It is stated that corporal punishment by staff at the time alleged was appropriate and commensurate to the accepted educational practices.

#### PSYCHIATRIC REPORTS

I have read Dr Mangan's first psychiatric report of 5 July 2010. Dr Mangan states that Mr SPI 113 describes physical, mental and sexual abuse while in care. He claimed that he was frequently beaten with sticks, he was assaulted by staff and made to stand against a wall for long periods. He was treated harshly when he was bathed. The nuns told him that the devil was in him. He was sexually abused by the cook. He said that because of his experiences he had great difficulty controlling his temper. He had difficulties at school. He was teased by other children. He accumulated an extensive criminal record. He described a history of cocaine abuse.

Dr Mangan noted that SPT 113 was distressed when he described his difficulties. He reported difficulties falling and remaining asleep. He described ongoing nightmares relating to his childhood sexual abuse and physical abuse. He described hypervigilance and a heightened

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator →90330330

16/22

SPT-30956

SPT 113

IC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

startle reflex. He reported problems with irritability and mood swings.

Dr Mangan diagnoses Childhood Post-Traumatio Stress Disorder. Dr Mangan also concludes

that SPT 113 emotional difficulties in childhood had a significant bearing on his development of antisocial behaviours. His traumatic experiences in childhood also increased his vulnerability to developing problems with substance dependency. SPT 113 no longer meets criteria for PTSD but continues to show evidence of chronic emotional health problems.

In his supplementary report dated 11 August 2011 Dr Mangan states that SPT 113 also developed childhood PTSD as a consequence of his childhood sexual abuse. He experienced nightmares in relation to this abuse.

Dr Mangan does not comment on the Social Services' records, which provide a useful insight into the chronology of SPT 113 childhood behavioural problems.

#### **OPINION**

- 1. SPT 113 was born into a disturbed family environment. The Social Services' records note that SPT 113 father had personality problems and that he was physically abusive to his wife. SPT 113 father father for the social Services' records clearly state that SPT 113 had exhibited behavioural disturbance including temper tantnums before the killing of his mother, and before entering Care. There was evidence of child neglect. In view of the severe nature of the family's emotional and behavioural problems, as well as the possible contribution of inherited personality characteristics, it is clear that there was a very high risk of him developing personality, emotional and behavioural disturbance, even if he had not been taken into care.
- It is also clear from the chronology provided by the Social Services that efforts to care for and manage SPT 113 behaviour in a domestic environment (when he was looked after by his mother, his grandparents and his father) all failed. These records

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator + 90330330

17/22

SPT-30957

SPT 113 YCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

suggest that the reason SPT 113 spent so many years in care during his childhood and adolescence was because his behaviour was unmanageable in an ordinary domestic environment. The records from St. Patrick's suggest that there was in fact some benefit from the structured environment of this residence. Review of these records suggests that if SPT 113 had not been taken into care, the outcome for his personality and behavioural disturbance would probably have been worse than it was.

- 3. SPT 113 childhood was characterised by neurotic behaviours (bed-wetting, nailbiting and anxiety) and oppositional/antisocial behaviour (truanting, fighting, stealing, lying etc.). The childhood diagnosis is one of Severe Conduct Disorder (DSM-IV 312.81). This condition has evolved, as it frequently does, into Adult Antisocial Personality Disorder (DSM-IV 301.7). SPT 113 adult life has been characterised by unlawful behaviours, impulsivity, reckless disregard for safety, consistent irresponsibility and lack of remorse - all characteristic of Antisocial Personality Disorder. Also characteristic of this disturbance of personality has been his inability to sustain paid employment or to maintain enduring intimate relationships.
- 4. SPT113 complaints about his childhood experiences in care include accounts of emotional and physical neglect, harsh punishment and a period of sexual abuse. The complaints about emotional neglect and physical punishment will be a matter for the Conrt to consider, taking into account societal standards at the time of these alleged experiences. From the psychiatric perspective, SPT113 account must also be placed in the context of his family life, which was extremely disturbed, and unlikely to provide consistent parenting and emotional nurture. Given the level of psychological damage that preceded his entry into care (as evidenced in the Social Services' records) and the inability of family members to manage SPT113 continuing emotional and behavioural disturbance, I do not consider that his experiences of emotional neglect and physical punishment in care have made a substantial contribution to his severe, enduring personality disturbance.
- 5. SPT 113 describes an experience of sexual abuse by the cook at St. Patrick's Home. While in no way intending to minimise the seriousness of such abusive behaviour. Mr

16

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator→90330330

18/22

SPT-30958

#### SPT 113

YCHIATRIC REPORT dated 21 January 2013

SPT 113 account of these experiences suggests to me that they ware not particularly damaging to his psyche. He reports that these experiences left him feeling perplexed and nervous, but that he also feit protected by the abuser. SPT 113 described these experiences to me without becoming anxious or distressed. The impression that he conveys is that he coped with these experiences without becoming overtly, clinically anxious or distressed, probably a reflection of his already severely disturbed personality and interpersonal relationships.

- 6. Dr Mangan obtained a history of flashbacks, intrusive memories, hypervigilance and other childhood post-traumatic symptoms. I enquired about these symptoms but did not obtained a similar clinical history, including in relation to the alleged sexual abuse experiences. Instead, I obtained a history of Childhood Conduct Disorder evolving into Adult Personality Disorder. These diagnoses are not referenced by Dr Mangan, though SPT 113 clinical history is highly typical of these disorders, and of the type of clinical presentation that I am familiar with in my clinical work with men in forensio settings who suffer from Personality Disorder. In my opinion, Dr Mangan's analysis of causation is also flawed, perhaps because he has not had the opportunity to read the Social Services' records.
- 7. On alinical interview SPT 113 reports that his mental state and behaviour has settled in recent years. He has abandoned serious criminal activity and is attempting to lead a more stable domestic and family life. On interview he is not anxious or depressed. He delivers his account in a superficial style, and it is possible that differences in the account obtained by Dr-Mangan and by me can be traced back to a degree of suggestibility in the context of this type of medico-legal assessment.
- 8. In conclusion, from the earlier stages of his life SPT 113 was exposed to and may have inherited significant risk factors for emotional, behavioural and personality disturbance. His early life experiences included exposure to family disharmony, domestic violence and parental separation. His behaviour had already deteriorated, and throughout childhood and adolescence, both family and institutional carers found it difficult to cope with and manage his behaviours. If there

#### # 23/01/2013 10:12

Jones & Co Solicitors

Administrator → 90330330

19/22

SPT-30959

#### SPT 113 PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21 January 2013

were adverse experiences in care, it is likely that these contributed to no more than a minor degree to his evolving personality disorder. In adulthood he has displayed the typical characteristics of Antisocial Personality Disorder as well as episodic emotional instability, impulsivity, self-harming behaviours and substance misuse. There has been a gradual stabilisation in his personality and behaviour, which can probably be traced back to his stroke in prison in 2003. Any residual emotional and mood problems are managed by the GP through short-term prescriptions of tranquilising medication. There is no indication for any further psychiatric or psychological treatment at present, and I have not identified any specific treatment needs arising from the alleged ohildhood experiences that are the subject of the current litigation.

- I, Thomas Faby declare that
- I understand that my primary duty in written reports and giving evidence is to the Court, rather than the party who engaged me;
- (2) I have endeavoured in my report and in my opinions to be accurate and to have covered all relevant issues concerning the matters stated which I have been asked to address;
- (3) I have endeavoured to include in my report those matters, which I have knowledge of or of which I have been made aware, that might adversely affect the validity of my opinion;
- (4) I have indicated the sources of all information 1 have used;
- (5) I have not without forming an independent view included or excluded anything which has been suggested to me by others (in particular my instructing lawyers);
- (6) I will notify those instructing me immediately and confirm in writing if for any reason my existing report requires any correction or qualification;
- (7) I understand that:-
  - (a) My report, subject to any corrections before swearing as to its correctness, will form the evidence to be given under eath or affirmation;

# SPT-30960

19

а. С				
-		PT 113	HPORT, dated 21 January 2013	
	Part	MIATRIC K	RTUR. ( COND. 2.) JACBURY 2013	
		(ь)	I may be cross-atamined on my report by a cross-examiner assisted by an Expert;	
_		(c)	- I an likely to be the subject of public adverse criticism by the judge if the Court concludes that-	
			I have not taken reasonable care in trying to meet the standards set out above.	
	(8)	l confin	n that I have not entered into any arrangement where the amount or payment of my fees is in any	
		way dep	ender on the outcome of the case.	
	(9)	I confin	m that I have no conflict of interest of any kind, other than any which I have disclosed in this	
		report.		
	(10)	I confirm	n that I do not consider that my interest which I have disclosed affects my suitability as an expert	
		witness	on any issue on which I have given evidence.	
	(11)	I confin	m that I will advise the party by whom I am instructed if, between the date of my report and the	
		trial, the	se is any change in circumstances which affects my answers to either of the above two prints.	
	(12)	I unders	tand that my overriding duty is to the coust and I have complied with that duty and will continue to	
			with it. I am aware of the requirements of Part 35 and Practice Direction 35 and the CJC Protocol	
		for the li	nstruction of Experts to give evidence in Civil Claims.	
	(13)		n that I have made clear which facts and matters referred to in this report are within my own	
			ge and which are not. Those that are within my own knowledge I confirm to be true. The opinions	
		I nave ex	spressed represent my true and complete professional opinions on the matters to which they refer.	
		11	AI	
	4	//	181	

Professor Tom Baby, MD MPhil FRCPsych Professor of Forensic Mental Health.

# SPT-30961

7 23/	01/2013 10:12	Jones & Co Solicitors	Administrator→90330330	21/22	
				1	
	1 <sup>0</sup> 0				
	SPT 113 PSYCHIATRIC REPORT, dated 21	January 2013			
£.	Brief Medico-Legal CV				
	NAME	THOMAS A. FAHY			
	CURRENT POST	Professor of Forensic Mental Health			
		Clinical Director of Forensic Service	E so		
4		BOX 61, Institute of Psychistry, Lon	don SES 8AF		
		Tol 02078480151 Fax 02078480627	7 email		
	QUALIFICATIONS	MB (Hnrs) 1984; MRCPsych 1988; 1	Milli / I fuirmaite of London) 1006		
	QUALIFICATIONS		an mi (ornacisti or rushicit) (2250?		
)		MD (NUI) 1992; FRCPsych 2005			
	PSYCHIATRIC EXPERIE	NCE			

#### PSYCHIATRIC EXPERIENCE

I trained in psychiatry at St Thomas' Hospital and Bethlem Royal and Maudsley Hospital, London. Before taking up my current post I was Lacturer in Psychological Medicine King's College Hospital Medical School and then Consultant Psychiatrist, Mandeley Hospital.

SPECIALIST TRAINING COURSES I have undertaken specialist training courses in cognitive behaviour theospy, assessment of personality disorder, risk assessment, expert witness skills and PTSD.

#### DISTINCTIONS & FRIZES

Prizes for clinical and research work include Professor H. Love Cup, Sir Dennis Hill Research Prize and Gaskell Medal, Royal College of Psychiatrists.

#### PUBLICATIONS

I have published approximately 100 peer reviewed scientific papers, 40 scientific abstracts and several book chapters or monographs. I have extensive experience as an editor of psychiatric journals.

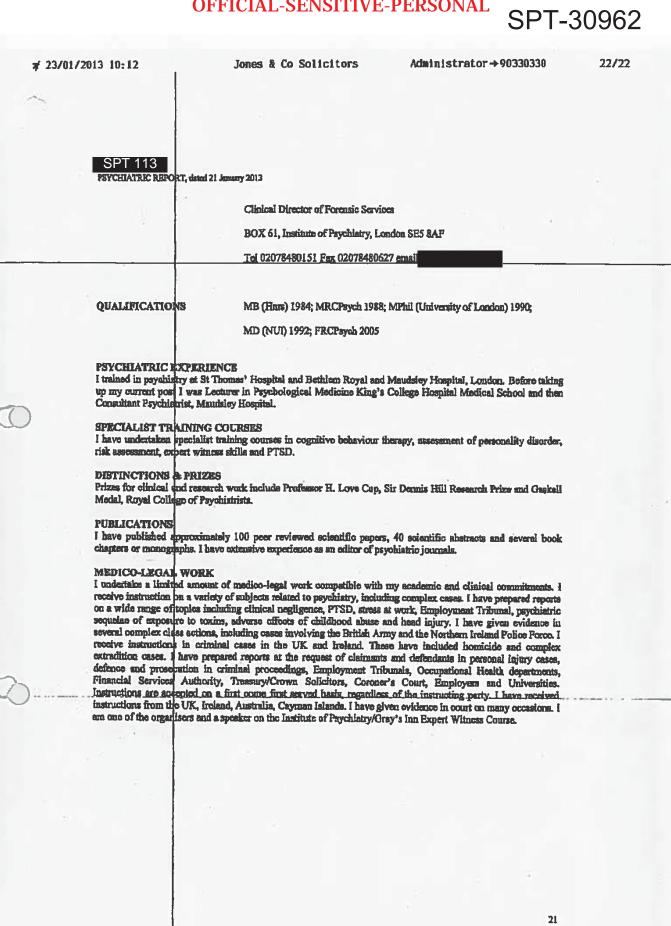
MEDICO-LEGAL WORK I undertake a limited amount of medico-legal work compatible with my academic and clinical commitments. I receive instruction of a variety of subjects related to psychiatry, including complex cases. I have prepared reports on a wide range of tapics including clinical negligence, PTSD, stress at work, Employment Tribunal, psychiatric securities of tappears to textine, adverse effects of childhood abuse and head injury. I have given evidence in-several complex class actions, including cases involving the British Amy and the Northern Ireland Police Force. I receive instructions in criminal cases in the UK and Ireland. These have included homicide and complex extradition cases. I have prepared reports at the request of claimants and defendants in personal injury cases, defence and proceedings, Raployment Tribunals, Occapational Health departments, Financial Services Authority, Treasury/Crown Solicitors, Corones's Court, Employers and Universities. Instructions are accepted on a first come first served basis, regardless of the instruction party. I have received instructions from the UK, Ireland, Australia, Cayman Islands. I have given evidence in court on many occasions. I am one of the organizers and a speaker on the Institute of Psychiatry/Oray's Inn Expert Witness Course. Brief Medico-Legal CV

#### NAME

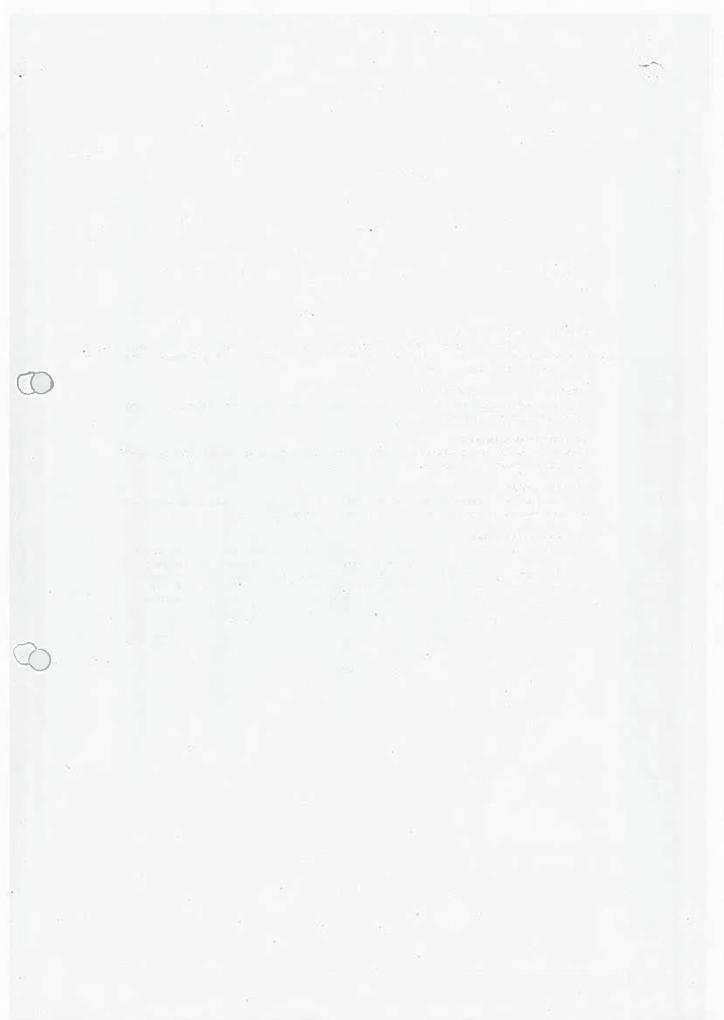
#### THOMAS A. FAHY

**CURRENT POST** 

#### Professor of Forensio Mental Health/



# SPT-30963



#### 29-JUL-2013 11:27 FROM:

TD:02890542540

P.002/005

SPT-30964

### DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

MUSGRAVE HOUSE 10 Stockman's Lane Belfast BT9 7JA BLUESTONE UNIT Craigavon Area Hospital Lurgan Road Craigavon BT62 5QQ

Appointments and Correspondence to:

Musgrave House, 10 Stockman's Lane, Belfast, BT9 7JA. Tel: 07981 388229 Email: manganmedical@googlemail.com

Your Ref: 005/0019FS/FMCC Our Ref: BM/ML/3337

25 July 2013

Higgins Hollywood Deazley Solicitors 523 Antrim Road Belfast Antrim BT15 3BS

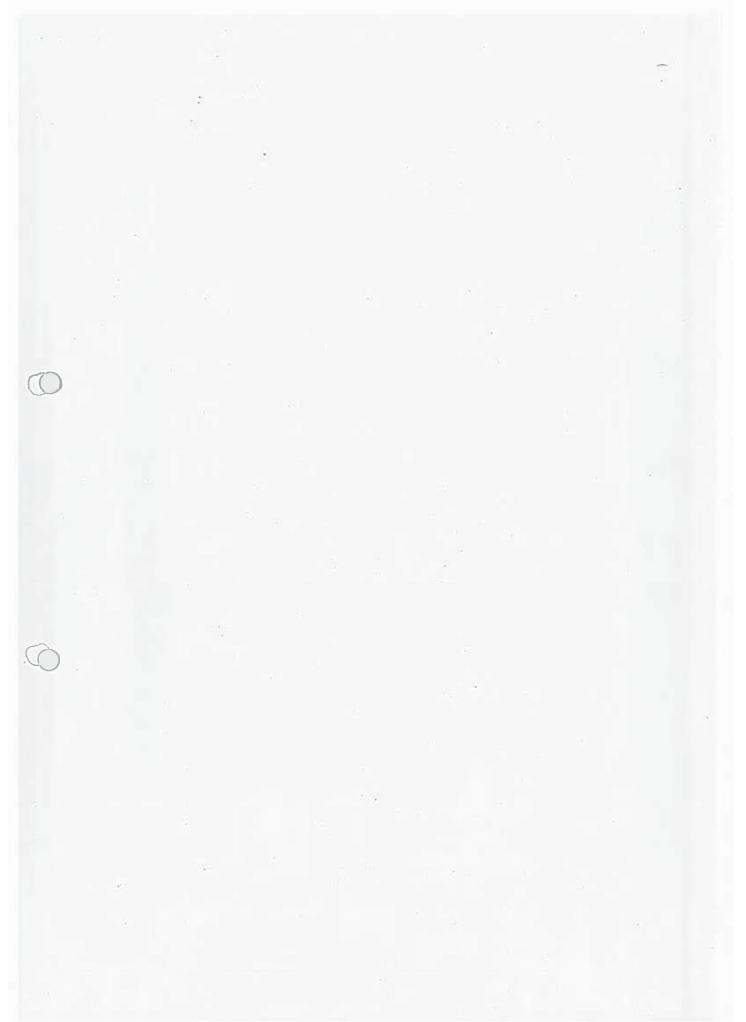
#### MEDICO-LEGAL REPORT ON:

	PT 1		
		_	

I had previously prepared reports on the above named plaintiff dated 5<sup>th</sup> July 2010, 11<sup>th</sup> August 2011 and 26<sup>th</sup> June 2013. I have now been provided with a report prepared by Dr Kennedy, Consultant Psychiatrist, dated 12<sup>th</sup> February 2013. This report addresses Dr Kennedy's findings.

I note that Dr Kennedy has been asked to state the degree of percentage to which the alleged physical abuse the plaintiff experienced in care has contributed to his mental health issues. Dr Kennedy had access to reports provided by myself, extensive General Practitioner notes and records, and some reports from Social Workers in the early 1970s

SPT-30965



29-JUL-2013 11:27 FROM:

TO: 02890542540

nunds of

P. 003/005

about the plaintiff's family. I note that Dr Kennedy's overall findings are similar to those of myself when I interviewed SPT 113 in July 2010 in terms of history and diagnosis.

Dr Kennedy confirms that the plaintiff's father was arrested for the

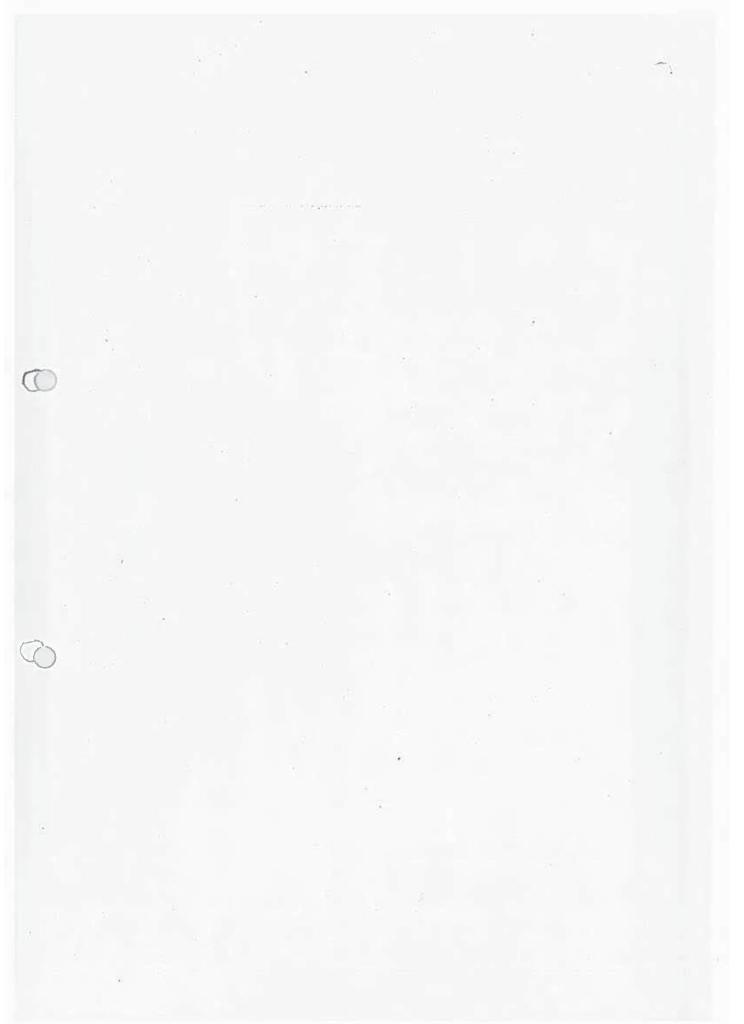
on 15<sup>th</sup>

SPT-30966

June 1973. He was found guilty of and sentenced to 2 years imprisonment. Dr Kennedy confirms that the plaintiff was subsequently placed in care. Dr Kennedy confirms that the plaintiff was admitted to St Patrick's Training School in Belfast at the end of 1978 because of his difficult behaviour. He notes that in 1975 an IQ test was performed and the plaintiff was assessed as having an IQ of 83 which is at the lower end average. Dr Kennedy outlines the plaintiff's criminal activities. I would agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that the early years of SPT 113 life were marked by marital discord and volatility. I agree that it is difficult to give a precise figure on the degree of contribution of these first 3 years and I would not disagree with his assessment that they contributed to at least 20% of his subsequent difficulties. Indeed, in my report of 26th June 2013, I accepted that Professor Fahy's opinion that it is clear that there was a very high risk of him developing personality, emotional and behavioural disturbance even if he had not been taken into care. I also agree with Dr Kennedy that the plaintiff has been honest in his account of his adverse experiences whilst in care. Dr Kennedy details his adverse experiences in care and confirms that he was humiliated for any weakness, being consistently beaten and made to do adult chores as a punishment. Dr Kennedy confirms that the plaintiff was sexually molested whilst he was in St Patrick's Training School. I agree with Dr Kennedy's findings that when the plaintiff was placed in care he was already in a very vulnerable state. I strongly agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that it would have been very important at that time for him to receive empathetic loving care and concern. Whilst it is difficult to establish exactly what percentage of his subsequent adult difficulties relate to his adverse experiences whilst in care, I would not disagree with Dr Kennedy's estimate of approximately 60% contribution to his later difficulties.

I note the very high level of agreement with Dr Kennedy's opinion and that of myself. This is in marked contrast to Professor Fahy's opinion that his adverse experiences in care are likely to have contributed to no more than a minor degree of his evolving personality disorder. Dr Kennedy confirms my own diagnosis of post traumatic stress disorder in the plaintiff's case. This is in marked contrast to the opinion given by Professor Fahy who found no evidence to support this diagnosis. In addition, I agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that the plaintiff continues to suffer from a number of post traumatic stress disorder symptoms

SPT-30967



#### 29-JUL-2013 11:27 FROM:

#### TO:02890542540

P.004/005

SPT-30968

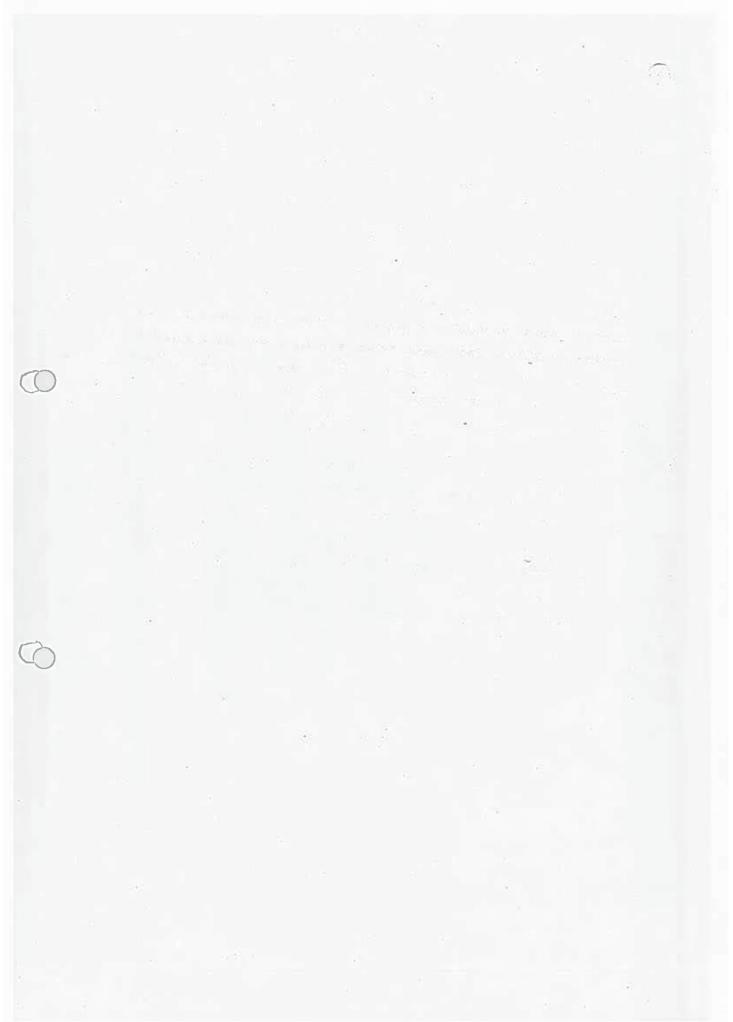
including flashbacks of past trauma, avoidance of situations that remind him of the trauma, sleep disturbance, anxiety states and interference with his life.

I would agree with Dr Kennedy that the plaintiff would benefit from either trauma focused cognitive behavioural therapy or EMDR treatment. I strongly agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that there is considerable evidence that child maltreatment is linked with a range of long term negative psychological outcomes which persist. The combination of physical abuse, physical neglect and verbal abuse correlates particularly strongly with adjustment problems in young offenders. I also agree with his opinion that emotional abuse in the form of verbal abuse is a particularly damaging form of child abuse leading to increased risk of personality disorder. I would agree with Dr Kennedy's opinion that an inability to work is consistent with an antisodial personality disorder. I would also agree that since experiencing his stroke in 2003 **SPT 113** would be able to make a very clear argument that he is no longer able to work. I also agree with Dr Kennedy's view that if one accepts that 60% of the psychiatric injury has been attributed to his time at the Convent of Mercy then a similar amount of percentage if houry should be attributed to his inability to work.

Whilst I accept that cognitive behavioural therapy and EMDR treatment will lead to some resolution of his post traumatic symptomatology, I believe he will continue to have chronic emotional III health as a consequence of his adverse experiences whilst in care. Even thought I remain of the opinion that SPT 113 does not have full ICD:10 or DSM:4 criteria for post traumatic stress disorder, his residual traumatic symptomatology continue to have a significant adverse impact on his functioning. In conclusion, there is a high level of agreement between the opinions given by Dr Kennedy and myself. This is in contrast with the opinions given by Professor Fahy in his report of 27<sup>th</sup> November 2012.

#### DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

# SPT-30969



29-JUL-2013 11:27 FROM:

TD: 02890542540

P.005/005

SPT-30970

#### **DECLARATION:**

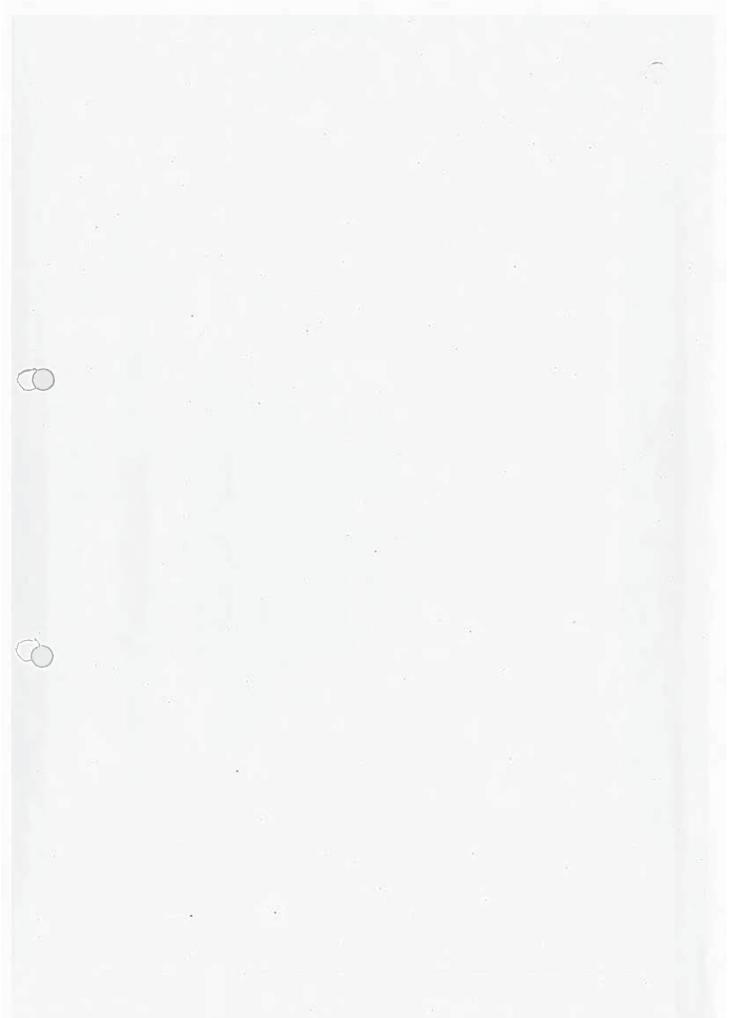
(8)

I understand that my primary duty in furnishing written reports and giving evidence is to assist the court and that this takes priority over any duties which I may owe to the part or parties by whom I have been engaged or by whom I have been paid or am liable to be paid. I confirm that I have complied and will continue with this (1) duty.

- I have endeavoured in my reports and in my opinions to be accurate and to have covered all relevant issues concerning the matters stated, which I have been asked to address, and the opinions expressed represent (2)my true and complete professional opinion.
- t have endeavoured to include in my report those matters of which I have knowledge and of which I have (3) been made aware which might adversely affect the validity of my opinion.
- I have indicated the sources of all information that I have used. (4)
- I have where possible formed an independent view on matters suggested to me by others including my instructing lawyers and their client; where I have relied upon information from others, including my instructing (5) lawyers and their client, I have so disclosed in my report. I will notify those instructing me immediately and confirm in writing if, for any reason, my existing report or
- (6) opinion requires any correction or qualification.
- I understand that:-(7)
  - (a) My report, subject to any corrections before swearing as to its correctness, will form the evidence which I
    - (b)
    - will give under bath or affirmation. I may be cross-examined on my report by a cross-examiner assisted by an expert. I am likely to be the subject of public adverse criticism by the judge if the court concludes that I have not taken reasonable care in trying to meet the standard set out above. (C)
  - I confirm that I have not entered into any arrangement whereby the amount or payment of my fees, charges or expenses is in any way dependent upon the outcome of this case.

**DR BRIAN MANGAN MD FRCPsych** CONSULTANT PSYCHIATRIST

SPT-30971



# SPT-30972

### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:10

FAX Nc.

2,001



Carson McDowell LLP Murray House, Murray Street Belfast 3T1 6DN DX 403 NR BELFAST Tel: +44 (0)28 9024 4951 Fac:+44 (0)28 9024 5768 Isw@carson-mcclawell.com www.carson-mcclawell.com

Napier & Sons 1-9 Castle Arcade High Street Belfast BT1 5DF Our ref: OON/CH/AS/09187/0001 Your ref: JN/RG/011815/0040

31<sup>st</sup> July 2013

#### BY FAX (028 9033 0330)

Dear Sirs,

Re: Your Client – Institute of the Brothers of the Christian Schools (De La Saile Order) Our Client: Congregation of the Sisters of Mercy (Northern Province) Co-Defendants: Sisters of Nazarath

Plaintiff: SPT 113

We enclose report of Dr Kennedy, Consultant Psychiatrist.

Yours faithfully

Carson McDowell LLP

claire.harmer@carson-mcdowell.com amanda.shearer@carson-mcdowell.com

Enc

Cargon NcDewall LLP is a limited liability parametric registered in Monthem Inpand with registered number NC 908.

# SPT-30973

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:11

#### FAX Nc.

2.002

#### DR. ROGER KENNEDY, BSc, MB, BS, FRCPaych

Consultant Child and Adolescent Psychiatrist, Adult Psychotherapist and Psychoanalyst

**Consuling Rooms:** 

The Child and Family Practice STa Whipole Street Londan W1G 8YP Tel: 020 7224 2800 Fax: 020 7224 2885 Ashwood Associates 4 Tannery Lane Sond Woking Surrey GU23 7EF Tel: 01483 223500 Associated Organization: The Lantam Family Centre 4 Dowlans Road Bookham Surray (KT23 4LE Tet 077401 48431

Confidential

**Independent Expert Report** 



dob:

Prepared by Dr Kennedy for Carson McDowell LLP

12th February 2013

# SPT-30974

### 31/JUE/2013/WED 15:11

5

### FAI No.

2.003



**INDEX** 

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	3
Babic View	4
Background	10
QUALIFICATIONS	10
INSTRUCTIONS	11
INTERVIEW WITH SPT 113	13
DOCUMENTS	23
DISCUSSION	25
RESPONSE TO QUESTIONS IN LETTER OF INSTRUCTION	33

APPENDIX A : INDEX TO BUNDLE OF DOCUMENTS

### **OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL**

Z

# SPT-30975

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:11

#### FAX Nc.

2.004



#### INTRODUCTION

001

I have been asked to interview SPT113 and to make an assessment of his current psychiatric state and whether or not he has sustained psychiatric injuries as a result of past abuse. I have been asked to assess the degree to which any psychiatric injury affects his current life, including his ability to work. I have also been asked to recommend any appropriate treatment. The context for the assessment is the claim brought by SPT113 relating to alleged physical, psychological and sexual abuse he suffered during his period in residential care as a child. The claim against the Congregation of the Sisters of Mercy relate solely to the alleged physical abuse. I have also been asked to state the degree of percentage to which the alleged physical abuse may have contributed to his mental health issues.

002

In order to make my assessment I want to Belfast to see SPT 113 for an interview. In fact I also saw one of his sisters for a similar assessment. I was also given a bundle of documents, the index to which I include at Appendix A. These documents include Dr Brian Mangan's psychistric reports on SPT 113 extensive GP notes and some reports from social workers in the early 1970a about the family. There is also an attendance note of a meeting with Sister

003

As a result of my assessment meeting and reading through the documents, my Basic View is as follows:

3

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:11

#### FAX Nc.

2.005

SPT-30976



#### BASIC VIEW

004

005

My overall findings and view are similar to those of Dr Brian Mangan when he saw SPT 113 in July 2010 in terms of history and diagnosis. However, I have tried to add further detail as well as some additional thoughts.

It has been somewhat difficult to clarify all of the historical facts with regard to SPT 113 background because he was very young when he was put into care after his father was sent to prison. There are also somewhat different accounts in the documents. However, as far as I can see the basic historical facts are as follows: from social work reports I seems the family became known to their depertment in November 1971 when Mrs and approached the office requesting assistance with financial marital problems and complaining about her husband's aggressive behaviour and extreme possessiveness. Subsequent visits by the social worker revealed some child neglect in respect of feeding, clothing, tyglene and poor school attendance. received medical treatment as a result of beatings from husband. Mrs The relationship between Mr and Mrs seemed guite volatile. On 19th April 1973 Mrs took an ovariose of sleeping tablets and the children were admitted to care and placed in Nazareth Lodge in Belfast, possibly for a couple of weeks. They were then placed in St Joseph's Subjes Home on 20th April 1973.

006

The father apparently regretted his behaviour and tried to repair the home. The mother, however, did not return home immediately and avoided contact with her husband and social worker. Something then precipitated an argument and in the end Mr

He was found guilty of

4

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:12

#### FAX Nc.

2.006

SPT-30977

### SPT 113

and sentenced to two years' imprisonment. The paternal grandparents cared for the children from 9<sup>th</sup> September 1973. The social work report says they were removed from Nazareth Lodge although earlier in that report it said they were moved to St Joseph's Home. This is an example of slight difficulty in finding out historical facts. While with the grandparents, the children visited the father regularly, but the grandparents were unable to cope with the four young children and on 21<sup>st</sup> August 1974 the children were admitted to Belfest City Hospital suffering from scables and Impetigo. On 8<sup>th</sup> February 1975 the **additional children were admitted to the Convent of Mercy**, Newry, which later became known as Orana House. **SPT 113** and his elster refer to the Convent as Orana.

007

After SPT 113 release from prison he wished to take the children out of care but, according to the social work reports, his mental state appeared unstable. On 9<sup>th</sup> September 1975 the letter of instruction states that SPT113 was transferred to Palmeraton Assessment Centre. However, there is a report from Palmeraton Assessment Centre that all four children were admitted. The staff in the Convent of Mercy had been finding SPT113 behaviour disruptive and beyond the control of the staff there. There was also the fact that the children's relatives were living mainty in Belfast and it was a long way for them to travel to keep in contact with the children.

008 On 17<sup>th</sup> June 1976 the children were re-united with their father who had obtained rented accommodation. He made a great effort to maintain the family but in the end could not cope. The sisters, **1000**, **1000** and **10000** were transferred back Orana House on 24<sup>th</sup> or 25<sup>th</sup> April 1979, depending on cliffering accounts. Meanwhile, **SPITTE** was admitted to St Patrick's Training

5

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:12

### FAX Ne,

2.007

SPT-30978



School in Balfast at the end of 1978 because of his difficult behaviour. SPT 113 had also attended Fallowfields School in Lurgan for a while, from 1<sup>st</sup> May 1978; he had been at a pravious school but had hardly attended there. I also note that in 1975 an IQ test showed that he had an IQ of 83, which is on the lower end of average.

009

His first criminal offence was in 1979 for taking and driving sway a vahicle and he then spent some 20 years in and out of prison for a number of offences, including serious crimes, such as armed robbery and possession of a firearm, and kidnepping. He has been out of prison for some six years. SPT 113 also has a significant drug abuse history, including the use of Class A drugs as well as cannable. He does not have a history of long-term alcohol abuse. Mr SPT 118 also has a significant medical history which I shall go over in the Discussion.

- 010 I tried to clarify the details of the history as there are differing accounts and Mr SPT 113 himself is somewhat vague about his early history, which is not supprising as he was so young when he went into care.
- 011 Besically, SPT 113 is bringing an action against those who were responsible for his welfare while he was in residential care as a child. I have been asked to make an assessment of the degree to which any abuse he experienced has contributed to his subsequent difficulties.
- 012 It does seem clear, from the documents at least, that the early years of Mr <u>SPT113</u> iffe were marked by marital discord and volatility. Social workers noted the neglect of the children end the domestic abuse suffered by the

8

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:12

### FAX Nc.

2. 008

SPT-30979

# SPT 113

mother which ultimately led both to her overdose and to As far as I can see there was no history of criminality in the family, but It does seem reasonably clear that the children would have been subject to a certain amount of emotional harm at that time. This must have had an effect on SPT113 early life and must have contributed to his subsequent difficulties. He, himself, attributes his difficulties to what happened subsequently when he was taken into care. While I would not minimise the traumatic effects of what he experienced whilst in care, as I shall come to in due course; one cannot ignore the first three years of his life as contributing to his subsequent anti-social behaviour. It is difficult to give a precise figure on the degree of contribution of these first three years, but I would suggest something like at least 20 per cent of his subsequent difficulties. That early life may indeed have made him a somewhat difficult child as is described in all the various reports from various institutions.

013

With regard to then what happened from the age of three, at the Convent of Mercy, this must have had a significant impact on his subsequent development. If he is to be believed, and I see no reason not to believe him, he was subjected to institutionalised physical abuse. As I shell describe in the interview in more detail, there are vivid and rather horrendous descriptions of him being humiliated for any weakness, being consistently besten, made to do adult chores as a punishment, with little understanding of what he must have been going through, having lost a mother with his father not being available. As far as I can understand there was also no consistent education provided in the early years.

7

#### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:13

014

015

#### FAX Nc.

2.009

SPT-30980



Unfortunately the main alleged perpetrators are now dead. However, the kind of allegations made by <u>SPT 113</u> are consistent with accounts by other survivors of abuse in some similar institutions in Ireland at that time. I note that Sister **Sector**, who was present at that time, in her interview denies that this abuse would have taken place; however it is not clear how far ahe was present for the 24 hours of the day when the alleged perpetrators were in fact taking charge of the institution at that time.

SPT 113 also describes being sexually molested while he was in St Patrick's Training School, as I shall describe in the interview. The context for this abuse was that SPT 113 was probably, at that time, a vulnerable boy, desperate for affection because of the neglect and abuse he had already suffered at the Convent of Mercy and thus was perhaps easily exploited. He also talked about the fact that most of the boys there had criminal records of some kind whereas he and one or two other boys did not at that time. He described how the boys without a record were mercilessly tessed for having no parents. It does seem that this was one of the motivating factors to SPT 113 to get into crime at that time so that he could feel like the other boys. Unfortunately this was the beginning of a vicious circle that ultimately led to him spending many years in and out of prison. The point however is that the ground for such antisocial behaviour was already laid when he was neglected and abused at the Convent in the first place. Again it is difficult to give percentage contributions to subsequent difficulties; SPT 113 was only three when he entered the Convent and was thus very susceptible. He had already been subjected to some neglect and he had just lost his mother and father. He would have been in a very vulnerable state; it would have been very important at that time for him to receive empethic, loving care and concern. The nuns should have

8

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:13

016

2.010

SPT-30981



understood why he was being challenging rather than constantly trying to restrain and punish him. Because he was so young at the time i would suggest that one could think of a figure of about 60 per cent contribution to his subsequent difficulties. While the subsequent sexual abuse was of course highly significant in causing him harm, I am suggesting that took place because he was already damaged and vulnerable and thus easy prey to a sexual predator.

SPT 113 then led a life of enti-social behaviour to such a degree that one could quite easily diagnose him as having an anti-social personality disorder ea I shall describe in due course in the Discussion. In addition, he suffered repeated bouts of anxiety and depression; furthermore he has a significant medical history which includes a gastric ulcer and then a serious cerebrovascular accident (stroke) in 2003.

017 Finally, he has some classic symptoms of post-traumatic strass disorder in terms of flashbacks of the memories of abuse, poor sleeping, depression, avoidance of places that might remind him of the religious order. These post-traumatic stress symptoms have been present for much of his life, they interfered with his marriages, they have become much more intense since the case was opened and also since the suicide of his sister to some extent all along.

018 SPT 113 would certainly benefit from specific treatment for his PTSD: this is either trauma-focused cognitive behaviour therapy or eye-movement desensitisation reprocessing (EMDR). These are treatments recommended by

9

# SPT-30982

#### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:13

### FAX Ne.

2.011



the Government agency responsible for looking at evidence for treatments, the National Institute for Clinical Excellence (NICE).

019 In the Discussion I shall go over the questions which include the degree to which I would consider <u>SPT 113</u> life and work prospects have been interfered with as a result of his past abure, but there is little doubt that the abuse that he has suffered has made a significant contribution to his life's difficulties.

#### BACKGROUND

020

I have gone over the history as far as I have been able to reconstruct it in the Basic View, and so I do not need to repeat that here. The letter of instruction summarises the facts of the background briefly, although some of the details are slightly different from the documents which is why I have gone over them myself.

#### QUALIFICATIONS

1 I am a Doctor of Medicina and Fellow of the Royal College of Psychiatrista. I was trained in child and adolescent psychiatry at the Tavitatock Centre and at Guy's Hospital, where I was Senior Registrar in Child & Adolescent Psychiatry. I was Consultant Child Psychiatrist to the Families Service, Caseel Hospital from 1982 to March 2011, and I was also Honorary Senior Lecturer in Psychiatry at Imperial College, London. Since January 2011 I have been part of the Child & Family Practice, which is a multi-disciplinary private clinic for the assessment and treatment of children, and elso part of Ashwood Associates, Wolding, Surrey, which is also a multi-disciplinary private clinic. As a result of my extensive experience in child psychiatry. I have been able to essess and

10

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:13

#### FAX Hc.

2.012

SPT-30983



also help the treatment of many multi-problem families, I have published extensively in the field, including many papers and several books - the most relevant recent publications include my books *Psychotherapists as Expert Witnesses* - *Families at Breaking Point*, 2005, and *Psychoanelytic Psychotherapy After Child Abuse* (co-author), 2008, as well as several articles on Family Law, the most recent being in May 2010. I am often used as an expert witness in difficult family cases.

022

I also have extensive experience of sescessing and treatment of soluts as a result of 35 years working as a psychotherapist and psychoanalyst. I have been working for an average of 25 hours per week seeing patients for psychotherapy and psychoanalytic treatment. This has involved extensive experience of assessing and treating adults who have experienced significant trauma.

#### INSTRUCTIONS

021

I have been asked to provide a full and detailed report dealing with <u>SPT 113</u> claim for psychiatric injuries and to specifically address the following issues: *Causation* 

 Please obtain more information from the Plaintiff as to the exact nature of the abuse he alleges was perpetrated by the servant or agents of the Congregation and state specifically what impact that treatment had (assuming that you accept the veracity of the Plaintiff's allegations) on the Plaintiff's mental health;

 Please comment on whether or not the Plaintiff's psychiatric injury (if any) was caused or contributed to by:

i) His difficult domestic circumstances prior to admission to cara;

11

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:14

#### FAX Nc.

2.013

SPT-30984

# SPT 113

 The alleged physical abuse which he claims occurred when he was resident at the Convent of Mercy, Newry, between 6<sup>th</sup> February 1974 and 9<sup>th</sup> September 1975;

iii) The alleged physical and exual abuse which occurred in other residential facilities.

 Can you state the degree or percentage to which the alleged physical abuse (if you accept that it occurred) at the Convent of Mercy, Newry, contributed to the Plaintiff's mental health; and

4. The Plaintiff is alleging that he has been unable to work as a result of the abuse that he suffered. Is it possible to distinguish as to what impact the abuse at the Congregation of the Sisters of Mercy affected the Plaintiff's psychiatric health and his overall ability to work.

#### Current Condition and Progress

1. Please state specifically the nature and extent of the Plaintiff's psychiatric disorder;

 Please detail how, if at all, the Plaintiff's psychiatric injury affects his day to day living;

3. Please detail how, if at all, the Plaintiff's psychiatric injusy affects his ability to work. If you are of the view that the Plaintiff is capable of work, please state when in your view, he should have obtained full time employment. -Please highlight any other factors which have prevented the Plaintiff from securing employment;

 In the event you do consider that the Plaintiff has ongoing psychlatric symptoms, please give your view as to when the complaint or disability is likely to resolve;

12

# SPT-30985

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:14

#### FAX Ne.

2.014

### SPT 113

5. Please confirm if any treatment would assist the Plaintiff in his recovery; and

 Please let us have your comment on the reports of Dr Mangan, Consultant Psychiatrist.

#### INTERVIEW

Meeting with SPT 113 et a medical centre in Belfast on 6<sup>th</sup> January 2013 When I came to collect SPT 113 from the waiting-room, he was there with his sister whom I was due to see later in the day. At first he asked if I could see both of them together. I said I thought it would be better if I could see them on their own, and certainly him on his own, first of all. SPT 113 did agree to this.

023

022

He is aged 45 and not working. I asked him if he knew why I had come to see him and he said that he did and knew about the issue of compensation. I asked him to tell me how he saw the situation. He said it all started in His mother died and his father went to prison and he was then ill-treated regularly at the Convent of the Sisters of Mercy. They force-fed him; if he didn't want to eat, he would be fed in front of the other children. He said he was virtually vomiting at times. At bathtime there would be about 20 children all lined up, they were naked and would have their sidin scrubbed with a hard acrubbing-brush, staff poured very hot water over them with stuff that stung, then there was a cold shower. When you have the hot water you're a bit like a iobater and then you have audden freezing water. That happened about twice a week. They were all nuns there, although one wasn't a nun, this was She had keys on a chain and a big crucific, she was more of a house carer. She was there 24 hours a day and ran the place with Sister

13

# SPT-30986

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:14

#### FAX Nc.

2.015



who was a nun. During the day you would have to go into different corners to pray if you were noisy.

124 He was aged three when he went there for the first year or so. He was there for about three times, in and out, he can't receil the dates as he was so young, and he was rather vague about some of those dates.

(25 There ware three sisters, in fact his younger sister, died; she hanged herself some years ego, but she had left tapes about her experience. His eleter the ware going to see later on, is described as quiet. His sister is in a psychiatric hospital and is rather unstable. In fact I had been due to see her but she declined, perhaps because of her instability.

026 SPT 113 seld that his grandmother triad to look after them for a while, this is the paternal grandmother, for a year or so, but then they went back to the nuns.

027 The two main perpetrators were Sister and and They would also comb their hair with metal nit combs which made you bleed. They would hit him, stap him around the ear for nothing much, he never knew why. Then they were told to stand in a comer and say Hail Marys.

028 I asked SPT 113 about a typical day. There was a dormitory with about 20 children. The nuns rang a bell and you got up. Breaktast was made by the nuns, there was porridge. He said they made his sister **set of the set of the set** 

14

#### FAX Ne.

2.016

SPT-30987

and

There were nice nuns who allowed them to go downstairs and they would see the others. Not all the nuns were bad. He remembers there was a big field which was fenced off, they would run about. Then they were back inside cleaning the place, always cleaning the place – stairs and stairwells. There was no education at that time, no school and no nursery that he can remember. He does remember going to the kitchen and being taught to make buns.

would be together and then went to see

029

and

Because he wet the bed regularly, what happened is that when he got up he would have to take the sheets off the bed. He was often humilisted because of being a bed-wetter in front of the other children. In fact he wet the bed until he was 15. He tried to turn the mattress over so he wouldn't be found, but he was always found out. They would say to him when they did 'you devil, pray for forgiveness for doing it'. He would have to wash the sheets himself and then hang them over the bushes for everyone to see. He had to go and check if they were dry. This could go on for much of the day and then it was explained in front of all the others that he had wet the bed. Sometimes he was so worried about wetting the bed that he would try and stay awake all night. Mr

030

I asked what else there was in the day, he said mainly chores. He had to pull out the weeds, pick berries for the jams the nuns made. At bedtime you were put in bed quite early, any noise and you would be threatened with a stick. There were different nuns, not just the same nun there at night.

15

# SPT-30988

#### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:15

#### FAX Ne.

2.0:7

	SPT	113
12*	Februari	2013

031 He did return when he was a bit older to what was Orane House then, and the same things happened. He would also get hurt with staps to the face.

- 0.32 I asked if there were any visits. He said about once a month or so from his father. There was one incident when his father found bruises on the legal and the father had a run-in with the nums. The police were called and he had to be escorted off the grounds.
- 033 SPT 113 also remembers that they wore the same clothes every day until there was a visit and then they put on new clothes, and then they were taken off. Any money that was left for the children was taken off them by the nuns.
- 034 I asked SPT 113 if he remembered what life was tike before going to the convent. He said what he does remember is that his father was taken away because of something that had happened between his parents. He remembers very little of his mother and can't remember her face. He said he loved his father to death, he clid his time and go out and started his business and turned his life around. The parents were always fighting, apparently;

When the father was still in prison the paternal grandmother tried to look after them but it didn't work out. He was vague around this time and said he could not remember exactly the dates. I should add that Mr SPTK113 does have something of a memory problem since his stroke in 2003, which may have added to some of the vagueness.

16

# SPT-30989

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:15

035

#### FAX Nc.

2.018



He does remember going to St Patrick's Training School when he was 12, There were about 80 children there; the vast majority of the boys were there for having committed a crime, only three or four were there for other reasons. He, like the others who were there for not committing a crime, were then teased the whole time and builted. There was a song You're Nabody's Child. Then after a while he was approached by the cook, whom he knows as DL 137 SPT 113 was kept in for the weekend as he had no parents to look after him. had keys to open the grills and had some authority. He said he would look after them. He told SPT 113 that anyone who bullied him, he would see to, Ther the started touching SPT 113 up. He put his hand down his trousers to touch his genitals, he fondled him and his penis, and he had to do the same to DL 137 Sometimas he would wrestle with him, touching him. He did try to abuse him analy, but SPT 113 would resist this and so it did not take place. This went on for about two years until SPT 113 was 14. Then he did tell a couple of senior boys. What then happened was that the swimming pool weiting for him and the boys went in and insulted him. and denied all knowledge, but left him alone. There was moved to another part of the school away from him.

038 SPT 113 stayed there until he was 15. He did run away and he also stole and got caught and his life of crime began from that point on. It seemed to be partly because he feit then that he was accepted by the other boys and so began to do criminal acts.

037 Overall, the issue of any abuse occurred between the ages of 3 and 15, but not after that.

17

# SPT-30990

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:15

#### FAX Ne.

2.019

038

He did not tell his elsters about what happened to him, they were elsewhere. In fact he sold the sisters were elso being abused. He found out when they all spoke together, comething like three years ago. He knew comething was not right. If was the one who did everything about the abuse, with documents, but ahe folled herself. She had tried to bring it all to light some years ago but nothing happened and she gave up then. She killed herself about years ago because of all the copariences that she had had. His elster has taken an overdose. I mentioned that I was originally going to see her, and he said she was probably not feeling up to it now.

039

I then asked SPT113 ebout the rest of his life. He said that hed been going to prison, aged 16. He was in the Maze Prison for four years for possession of a shotgun, then there was armed robbery, possession, and kidnepping. There were many sentences; according to the documents there were 60 offences. It had become his way of life. He wanted to stop being a criminal when he was about 40, he said he was a bad criminal anyway; he was sloways being caught. He did not abuse alcohol but he certainly abused drugs, including ampheternines, costasy and cocaine, perticularly in the 1990s. It was all part of that oriminal scene. He has now been out of prison for skx or seven years and feels he has nothing more to prove.

040

I asked him about relationships. He has been married and divorced and remarried. In his first relationship there was a lot of violence. This was they were together for about five years. He was also in jail on and off. She became an alcoholic and then a prostitute. There were three sons from her, in fact the two older boys live near him. There is **a second to the** he

18

# SPT-30991

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:16

#### FAX Ne.

2. 020



works for the **and the is described as a diamond.** The maternal grandmother looked after him, she died two years ago. Since then he has been more involved himself with **and** in fact he lives in the flat next to him. There is **a who is the first a good worker**, **and the flat next to him there is a netationship.** He was in care and fostered. He was brought to him three years ago as a stranger. He had not wanted to see him, but the foster parents said they couldn't cope and so he has become more involved. There is **SPT 113** describes as a lost cause. He is into drugs, he lives anywhere. He was in a children's home and in foster care. There are no other children.

041 His current wife, Things started off the same with her as they had been with his first wife, but they have been together now for 15 years. They did fall out for three years and then they decided enough was enough and they are now much happier.

042 SPT 113 father died, eged from a heart attack. It happened about 15 years ago when SPT 113 was in prison. It was a real shock. He had a strong, positive relationship with his father and his father was alwaye eupportive, although he radieed he put his father through a lot, but his father never turned his back on him, they were like friends. He did again describe how his father had seen the bruises when he came to visit. SPT 113 said that in those days nuns were powerful, as indeed the Catholic Church was. It was felt that nuns didn't do that, you can't say anything about them or you will be called a liar.

19

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:16

043

#### FAX Nc.

2.021

SPT-30992



I asked about depression. He did have some when he was a teenager. He went through a difficult period of self-harm, he was swallowing light bulbs and razor blades. He felt this was a cry for help. This happened when he was in the Crumlin Road Prison, aged 16 or 17 or so. He did see a psychiatrist there. He does not recall having had any help. He grew out of that feeling of selfharm when he realised he might actually die. Twelve years ago he had a stroke. He got up one morning, he was in prison, and he was walking sideways, like a creb. They thought he was kidding. Eventually, two hours later he saw a doctor who realised this was an emergency and he should have been taken straightaway to hospital. He ended up blind for a while and couldn't walk. I note in fact from the documents that this was a serious stroke to his brain stem which is the part of the nervous system that controls basic functions. He was probably lucky to have recovered, SPT 113 in fact described how they thought he would never walk again, but he rehabilitated himself by his persistence. He also has an ulcer, and some memory loss. I asked him if they found a cause for the stroke, like blood pressure, and he said his blood pressure is OK, as far as the knows, but he said it was probably stress. He is due to have some blood tests soon. He is on Plavix, for thinning the blood. He had been on aspirin but that is no longer the case because of his ulcer.

044

I asked him about andeties. He said 'all sorts'. He worries every day about ordinary pressures, he worries about death. He did say that since all this legal business it left him with a lot more images coming out. It was like a can of worms being opened and it has seriously affected him, and ha has wondered if it is all worth it really. In fact, he and his sisters are only doing this now, they feel, for the sake. She wanted it, so they want to do it for her.

20

# SPT-30993

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:16

#### FAX Nc.

2. 022

12<sup>th</sup> February 2013

045 Before he met with his sisters to discuss the abuse, he did not think too much about his childhood. He put up the barriers. He felt he just had to be strong, but then all the feelings that were probably there anyway began to come out. He now has memories coming back the whole time. He has clear memories of the fil-treatment. He feels ally looking back; he should have done something, even though as I pointed out, he was only very young. He also avoids anything that reminds him of religious orders; he will not go near a chapel, even though he is Catholic. If he went in, his nerves would go; he would shake and sweat and have what I would describe as an anotety attack.

048 I asked about his enger. He said it was a terrible problem, although he can control it much more now, but he will not take anger from anybody else. In the past he had big problems because of this. He rebelled against the system, he was troublesome in prison. They did try to help and they gave him some anger management courses which helped a bit. Then he had fights with his wives and he mentioned that he had flashbacks of the abuse while with his second wife and felt at times as if the nuns were still beating him.

047 I asked him about his education; clearly he has never had much education and has never consistently worked, although he can read.

048 His sleeping is very poor, it can be up and down all night. I asked him why. He said it's as if he's waiting for someone to come through the door. It's hard to shake off and it's partly a result of being in prison.

21

# SPT-30994

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:17

051

052

#### FAX Ne.

2.023

049 With regard to the family history, heart problems are in the family. There is no history of criminality until his father went to prison for the second charge.

050 Secause it seemed to me that SPT 113 was having pretty classic symptoms now of post-traumatic stress disorder, i want into the possible treatment for him and he was interested in this. He was also interested in having some counselling.

I then went into Dr Mangan's report, looking to see if there were lasues I had left out or issues for clarification. I took up the incident when <u>SPT 113</u> said that he was placed on a large tumble drier for punishment. He said this was actually when he was in Nazareth Lodge. He agreed that he has continued

actually when he was in Nazareth Lodge. He agreed that he has continued from time to time to have fischbacks of being assaulted by the nuns when he has been with his second wife. He occasionally has flashbacks to the incident with DL 197 the cook, when he is with women. He no longer smokes cannable.

Overall, SPT 113 is now He suffered physical, sexual and emotional abuse while in care. He also had a period of being neglected during the first three years of his life while he was in his parents' care. SPT 113 became a career criminal with what one could describe as an anti-social personality disorder. As I shall describe in the Discussion, this is clearly linked to the neglect and abuse he suffered as a child. SPT 113 has also had lifelong problems with substance dependency which I would also link to the traumatic experiences of childhood which would have increased his vulnerability to developing such problems. He is currently, and probably for a long time, has been suffering from typical symptoms of post-traumatic stress disorder, which are linked to the abuse he suffered as a child.

22

# SPT-30995

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:17

053

#### FAX Nc.

2.024

While his own family upbringing until he was three had some contribution to his subsequent difficulties, in my estimate the period of time in the convent had a more eignificant contribution to his subsequent anti-social difficulties. He want into the convent aged 3 as a very vulnerable boy who had just lost his mother and whose father had been taken away, at a time when he needed nurturing and understanding. It sounds as if he was met with constant punishment. The way that his enuresis was managed can only be described as outrageous. The result of the repeated and institutionalised neglect and abuse that he suffered at the convent led to <u>SPT 113</u> even more vulnerable, it is possible that this vulnerability led him to being easy pray to sexual abuse when he went into St Patrick's Training Centre. While the sexual abuse must have had a significant impact on his subsequent development, the ground had already been leid by the long period of neglect and institutionalised abuse at the convent.

#### DOCUMENTS

054

I have already deacribed in the Basic View some of the essential points of the history that I have tried to extract from the various documents, in particular the early social work reports. There is a report from Fellowfields School which indicates that SPT118 was unable to concentrate or be motivated for working. He never seems to have learnt very much at any school. His IQ comes out as 83, which is low average, so there is no evidence of a learning disability. The report from the Palmerston Assessment Centre describes the family, that is the four children, as being close. SPT118 was protective towards the girls, but not over-protective. The girls fight between themselves but have a strong bond of affection as well. It was felt then that there was a great deal of social training that still needed to be done with the family. In a most extreordinary statement

23

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:17

### FAX Ne.

2. 025

SPT-30996



it is described that their dependence on each other was far too great and one felt that this was a long-standing thing with them rather than a transient thing and so a great deal of work and effort has gone into helping the children to develop as individuals. I have to say I find this a rather disturbing statement; this may well be real evidence of the fact that the nuns took a punitive attitude to the fact that these little children had feelings of dependence towards one another and so it was their task to break them, as it ware.

055

is described as very hard to work with because of his so-called devious and difficult behaviour. He is described at times as a nightmare to work with. Of course it might well be that he was reacting normally to being abused. There seemed to be ittle understanding of ittle SPT 113 vulnerability and need for affection.

The St Patrick's Training School report of the end of 1978 mentions that SPT113 was referred to the child psychiatry department at the Royal Victoria Hospital in 1977. They did try a programme for the father to follow with a view to modifying SPT113 difficult behaviour but this did not prove successful, parity because of the father's failure to keep appointments and SPT113 truanting from school. It is noted that SPT113 suffere from a deep inferiority complex and was constantily striving for peer group acceptance. His method of gaining recognition was not acceptable and he was described as somebody who could be easily used. Certainly this would be consistent with SPT113 own account of his sexuel abuse.

24

## SPT-30997

### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:17

### FAX Nc.

2. 026

SPT 113

- D57 At least the report does recognise that SPT 113 had endured many traumatic experiences in his sife; however it is noted, even then, that he had a strong relationship with his father and wanted to help him with his problems.
- 058 By 1980 it is commented that SPTEI13 behaviour within the school was generally well-accepted. He had greatly improved, he is a likeable lad on his good days. Overall there had been some improvement though of course later or SPTEI13 then got into constant criminal activity.

059 Dr Mangar's reports on SPT 113 are consistent with my own assessment. I do not disagree with his findings and support them. I have tried to add my own, particularly around some of the details of the alleged abuse. I would not agree that there are no signs of active post-traumatic stress disorder, I think they are very clear and would be consistent with DSM-IV and, indeed ICD-10, as I shall discuss later in the report.

060

There are very extensive GP notes which Dr Mangan has also commented on. There is a long-standing history of gastritis, and then haematemests, consistent with gastric or duodenel ulcer. SPT 113 continues to take medication for his ulcer. His drug dependency is also mentioned. There was then the severe cerebrovascular accident (stroke) in June 2003 which was a brain stem stroke from which he took some time to recover. As a result of this he has been on blood-thinning medication. He had a road traffic accident in November 2001.

25

## SPT-30998

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:18

### FAX Nc.

2.027



SPT 113 mood has varied from time to time with anxiety on some occasion over the years. His sister's suicide was particularly difficult to cope with. There is no obvious depressive illness.

#### DISCUSSION

081

082

I will first make some general points about post-traumatic stress disorder. Post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD) is defined by DSM-IV-TR (2000) as a mental disorder following exposure to a traumatic event in which the person experiences, witnesses, or is confronted with actual or threatened death or serious injury, or threat to the physical integrity of self or others, provoking terror, horror or helplessness at the time of exposure resulting in symptoms of re-experiencing, avoidance and numbing, and hyper-arousal lasting more than a month and causing social or occupational dysfunction. Dramatic expariences are extremely common and include sexual and physical assault. natural disasters, accidents and combet. ICD-10 classification is similar. Posttraumetic stress disorder arises as a delayed or protracted response to a stressful event or situation of either brief or long duration of an exceptionally threatening or catastrophic nature, which is likely to cause pervasive distress in almost anyone. Pre-disposing factors such as personality traits or previous history of neurotic illness may lower the threshold for the development of the syndrome or aggravate its cause, but they are neither necessary nor sufficient to explain its occurrence. Typical features include episodes of repeated reliving of the trauma, episodes of memories or flashbacks, dreams or nightmares occurring against the persistent background of a sense of numbress and emotional blunting, detachment from other people, unresponsiveness to surroundings, lack of pleasure and avoidance of activities and situations reminiscent of the trauma. There is usually a state of autonomic

26

2. 028

### SPT 113

hyper-arousal, with hyper-vigilance, an enhanced startled reaction and insomnia. Anxiety and depression are commonly associated with these symptoms and signs, and suicidal ideation is not infrequent. The onset follows the trauma with a latency period that may range from a few weeks to months. The course is fluctuating but recovery can be expected in the majority of cases. In a small proportion of cases the condition may follow a chronic course over many years, with eventual transition to an enduring personality change.

083

To make a diagnosis of PTSD, according to ICD-10, the patient must have been exposed to a stressful event or situation, either short or long-lasting of an exceptionally threatening or catestrophic nature which would be likely to cause pervasive distress in almost anyone. There must be persistent remembering or reliving of the stressor and intrusive fleshbacks, vivid memories or recurring dreams, or in experiencing distress when exposed to circumstances resembling or associated with the stressor. The patient must exhibit an actual or preferred evoldance of circumstances resembling or associated with the stressor, which was not present before exposure to the stressor. Either of the following must be present: (1) inability to recall either partially or completely some important aspects of the period of exposure to the stressor; (2) persistent symptoms of increased psychological sensitivity and arousal not present before exposure to the stressor shown by any two of the following: (a) difficulty In failing or staying asleep; (b) initability of outbursts of anger; (c) difficulty in concentrating; (d) hyper-viglianca; (e) exaggerated startle response. The criteria above must all be met within six months of the stressful event or at the end of the period of stress.

27

## SPT-31000

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:18

### FAX Nc.

?. 029

### SPT 113

084

- Thus one can see that the essential symptoms associated with PTSD are first of all re-experiencing: this is flashbacks, nightmans, repetitive and distressing intrusive images of eeneory impressions; avoidance of people, altustions or circumstances resembling or associated with the event; hyper-arousal or hyper-vigilance of threat, exaggerated startle response, sleep problems, initiability and difficulty concentrating; emotional numbing with the lack of ability to experience faelings, feeling detached from other people; giving up previously significent activities; amnesia for significent parts of the event. There may be depression, as well as anger. In addition there may be drug or alcohol misuse and unexplained physical symptoms resulting in repeated attendance to a doctor.
- 065 Symptoms of PTSD aften develop immediately after a traumatic event, but the onset of symptoms may be delayed in some people. PTSD is treatable even when problems present many years after the traumatic event.

068 Treatment in the first place is one of two interventions. NICE (National Institute for Cfinical Excellence) has reviewed the evidence of the effectiveness of treatment for PTSD and has found that there is significantly good evidence for treatment using one of two approaches. One of these is traume-focueed cognitive behavioural thanapy, and the other form of treatment is eye movement desensitization and reprocessing (EMDR). These treatments should normally be provided on an individual outpatient basis. Up to at least 12 treatments are normally enough to reduce the scute symptoms of the PTSD, Drug treatments for PTSD should not be used as a routine first-line treatment for adults and the preference is for trauma-focueed psychological therapy. Drug treatments should be offered for the treatment of PTSD in

28

### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:19

### FAX Nc.

?. 030

SPT-31001



adults who express a preference not to engage in trauma-focused psychological treatment. Occasionally antidepressants and drug treatment may be necessary for those who have persistent symptoms, despite psychological therapy. However, there is good evidence of the effectiveness of either trauma-focused cognitive behavioural therapy or EMDR.

As one can see it is clear that SPT113 does suffer from a number of posttraumatic stress disorder symptome, including flashbacks of past trauma, avoidance of situations that remind him of the trauma, disturbed sleep, andety states and interference with his life. I have indicated there is good treatment for such a disorder and I would recommand that SPT113 sees a psychologist to have this treatment as soon as possible. If it is not available in the local national health service it can be available privately; usually some three months treatment with weakly sessions is necessary. Privately this costs something like £130.00 per session.

068 The symptoms of <u>SPT 113</u> post-traumatic stress disorder relate specifically to the time that he was looked after by the nuns, and thus one can say this is directly related to his time there.

069 I now come to the issue of SPT 113 anti-social behaviour. In my view he clearly shows eigns of having had an anti-social personality disorder. Anti-social personality disorder comes under what is known as Cluster B personality disorders, this is a group of personality disorders with some similar features including borderline histrionic and narclasistic disorders. Under DSM-(V-TR (301.7) anti-social personality disorder consists of the following:

29

### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:19

### FAX Ne.

2.031

SPT-31002



a) There is a pervasive diaregard for and violation of the rights of others occurring since the age of 15, as indicated by three or more of the following: (1) failure to conform to social norms with respect to lawful behaviours as indicated by repeatedly performing acts that are grounds for arrest; (2) deceltfulness, as indicated by repeated lying, use of aliases or conning others for personal profit or pleasure; (3) impulsivity or failure to plan ahead; (4) initability and aggressiveness, as indicated by repeated physical fights or assaults; (5) reckless disregard for safety of self or others; (6) consistent irresponsibility as indicated by repeated failure to sustain consistent work behaviour or honour financial obligations; (7) lack of remorse as indicated by being indifferent to or rationalising, having hurt, mistreated or stalen for another.

b) The individual is at least the age of 18.

c) There is evidence of conduct disorder with onset before the age of 15. Conduct disorder is the repetitive and persistent pattern of behaviour in which the basic rights of others or major age-appropriate societal norms or rules are violated, with aggression to people, destruction to property, deceltfulness, serious violation of rules.

d) The occurrence of anti-social behaviour is not exclusively during the course of schizophrenia or a manic episode.

070

Under ICD-10 (F60.2) anti-social personality comes under dissocial personality disorder, for which the general criteria for personality must be met, which includes enduring experience and behaviour which deviates markedly from the culturally expected and accepted range or norm. This can show itself in flexible maladaptive or dysfunctional behaviour. At least three of the following must be present: (1) callous unconcern for the feelings of others; (2) gross and

30

## SPT-31003

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:19

### FAX Nc.

2.032

٠

#### SPT 113 12<sup>th</sup> February 2013

persistent attitude of irresponsibility, disregard for social norms, rules and obligations; (3) incapacity to maintain anduring relationships, atthough with no difficulty in establishing them; (4) very low tolerance to frustration and low threshold for discharge of aggression including violence; (5) incapacity to experience guilt or to profit from advanue experiences, particularly punishment; (6) marked proneness to blame others or to offer plausible, rationalisations for the behaviour that has brought the individual into conflict with society.

071 I think it is pretty clear from the history that SPT 113 has had an anti-social personality. He has been in constant trouble with the police, he has been violent, not showing any regret when he was younger, and there is elso a clear history of conduct disorder when he was a child with poor behavioural controls.

072 Substance abuse is a frequent accompaniment of such behavioural patters.

- 073 With regard to epidemiology, there is considerable evidence that the disorder is more common in impoverished city central areas because of the association with poor parenting. There is also an association with substance abuse. Maitreatment is defined as maternal rejection, repeated loss of a primary caregiver, frash discipline, physical abuse and sexual abuse and are associated with the development of the disorder.
- 074 Some of the evidence for this is summarised in the book *Psychoanalytic Psychotherapy After Child Abuse*, 2008, McQueen et al.
- 075 There is considerable evidence that child maltreatment is linked with a range of long-term negative psychological outcomes which persist. Severe

31

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:20

2. 033

SPT-31004

#### SPT 113 12<sup>th</sup> February 2013

mattreatment is associated with more severe psychological ill-effects and social adjustment difficulties. A combination of physical abuse, physical neglect and verbal abuse, correlates particularly strongly with adjustment problems in young offenders (Ney et sl, 1994). Emotional abuse in the form of verbat abuse is a particularly damaging form of child abuse, leading to increased risk of personality disorder (Johnson et al, 2001). High rates of child abuse and eaxuel abuse are reported by adults with many psychiatric conditions, including personality disorder, PTSD and dissociative disorders.

076

Sexual abuse has a particularly perticious effect on psychological development. There may be post-traumatic stress disorder, depression, self-harm, eating disorders, risky behaviour, including risky sexual behaviour, as well as psychosomatic conditions. There is a link between subsequent difficulty in intimacy and stable relationships and sexual abuse.

- 077 A child's family and the nature of caregiving experience by the child influence the outcome for the child. Pre-existing adverse family relationships and circumstances may increase the child's prior vulnerability to abuse as well as contributing to the adverse impact of abuse on the child.
- 078 Overall, one can say that SPT 113: adverse upbringing, both in terms of the initial period when both parents were looking after him, and the more extensive period when he was looked after institutionally, have had a very negative impact on his subsequent development. The neglect and institutionalised physical abuse predisposed him to being vulnerable to being exploited as indeed the report from St Patrick's indicates.

32

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:20

### FAX Ne.

2.034



079

In my view, the institutional abuse that SPT 113 suffered while he was in the Convent of the Sisters of Mercy had a significant impact on the development of his anti-social personality disorder, as well as his other psychological and social difficulties.

RESPONSE TO QUESTIONS IN LETTER OF INSTRUCTION

1. Please obtain more information from SPT 113 as to the exact nature of the abuse he alleges was perpetrated by the servant or agents of the Congregation and state specifically what impact that treatment had (assuming that you accept the veracity of SPT 113 allegations) on SPT 113 mental health;

080

I have tried to obtain more information from <u>SPT 113</u> as to the extent of the exact nature of the abuse he alleges was perpetrated. I have described these in the interview and also in my Basic View. The problem of course is that he was a vary young child at the time; however as far as one can see there seems reasonable evidence that this abuse did occur. One has to say it is consistent with evidence from other similar institutions. I have pointed out in the section on the Documents that there is a phrase used by one of the sisters in the report from the assessment centre when the children were young which comments negatively on the fact that this was indicative of the punktive attitude that took place at that time when such behaviour was going to be besten out of them, as it were. If it is indeed the case, then of course this institutionalised abuse would have significant impact on <u>SPT 113</u> turne mental health. If, in the end, it is agreed that <u>SPT 113</u> was indeed subjected to unreasonable

33

### FAX Ne.

2.035



violence when he was a child in the convent, then it would be very helpful and therepeutic for him for this to be acknowledged.

 Please comment on whether or not SPT 113 psychiatric injury (if any) was caused or contributed to by:

His difficult domestic circumstances prior to admission to care;

081

A

I have indicated that the difficult domestic droumstances prior to admission to care did have an impact on <u>SPT 113</u> subsequent development. As far as one can see from the reports there was some neglect and a volatile relationship between the parents, this must have contributed to <u>SPT 113</u> vulnerability. On the other hand he was only exposed to this environment for a relatively short period of time; if he had been exposed to it for many years then the damage would have been more extreme. For this reason I have suggested that there has been a 20 per cent contribution of the difficult domestic circumstances to his subsequent psychiatric injury.

ii) The sileged physical abuse which he claims occurred when he was resident at the Convent of Marcy, Newry, between 5<sup>th</sup> February 1974 and 9<sup>th</sup> September 1975;

082

It is my view that the alleged physical abuse when he was resident at the Convent of Morcy has had a significant contribution to causing <u>SPT 113</u> subsequent personality difficulties for the reasons I have already given.

iii) The alleged physical and sexual abuse which occurred in other residential facilities.

083

While the alleged physical and sexual abuse which occurred in the training school had an added impact, it has to be seen in the context of the previous

34

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:20

### FAX Nc.

?. 036

abuse. I have indicated that that previous abuse made SPT 113 very needy and vulnarable. This was commented on the report from the training centre itself. However, sexual abuse is a serious matter and has its own effects on subsequent development, and thus I would see that experience as contributing to the test of the damage that caused SPT 113 psychiatric injury.

3. Can you state the degree or percentage to which the alleged physical abuse (If you accept that it occurred) at the Convent of Mercy, Newry, contributed to SPT 113 mental health; and

084

I have tried to give percentages and I have suggested that 60 per cent of the afleged physical abuse was caused at the Convent of Mercy. The reason for this high value is the fact that <u>SPT113</u> was so young and vulnerable. He had just lost his mother and he had also lost his father, effectively, as he was in prison. He needed to be given love, care and attention; he needed his enuresis to be treated sensitively. It needed to be understood that these children were dependent on one another because they had no other attentive. This dependency was not something to be knocked out of them as the report from the assessment centre seems to indicate. For this reason i feel it is reasonable to suggest that 60 per cent of the psychiatric injury was caused by <u>SPT113</u> time at the Convent of Mercy.

4. SPT 113 is alleging that he has been unable to work as a result of the abuse that he suffered. Is it possible to distinguish as to what impact the abuse at the Congregation of the Sisters of Mercy affected the Pielntiff's psychiatric health and his overall ability to work.

35

## SPT-31008

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:21

### FAX Nc.

2.037



An inability to work is consistent with an anti-social personality disorder. Mr SPT 113 of course has his own responsibility about not working. Since having a stroke in 2003 SPT 113 would be able to make a very clear argument that he is no longer able to work. The problem with thinking about his capacity to work is that he has spent so much time in and out of prison. He has only now, in the last six or seven years, been out of prison and of course he is vulnerable because of his stroke. If what I am suggesting in terms of 80 per cent being the cause of the psychiatric injury is accepted than that is the same amount of percentage of injury that has stopped him from working.

**Current Condition and Progress** 

Please state specifically the nature and extent of SPT 113 psychiatric disorder;

086

1

085

Currently SPT 113 seems to have matured and so is no longer showing any of the particular features of an anti-social personality disorder. Such a maturation is not uncommon. However, he is also suffering from posttraumatic stress disorder symptoms; as I have described already symptoms include constant flashbacks, anxiety states, avoidance of situations that remind him of the past abuse and his poor sleep pattern. All these symptoms are directly related to his memories of the traumatic effect of him being looked after In various Institutions.

Please detail how, if at all, SPT 113 psychiatric injury silects 2 his dey to day living;

087

His PTSD symptoms certainly affect his day to day living in that intrusive thoughts often come into his mind through the day; they have also affected his

38

# SPT-31009

31/JUL/2013/WED 15:21

FAX Nc.

2. 038



relationships, particularly in the past. The sexual abuse perticularly affected his intimate and sexual relationships with both his wives.

3. Please detail how, if at all, SPT 113 psychiatric injury affects his ability to work. If you are of the view that SPT 113 is capable of work, please state when in your view, he should have obtained full time employment. Please highlight any other factors which have prevented SPT 113 from securing employment;

680

I would have thought that SPT 113 is not really capable of sustained employment now; part of the reason is that he has never been able to work because of so much time spent in prison. The other main reason is his poor medical health. He suffered a significant stroke in June 2003 – this was a brain atem stroke which can be potentially fatal, or produce long-term coma. He was lucky that he was able to recover enough and to be able to work and now live an independent life. However, he does have some memory problems. Such memory problems might also be related to his long-term drug ebuse and it is difficult to be precise how much is drug abuse and how much is the affect of his stroke. Whatever the cause for his current difficulties, Mr SPT113 is not a well man. I think it would be unreasonable to expect him to be able to work full-time; he may be capable of some part-time work provided it is not too stressful or challenging.

4. In the event you do consider that SPT 113 has ongoing psychiatric symptoms, please give your view as to when the completint or disability is likely to resolve;

089

SPT 113 PTSD symptoms are potentially treatable and can reacive, or at least be considerably lossened, through either treume-focused cognitive

37

### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:21

### FAX Nc.

2.039

SPT-31010



behavioural therapy, or eye-movement reprocessing and desensitisation as I have already indicated in the Discussion. I think it would probably help him with his weifare and sense of weil-being. Because the traumatic experiences he received occurred when he was so young, they have essentially scarred him for life and they will never leave him; however it is possible that the intensity of the memories can be reduced enough for him to have more peace in his ordinary daily living. At the moment, partly because of the Court case which has stirred up feelings and memories which he had tried to suppress for so many years SPT113 is in a rather andous and vulnerable state. He is not clinically depressed although he has shown occasional signs of depression; he certainly shows some andety symptoms from time to time. It may well be that his duodenal ulcer is linked to the orgoing stress that he has experienced. There is certainly a connection between such disorders and stressful life events. It is unlikely that the ulcer will simply resolve as he hes had the for so many years, it is more a question of managing it.

5. Please confirm if any treatment would assist SPT 113 in his recovery; and

090

I have already indicated the treatment that would assist SPT 113. In addition he might well benefit from some individual therapy or counselling to help and support him once he has had treatment for the PTSD. It might also be helpful for him to attend groups of survivors of abuse where he can get some group support.

38

## SPT-31011

### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:22

### FAX Nc.

2.040



 Please let us have your commant on the reports of Dr Mangan, Consultant Psychiatrist.

091

I have already commented on the reports of Dr Mangan with whose opinion I agree. I have added some information about the history and issues of causation.

I confirm that the information contained in this report is true to the best of my knowledge and belief and may be placed before the Court.

Dr Roger Kennedy BSc MB BS FRC Psych Consultant Child & Adolescent Psychietrist Past President British Psychoanslytical Society

39

## SPT-31012

#### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:22

FAX Nc.

2.041

Appendix A/1

#### IN THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE IN NORTHERN IRELAND QUEEN'S BENCH DIVISION

2011 No 35988

BETWEEN



-and-

Plaintiff

#### SESTERS OF NAZARETH INSTITUTE OF THE BROTHERS OF THE CHRISTIAN SCHOOLS CONGREGATION OF THE SISTERS OF MERCY (NORTHERN PROVINCE)

Defendants

#### PAPERS TO DR KENNEDY

#### A PLEADENGS

- 1. Writ of Summons issued 21<sup>st</sup> March 2011;
- Statement of Claim dated 10<sup>th</sup> November 2011;
   Amended Statement of Claim dated 23<sup>th</sup> December 2011;
- 4. Defence dated 22's May 2012;
- 5. Notice for Purther and Better Particulars dated 22<sup>nd</sup> May 2012; 5. Reply to Defence dated 5<sup>th</sup> October 2012;
- 7. Replies to Third Named Defendant's Notice for Further and Better Particulars dated 8th October 2012
- 8. PLAINTIFP'S MEDICAL EVIDENCE
- Report of Brian Mangan, Consultant Psychiatrist dated 5<sup>th</sup> July 2010;
   Report of Brian Mangan, Consultant Psychiatrist dated 11<sup>th</sup> August 2011;

#### C. PLAINTIPP'S ACCOUNTANCY EVIDENCE

1. Report of Goldblatt McGulgan dated 28<sup>th</sup> September 2011

#### D. PLAINTIFF'S MEDDCAL RECORDS

- 1. GP notes;
- 2. Updeted GP notes;
- 3. HM Maghabarry Medical Records; and
- 4. Youth Justice records.

## SPT-31013

#### 31/JUL/2013/WED 15:22

### FAX Nc.

2.042

Appendix A/2

E. THIRD NAMED DEFENDANT'S DISCOVERABLE DOCUMENTS

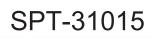
- 1. Report of D Denison, Social Worker dated 5th September 1973;
- 2. Letter from Dr Addo, SHO to Dr Allen, Consultant Dermatologist to the Matron dated 6<sup>th</sup> February 1974;
- Social Work report of D Buick, Social Worker and McGarrity, Senior Social Worker dated 20<sup>th</sup> October 1975;
- Social Work report of D Buick, Social Worker and Hegarty, Serior Social Worker dated 20<sup>th</sup> October 1975; and
   Desth Certificate of Sister Content of

F. RELEVANT ATTENDANCE NOTES

Attendance Note - meeting with Sister

SPT-31014









KRW LAW - LLP 3rd Floor, The Sturgen Building 9-15 Queen Street Belfast BT1 6EA

Tel: 028 9024 1888 Fax: 028 9024 4804 Email: office@kevinrwinters.com www.kevinrwinters.com

28 October 2013

#### Our Ref: HC/38346/CMCK

Mr Kevin Brown Department of Justice Block B Castle Building Stormont Estate Belfast BT4 3SG

ear Sir

#### **RE:** Our Client:

HIA 17

v. The DOJ & De La Salle Provincialate

We are instructed by the above named to claim damages in connection with serious and persistent abuse suffered by him at the hands of you, your servants and agents at or about St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast beginning in 1963 when he was approximately 11 years old.

Our client was abused by a BR 1 BR 94 BR 26 BR 42 and Mr Our client has sustained a severe psychiatric injury as a result of the abuse suffered by him at your premises and expert medical evidence will be commissioned in this regard.

Please confirm the identity of your insurers. Please note that the insurers will need to see this letter as soon as possible and it may affect your insurance cover and/or the conduct of any subsequent legal proceedings if you do not send this letter to them.

this stage of our enquiries we would expect you to disclose any documentation you hold relevant and material to this action. We expect an acknowledgement of this letter within 21 days by yourself or your insurers otherwise proceedings claiming damages for negligence, assault, battery and trespass to the person may be issued against you without further notice and costs may be awarded against you.

Yours faithfully KRWLAW-LLP

DL: 90267844

Kevin R Winters | Joseph D McVeigh | Gerard McNamara | Niall Murphy | Peter Corrigan | Michael Crawford | Paul Pierce

Shane Moorehead | Stephen McNamara | Lyndsay Crawley | Marie Hans | Alden Carlin | Matthew McGoldrick | Claire McKeegan

Human Rights | Solicitor Advocates | 24hr Call Out | Judical Review | Criminal Law | Litigation | Prison Law | Inquests

## **Operation Overview**

		Reference	
	(ii)	FINAL DIRECTION REGARDING DL 137	
		On 4.12.95 at Belfast Crown Court DL 137 pleaded guilty to	
		a total of eight charges of indecent assault and gross indecency against the four injured parties <b>against</b> , <b>HIA</b> 347 and	
		HIA 227 He pleaded not guilty to a charge of buggery against	
	11	and attempted buggery against HIA 347. HIA 347 refused to giv evidence in relation to the attempted buggery which was not	
0		proceeded with. He was found not guilty by the jury on the buggery charge against <mark>HIA 347</mark>	
		On 19.12.95 DL 137 was sentenced to a term of imprisonment for 3	
		years suspended for 2 years in respect of the indecent assault	
		charges, and 2 years suspended for 2 years in respect of the gross indecency charges.	
0			
	(iii)	OPERATION OVERVIEW ENQUIRY	
		The matters referred to in the statements of BR 95 were	
		fully examined by Senior Police in charge of the Operation Overview	
		Enquiry and it was decided that it was not necessary for any further investigation or action to be taken in respect of him not having	
		reported these matters to the police at the time.	
CODE 18.77	1	4	
		Page 5 of 13	

## SPT-26101



This decision was reached after giving consideration to the fact that an offence could not be proved against DL 137 in the absence of statements of complaint from SPT 140 and The same also applies to the warning given to DL 137 in that the identity of any possible complainants could not be established in order to ascertain if any offences had been committed.

Reference

The statements made by BR 95 were submitted to the DPP and read in conjunction with the main file before a direction to prosecute.

#### (iv) DIRECTIONS AND/OR RECOMMENDATIONS

D/Superintendent Meeke directed no further action from the Overview team on 19.2.96. Nothing has come to light since then to change that direction.

M McARDLE D/Sergeant 10495

CODE 18.77

Page 6 of 13

5

#### PRIVATE

you too. BR 46 was a strict man but he was fair although he left fairly early after I was sent to St Pat's. I recall one occasion when he smacked me on my face for smoking a cigarette. There was frequent bullying going on and I ended up becoming a bully myself. There was a tier system between the boys and I was able to handle myself but I hate myself for that today.

8. I remember that we were taken to Lisburn Swimming Pool for swimming lessons. There was a member of staff and his name was <sup>DL 137</sup> I do not know his surname but he was a <sup>DL 137</sup> and he was just always called **DL 137**. There were two and <sup>DL 137</sup> <sup>DL 137</sup> looked after the boys in the evenings and took them to the pool as well as being employed as a <sup>DL 137</sup> kept putting his hand down

- 10. I saw <sup>DL 137</sup> once in later years on Tate's Avenue near the Lisburn Road and I confronted him about what he had done to me. I don't know what year that was but it was in or around the late 1990's. He just said that his head was away. I've always thought about him sexually assaulting me but I've never wanted to talk about it before.
- 11. In or around 1976/1977 I was placed at Lisnevin Assessment Centre, Newtownards for six weeks. I was transferred from there back to St Patrick's

**HIA 320** 

PRIVATE

SPT-159

	PRIVATE
	HIA REF 347
	Witness Name: HIA 347
т	HE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995
	WITNESS STATEMENT OF HIA 347
ŀ	HIA 347 will say as follows:-
Perso	nal details
1.	I was born onat I was
	detained in St Patrick's Training School Belfast in or around 1979 as a resul of my involvement in crime and non-attendance at school. I was 15 years old at the time and at the beginning was in the Junior Wing of the school.
St Pa	trick's Training School Belfast (8/9/79 – 6/11/79, 16/12/80 – 24/12/80, 7/1/81
	/81, 3/2/81 – 17/2/81, 27/3/81 – 30/4/81, 7/12/81 – 29/1/82)
	During my time at St Patrick's I was sexually abused by a member of staff
2.	knew as DL 137 He was about
2.	
2.	
2.	had a lam nov
2.	had a lam nov aware that his name was DL 137 The first time he abused me wa
2.	had a lam nov aware that his name was DL 137 The first time he abused me was within a matter of days of being in the Training School. It was a weekend and
2.	had a lam now aware that his name was DL 137 The first time he abused me was within a matter of days of being in the Training School. It was a weekend and it was not one of his working days. He asked me to help him with something and brought me through the kitchen to a room at the rear. He gave me a
2.	
2.	had a lam now aware that his name was DL 137 The first time he abused me was within a matter of days of being in the Training School. It was a weekend and it was not one of his working days. He asked me to help him with something and brought me through the kitchen to a room at the rear. He gave me cigarette and the next thing he was lying on some sort of sheet on the floor.

**SPT-160** 

2

#### PRIVATE

and then he took it out of his trousers. His penis was erect and he started to masturbate.

- 3. He told me to lie beside him which I did and he took off his sweatshirt. His chest was pretty hairy and his face had stubble. He lay down again and took my hand and put it on his penis. He was pulling me close to him and trying to kiss me. There was a bad smell of tobacco and I pulled away. He wanted me to masturbate him but I kept pulling away. I was holding his penis and he was making the movements. Eventually he ejaculated and then he got up and wiped himself with a handkerchief or something. Everything became a panic then and he got dressed and ushered me through a door which led to the back courtyard.
- 4. The next time it happened was in early 1980 when I was in the Senior side of the school. It was a weekend as far as I remember and he told me to meet him at the back of the kitchen. It was after teatime and I was not sure what to do but I went anyway. He took me to the room we had been to previously. He stripped off all his clothes and he smelled as though he had just had a bath. He tried to cuddle me and I backed off. He produced a cigarette for me and asked me about a girlfriend and why I was in St Patrick's. He also said that he was going to get married soon. I then remember that he helped me to take my clothes off and we masturbated each other. I ejaculated but he did not and then he masturbated himself until he came. Everything was a panic again and we got dressed and he gave me an already opened packet of cigarettes before I left.
- 5. The next incident took place at a swimming pool outside Belfast somewhere. It was not at the pool in the St Patrick's complex as it was at a larger pool. We went by minibus and it was during the day at the weekend. DL 137 did not go with us from the school but just happened to be there.
- 6. He approached me when we were in the swimming pool and told me to go to the changing rooms and that he would meet me there. I went to the changing rooms and waited for about 20 minutes. He arrived and went into a cubicle

HIA 347

PRIVATE

### **SPT-161**

#### PRIVATE

and beckoned me to come in. He took off his swimming pants and sat on a wooden bench and I sat beside him. He just chatted away about general stuff and we were touching each other. He told me to bend down and he put his erect penis into my mouth. I nearly choked and did not want things to go any further. He stood up, put his swimming pants back on and walked off. I composed myself and went back to the pool.

- 7. After this incident I avoided any contact with him as best I could and I knew that he would not approach me if I was with someone else. The last occasion anything happened was when I approached him for money. I wanted to go to on the train and I did not have any money. One day after lunch I tried to make conversation with him but he did not want to know me, A couple of days later I saw him in the kitchen and we were alone. We went to the same room as before and I asked for the train money. He told me to tell no-one and I said I would not. We both took our clothes off and I noticed that his penis was erect. We were both naked and he came around the back of me and was rubbing against me. He penetrated my anus with his finger and then he tried to put his penis into my anus. He pushed me over and could not put it in. He pulled me upright and his penis was wedged between my thighs. He made body movements and eventually he ejaculated. I remember that I was so disgusted with myself and remember asking him for money. I got dressed and he gave me a £5 note.
- 8. That was the last time anything happened between us. There seemed to be a mutual hatred for each other after that incident. I have had problems throughout my adolescence and adult life which I believe were contributed to by the sexual abuse perpetrated against me at St Patrick's Training School. I have received psychiatric help and see my Community Mental Health Nurse regularly. I have also had problems with alcohol.
- 9. I do not believe I would be able to meet with the Inquiry Legal Team to talk about the abuse as it is still too upsetting to me and my health could not cope with it. I made a statement to police on 29<sup>th</sup> November 1993 setting out what happened to me.

HIA 347

PRIVATE

3

### HIA Inquiry

		Page 152	
1		it or was it done so that, you know, other boys might	
2		have known it was happening, but the staff might not	
3		necessarily have known it was going on?	
4	Α.	Whether the staff knew or not well, when I say staff,	
5		BR47 in his room, whether he knew about these and turned	
6		a blind eye, because, you know, they were in control and	
7		it saved him a lot of work or whatever, or whether	
8		anybody else knew about it and turned a blind eye	
9		I don't know, but I know there was never anybody they	
10		were never ever punished or anything or questioned or	
11		anything about it. I know that.	
12	Q.	Okay. You talk then about and we have touched on	
13		this with the various Brothers that were involved in the	
14		sexual abuse, so I don't have to go back to them	
15		about physical abuse. One other Brother that you	
16		mentioned in the context of physical abuse was BR42.	
17		Now you said to me earlier actually you have a positive	
18		view about BR42. Is that is that right?	
19	A.	That's right.	
20	Q.	And that of all the Brothers, he was the one that you	
21		would have thought he cared?	
22	A.	I just had just a wee feeling that well, he certainly	
23		wasn't anywhere anywhere near what the rest of them	
24		were like, absolutely not. He did on occasion hit me	
25		the odd slap and whatever, but, you know, I got	

**SPT-004** 

#### PRIVATE

boys down to the holiday home in Cushendall to get it ready for when all the boys came down on holidays. We used to do work together which needed to be done, like repairs and such. He often brought me to restaurants or to the Alverno Hotel for meals. Looking back now, it is obvious they were grooming us and that BR 39 touching was not accidental but sexual in nature. I was abused in Cushendall. BR 39 would caress my penis, legs and bottom and force me to engage in mutual masturbation. We wore shorts and they would put their hands up the legs and fondle us. There was woodland all around the holiday house and you would often see Brother BR 47 and BR 26 disappearing with the boys but nothing was ever said about it.

12. BR 47 and BR 42 sexually abused me regularly. They would make me sit next to them in the back row of the television room and fondle me. They would open their cassocks and make me masturbate them and then they would masturbate me. BR 1 was doing this too. There would be a number of Brothers sitting in the back row with a number of boys beside them. I saw other boys being abused in the television room. BR 48 used to sit at the back watching television with younger boys. He always had their hands in the pocket of his cassock. He had a certain group he always chose. Nobody was allowed to sit in the back row unless the Brothers said they could. They all had their favourites.

13. Every Saturday, the Brothers used to march us down the Glen Road in groups of three to the Broadway cinema. Everyone knew we were the home boys. I was sexually abused in the cinema too. Sexual encounters took place in the darkness of the cinema as there was only one person to look after us. It was all quite blatant but you ignored it. It was so open but nobody made a fuss about it. Everybody knew what was going on but nobody said anything. Masturbation was normal among the inmates and certain groups of older inmates would abuse the younger ones who were brought into their cliques. Two brothers who were from a farm where they were sexually abused by their father were regularly sexually abused by both the Brothers and Inmates.

HIA 314

PRIVATE

#### PRIVATE

- 14. There was a big swimming pool up at the back of the home and that was an event if they let you use it. The Brothers abused me in the changing room. It was quite regular to see a Brother being masturbated in the changing area. They would tell you to come with them and you didn't ask questions. It was the same thing again; they would masturbate me and make me masturbate them. Some of them tried to go further and have intercourse but I never let it get that far. I know for a fact other boys let it get as far as intercourse. I used to dread what would happen when I saw Vaseline.
- 15. The Brothers abused us in the dormitories as well. I used to hear them coming up in the middle of the night and they would take someone away for a couple of hours and then bring them back. You knew they were being taken away to be abused but you didn't enquire too much in case it was your turn. You just lay there and pretended to be asleep. I was called away a couple of times. The Brothers had little rooms off the dormitories and they would bring you there and turn the light off. We used to know whenever the light went off in that little room, something was happening.
- 16. BR 42 took a liking to me and he used to let me go down and get his paper for him every evening. Thinking back now I was lucky to have that freedom but I never used it for anything; it was great just to get out the gate. I know now this was his way of grooming me. The older boys used to ask me to get them cigarettes when I was out and there was no way I could have said no.
- 17. Sexual intercourse was not discouraged between the boys and this happened regularly. Homosexuality was rife among the inmates, as was bullying with the younger ones suffering. There was no escape as everywhere was unlocked and there was no privacy. The older boys would regularly abuse the younger boys in the domnitories. I remember one of the older boys who did this was called <u>SPT 24</u> He never abused me but he would ask to borrow shirts and things from me when we went out on a Sunday. A lot of the time I wouldn't want to lend him anything but he was in a position to bully me and I

HIA 314

#### PRIVATE

4

#### PRIVATE

Anthem was played and all the boys stood to attention. A housemaster called SPT 47<sub>saw</sub> this and was very annoyed at the other boys.

- 10. The sexual abuse which I suffered at the hands of the older boys happened when I was on holidays in Cushendall. Every summer a group of boys would go to this house in Cushendall which was owned by the Brothers. There were six or seven boys sharing a bedroom. I had terrible experiences there because I was small and looked very feminine at that time. I believe that due to this I got more abuse than anyone else. This group of older boys made me give them oral sex and masturbate them every night during my first week there. There were more than four boys in that group. I ran away after this first week and never returned to Cushendall. I believe that the Brothers and the staff must have been aware of what was going on and I would be shocked if they were not.
- 11. The Brothers always seemed to have their favourite boys and those boys got whatever they wanted. If they did not like the food for example they could get something else that they did like. I did not get that option. The food in general was good and there was always enough. On a Sunday there was always a fry. However if you left any food on your plate you were in trouble and got slapped. Sometimes the Brothers would kick you in the back of the ankle with their big heavy brogue shoes. It was very painful and took a few days to heal. We had some chores to do but these were usually just shining the floors. We were also allowed to smoke which I thought was strange. We also got pocket money to spend in the internal shop.
- 12. Sometimes I was humiliated in St Patrick's. The toilet paper we were given to use was like tracing paper. Every week the laundry was washed and if there were any marks on my underwear then it was hung on top of the television so that everyone could see. I was the subject of ridicule about this and the other boys called me names throughout my entire time at St Patrick's. I was given my clothes from the clothes store. They weren't clothes I would have chosen but they were fine but normally two sizes too big.

HIA 162

PRIVATE

_					
		Page 50			
1	Q.	albeit I presume they could have carved out			
2		opportunities			
3	A.	Sure.			
4	Q.	if they wished, but were can you recall			
5		counselling the boys themselves that you would have			
6		caught or been made aware of engaging in this type of			
7		activity?			
8	Α.	Oh, time and time again, yes.			
9	Q.	Would that have involved you trying to explain to them			
10		that that's maybe not a wise course for them to pursue			
11		or			
12	A.	Exactly, yes. Have more respect for not alone for			
13		themselves but for other people.			
14	Q.	Just you mentioned the housemasters' meeting. One of			
15		the points you were making to me earlier, if we just			
16		draw it out in this context, but it applies more			
17		generally, is that lots of work was going on that's not			
18		necessarily documented, or if it was documented, the			
19		documentation does not still exist, and the memory is			
20		not there, because a lot of the people who were engaged			
21		in the work are dead, but the point you were making to			
22		me was that there was a lot of what would be classed now			
23		as informal work going on			
24	Α.	Yes.			
25	Q.	to communicate about the boys, be engaged with the			

Page 52 in activity between themselves, bringing that to your 1 attention. You bring it to the police's attention. Can 2 you remember a distinct decision at a point in time, 3 "Right. I appreciate we have dealt with this internally 4 up to now, but from now on we are reporting sexual 5 activity amongst the boys. From this day forward that's 6 what we are going to do", or do you remember it more as 7 it was just a gradual change in approach that became the 8 9 norm? Can you remember how that came about? I think it might have been after the Hughes Inquiry, but 10 Α. I wouldn't be sure, but it certainly became the norm 11 12 anyway from once we started it and let them face up to 13 their consequences of their actions. If the police investigated them, let them face up to the consequences 14 15 of their actions, if the police determine -- decided to take them down that line. 16 The Panel are aware of you bringing reports to the 17 Ο. 18 police's attention in . There's an incident in 19 and so on, where these allegations --20 the fact that boys were uncovered engaging in this type 21 of activity were brought to the police's attention, and 22 I am not sure that a prosecution ever resulted from those reportings, but that became the approach that was 23 24 taken. 25 Α. No.

### OCD 8

C61-25-86

SPT-20157

DISE AL ROYAL SLAVES CONSTABULABY A' DIVISION This can figar - dealt Acres C. I. D. DONEGALL PASS BELFAST, BT7 185 Bella pear 6,1,87 pleaded qu fully me kee. He 5 assault a - Mintones 1, your, on earl dange. expile, Delinst, ROYAL ULSTER CONSTABULANT 'A' DIVISION Sub Divisional Commander 12 MAY 227 Dunmurry RECEIVED FYAL UL: - ULARY SUB-DIVISIONAL OFFICE, DUNIAUR 'A' Vit For information. 14 HAY 1987 1. 1 CID LISBURN ROAD D/Inspector 10577 GARDNER Chief Constable C2 Headquarters 75 For your information. ROTAL ULSTER CONSTABULARY "A" DIVISION Cor 13 MAY 337 J COX SUB-DEVISIONAL OFFICE S/Divisional Administrative Officer DUNMURRY for Superintendent /LB 11

Page 10 of 126

SPT-20164

### OCD 8

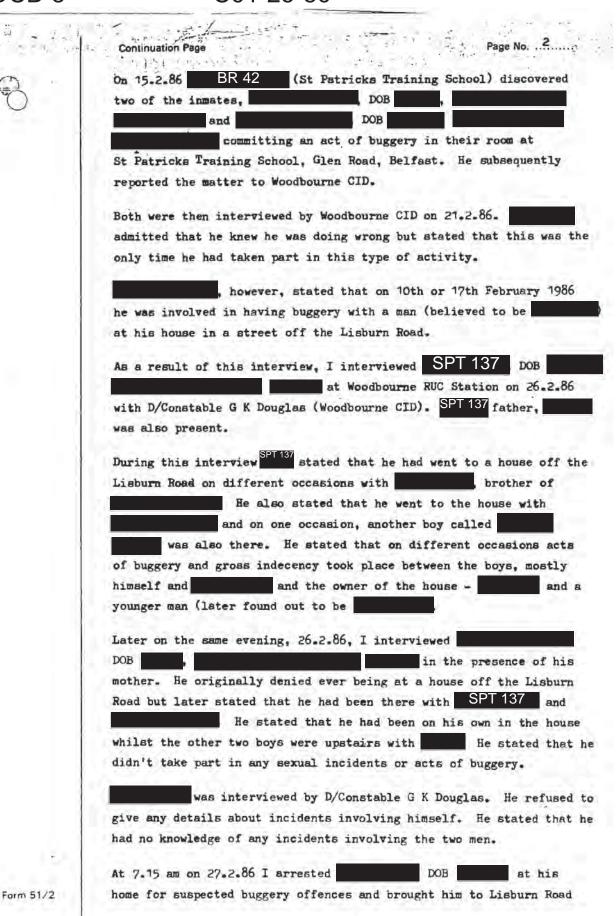
### C61-25-86

Silve to the 1945 Department of the Director of Public Prosecutions Royal Courts of Justice Belfast BT1 3NX Post in the second Belfast 235111 》「「「如当 ull. RUCYRef: C61/25/86 DPP.Ref: 1112/86 137,18 %a TALLEGED INDECENCY OFFENCES AT! DECEMBER 1985 AND FEBRUARY 1986 Chief Constable Direction - Part, I CHARGES: Prosecute 1.1.1.4 ndictment for the following non scheduled offences -17 19 5 That you, on a date unknown between the 1st day of Mayc1985 and the 1st day of September 1985, in the County Court Division, of Belfast, indecently assaulted SPT 137 a male person.
 That you, on a date unknown between the 1st day of September 1985, and the 25th day of December 1985, in the County Court Division of, Belfast, indecently assaulted SPT 137 a male person. Belfast, indecently assaulted SPI137 [atmale person]? contrary to section 62 of the Offencestagainst the Person Act 1861.
(3) That you, on a date unknown between the 1st day of September, 1985 and the 25th day of December 1985, in the County Court Division of Belfast, other than the offence set out at 2 above, indecently assaulted SPI 137 a male person? contrary to section 62 of the Offences against the Person Act 1861.
(4) That you, you a date unknown ibetween the pist and 28th dayof February 1986, in the County Court Division of Belfast, indecently assaulted SPI 137 a male person; contrary, to section 62 of the Offences against the Person Act 1861. 1.1(4) GENERAL: vol direct no prosecution against the party no prosecution can be directed against him. The admissions, Electron and States - States - States 13.26 SPT 137 Slydirect no prosecution against and 法礼 客 The/Cincuit/Assistant Director, Eastern/Circuit, will be sent, inter alia, a copy police file, copy Part I and Part II of this direction. The Sub-Divisional Commander, Royal Ulster Constabulary, Dunmurry is now sent copy Part I of this direction. - Police investigation file-is returned herewith ROYAL ULSTER CONSTABULARY ISSUED AAA INITS 高いない a state = 4 AUG 1986 Alma 1.3 5 AUG 1986 C.HERRON S. TIB OFFICE OF DIRECTOR CRIME DEPARTMENT Public Prosecutions OF PUBLIC PROSECUTIONS FOR Director Page 17 of 126

SPT-20169

### OCD 8

C61-25-86



Sing \$712405 1000M 1/05 1PC 2005 56. 173

### Page 22 of 126

### **OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL**

2

## OCD 13

## C64-06-88

	STATE	VENT OF WITNESS
		BR 26
(本))	AGE OF WITNESS (if over 21 enter "over 21");	OVER 21
	OCCUPATION OF WITNESS	
	ADDRESS	ST-PATRICKS-TRAINING SCHOOL
BE COMPLETED	I declare that this statement c	posisting of jone pages, each signed by meas true to a
TATEMENT HAS	the best of my knowledge a	nd belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered in the
SEEN WHITTENT		quiry or at the trial of any person, I shall be liable to a stated in it anything which I know to be false or do not
	believe to be true.	
	Dated this	day of November 1987
tering a state of the	and the second second	day of November 1987 BR 26
	A Pundyke D/C	a second se
	SIGNATURE OF MEMBER by statement was recorded or r	
	On Monday October 19th 19	7 as a resultion a discussion between myself
12	「「「「「「「「「」」」」「「「」」」」」「「」」「「」」」」」	
0	and SPI 52 ; I was info	armed that SPT 103 DOB:
<b>新</b> 加加加	ano	
2	DOB: Of	had been engaged %in acts
6	And the second statements and the	
	of indecency with each oth	her. Both and SPT 104 are presently in
2	* residence at St Ratricks	Training-School. As a consequence of what.
90 1		
E State	.1 had been tologi; informed	D/Inspector Shortlat Woodbourne RUC Station.
i mu ži		
ar an ar		
000		
a O. Yr Sin Sin CO		
		Server and the server
Jo Jo		
SQ0		
e.		1 4 1 2 3 1 4 1 2 3 1 4 1 2 3 1 4 1 2 3 1 4 1 4 1 4 1 4 1 4 1 4 1 4 1 4 1 4 1
0. 		
e H	NG /	
	A.	
O.	<u>, 1</u> , 1	
orm 38/36		Pro Dourden D. D.
Nain)	SIGN	ATURE OF WITNESS
A Cart Cart	Dd 8712703 10/86 Gp198 RP	a allower we have a set of the set
and the second secon	na no na wata shi na 1996 ang kata na kata na kata kata kata kata kat	Page 17 of 47

SPT-20400

# OCD 13

# C64-06-88

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE CONTINUATION PAGE NO: STATEMENT OF: Did you ever have sexual intercourse with anyone else? ... 0 No. A How did you know how to do it? 0 I just did. A He was asked to tell the truth. O I am telling the truth. A Was there ever any times when it was more than once a week? 0 A No. 104 Was it definitely with only one person, that is 0 Yes. A He was asked if he wished to make a written statement. He requested that D/Constable Craig and myself leave the room for a short time to enable him to speak to Mr R Killyleagh, which we did at 12.25pm, returning at 12.35pm. He was again asked if he wished to make a written statement, he agreed to do so. At this point I took over the interview notes. D/Constable Craig asked him if he wanted to write it himself or have one of us write it. He stated, "Yous write it," indicating to D/Constable Craig. D/Constable Craig then completed the statement heading and read over the statement caution aloud with SPT 103. D/Constable Craig asked SPT 103 if he understood this caution. SPT 103 replied that he did. He then appended his name and signed the caution. D/Constable Craig then wrote out the body of the statement at SPT 103 dictation. At the termination of which SPT 103 read over the statement aloud. He was then told he could correct, alter or add anything he wished, SPT 103 stated, "That's all right." He then signed the statement on both of the two pages and initialled two mistakes. At D/Constable Craig's invitation and dictation SPT 103 then wrote out the statement certificate and signed it. The statement commenced at 12.40pm and terminated at 1.05pm. Form 38/36 [a] SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER: (Plain) Dd. 8712627 1000M 4/86 No. 1 SPL

Page 25 of 47

# OCD 13

# C64-06-88

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

	STATEMENT OF:ALAN PUNDYKE CONTINUATION PAGE NO:
0	The interview then terminated. At 1.25pm on 23 october 1987 accompanied
	by D/Constable Craig and Mr R Killyleagh I again saw SPT 103
	at Woodbourne RUC Station. He was reminded of the nature of our
	enquiries and that he was still under caution. He replied, "Aye."
	He was asked if he was usually known as SPT 103 he replied,
	"Aye." He was asked if he was sure that no-one else was involved
	with him. He stated there wasn't, he was asked if any of the staff
	in Saint Patricks Training School were ever involved. He stated
	definitely not. This line of questioning was pursued for some time
	and he stated quite strongly that no-one else in the school was
	involved. He was asked if he was involved with anyone else outside.
	He stated that he had sex with two other boys his own age and he
	started to have sex with them when he was twelve. He stated that
	they held him down in a house in Andersonstown and had sex with
	them against his will. He was asked who these other boys were and
	he refused to say. We continually put it to him that he should
	say who they were. It was put to him that it was important that
	he told us about his allegations that two boys had held him down
	and had sex with him against his will when he was twelve years of
	age. He stated he would never tell who they were under any circumstances.
	He stated he had sex with these boys from time to time over the
	last five years. He was again and again asked to name them, he
	refused to do so. The notes were read to him and he agreed they
	were a true record of the interview and signed them accordingly.
	This interview then terminated.

Form 38/36 [a] (Plain)

e 8712527 1000M 4/85 No. 1 SPL

SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER:

10.

SPT-20401

Page 26 of 47

SPT-20409

**OCD 13** 

# C64-06-88

STATEMENT OF WITNESS



Form 38/36 (Plain)

STATEMENT OF	GEOFFREY THOMAS LYONS
AGE OF WITNESS (If over 21 enter *over 21*):	OVER 21
OCCUPATION OF WITNESS:	POLICE OFFICER
ADDRESS:BELFAST REGIO	NAL CRIMINAL INVESTIGATION DEPARTMENT
the best of my knowledge an evidence at a preliminary en	onsisting of two pages, each signed by me is true nd belief and I make it knowing that, if it is tendered quiry or at the trial of any person, I shall be liable stated in it anything which I know to be false or do n
Dated this 44	day of Jamany 1987
A. malle de	RITHS
SIGNATURE OF MEMBER by statement was recorded or r	The second s
I am a Detective Sergeant	of the Royal Ulster Constabulary presently
stationed in the Urban We	st Region of the City of Belfast. On 23
October 1987 I was made a	ware of a report that two inmates of Saint
Patricks Training School	had admitted to staff at the school that
they had carried on a hom	osexual physical relationship. The allegation
was that both boys had co	mmitted acts of buggery and gross indecency.
The names of these boys w	ere SPT 104
DOB: and SPT	103 , also known as SPT 103
DOB: At 12.05pm	on 23.10.87 I saw SPT 104 in an interview
room at Woodbourne RUC St	ation. Also present were Detective Constable
Neill and Mr Brendan Smal	l, a member of staff from Saint Patricks
Training School, acting i	n loco parentis. I introduced myself and
D/Constable Neill to SPT 10	<sup>04</sup> and explained the nature of our enquiries
to him. It was also poin	ted out to him that if what we had been
told was true it meant th	at he had committed offences and I cautioned
him. He replied, "That's	what I'm here for, to get the whole thing
sorted out." The intervi	ew continued as follows:
Q Why have you told the	brothers now?
A I want it to stop.	
A I want to be bropp	

Page 34 of 47

SPT-20410

# OCD 13

# C64-06-88

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE

0	STATEMENT OF: GEOFFREY THOMAS LYONS CONTINUATION PAGE NO: 2
-0	Q Why?
	A I'm afraid of getting Aids. I saw the thing on the TV about it.
	Q Have you been involved with anyone other than SPT 103
	A You mean SPT 103
	Q Yes, we know he is known by both names. Was there ever anyone else?
	A No, never.
	Q How did you know what to do? After all this is not something that
	you would just think up.
	A He suggested it.
	Q Do you want to make a statement about this telling us the whole story?
	A Yes.
	I then explained to SPT 104 that he could write the statement himself or
	I could write it for him. He said that I could write it. At 12.20pm I
	commenced recording a statement after caution made at SPT 104 dictation.
	At the beginning he read over the caution and signed it. Mr Small also
	signed it. I then recorded the body of the statement and SPT 104 read it
	over and signed it, as did Mr Small. He then added the statement
	certificate which I dictated to him and signed it. Mr Small then signed
	the statement. All others present then signed the statement and this task
	was completed at 1.40pm. We then explained to SPT 104 that this matter
	would be reported to the Director of Public Prosecutions and that it
	was the Director of Public Prosecutions to decide whether or not it
	should go to court. It was also explained to him that if he consented
	he would be examined by a Police Doctor at a time to be arranged. He
	said that would be OK. The interview terminated at 1,50pm and SPT 104
	left the station with mr Small.

Form 38/36 [a] (Plain)

Dd, 8712627 1000M 4/86 No. ) SPL

SIGNATURE OF STATEMENT MAKER: ....

19

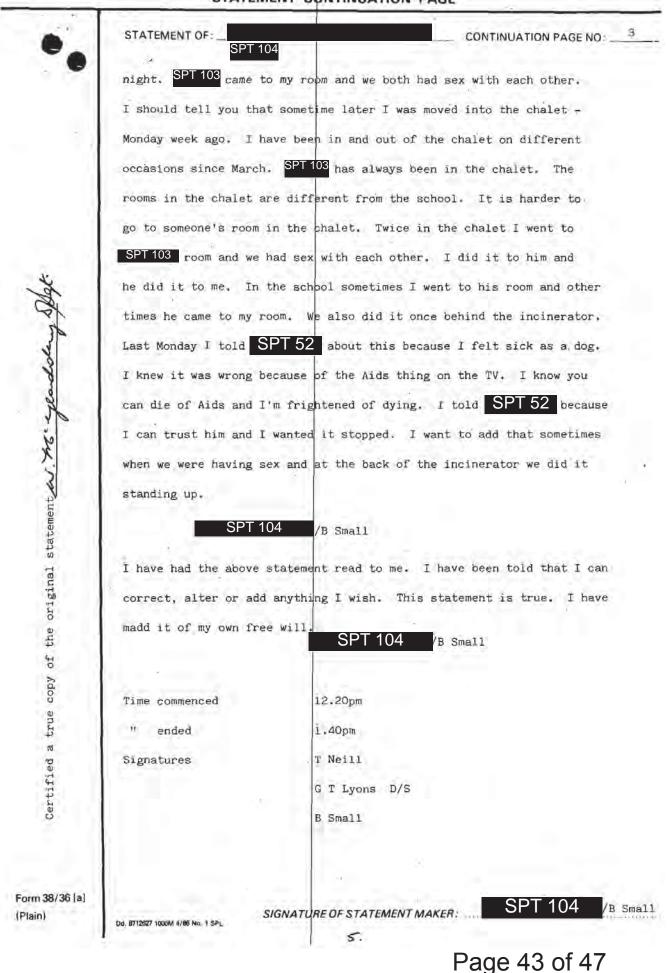
Page 35 of 47

SPT-20418

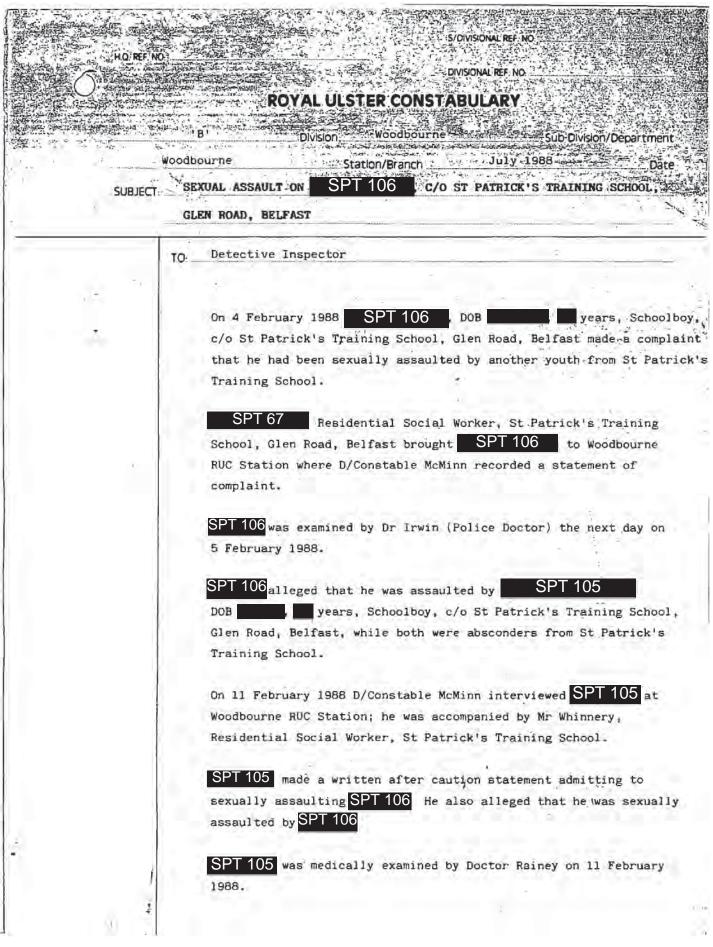
# OCD 13

# C64-06-88

STATEMENT CONTINUATION PAGE



# SPT-20425



# SPT-20426

Continuation Page 2 On, 18 July 1988 I re-interviewed SPT 106 at Woodbourne RUC Station in relation to the allegations made against him by SPT 105 SPT 106 was interviewed in the presence of Mr Webb Resident Social Worker SST Patrick's Training School ? During interview SPT 106 stated that on two separate occasions he had lay on top of SPT 105 during a sexual act, but he denied putting his penis into SPT 105.

SPT 106 also stated that he was not forced by SPT 105 to have sex, he was only asked.

A written after caution statement in relation to these points was recorded from SPT 106

It would now appear that this is not a serious sexual assault on SPT 106 as first reported to Police.

These two youths, SPT 105, years and SPT 106 years, abscondec from St Patrick's Training School. During their period of absence from the school they performed sexual acts upon each other.

SPT 105 admits committing buggery on SPT 106 but SPT 106 denies committing buggery on SPT 105, stating he didn't penetrate SPT 106

Both youths were medically examined by Police Doctors, but medical reports have not yet been received.

SPT 105 and SPT 106 have now been separated, SPT 105 is now in custody in Lisnevin.

A criminal injury claim has been received in respect of SPT 106 reference this matter, and I will be submitting a separate report to the Claims Officer in relation to the new statement made by SPT 106

I respectfully submit this report to my authorities for information and directions.

Form 51/2

OCD 2

C64-27-94

SPT-21144

Cit	Belfor	sliggen sts	y, Indea	ent A	issaul	1t + Gros PT 54	s Inc
. betr	veen 5	.4.94.	+ 19.5	.94.		HIA 384	
REFERRED TO	DATE	INITIALS	REFERRED TO	DATE	INITIAL	Child	Protectio
· OPP	20/194	The				Schedule I	Ref: Versi
brac	3-8-94			-		Page No 4	46 Section
NAN	- King	ult-		-		Action: Perm	nanent R
ORIHE	23894	WA		-	1	1	
0	23.8.94	1200 120 220 1					
alme		NK					1
M Chitin	5.8:99	2N			1		1
	8.11.98	RN.				110000	100
0	uisha	RB					
	25.8.98	RN	1 2			1 2	
Rive	10998	Ø.		1			1.1
PA.	10.9.98	RIP			1		1
		A	1		1		à
- 12			1		1	*	1
	1						
	<u> </u>						-
	1					-	1
		-					
					-		-
							-
	<u></u>		1	1.000	1		
					-		1200
	÷						

Page 1 of 175

SPT-21148

C64-27-94

Department of the Director of Public Prosecutions Royal Courts of Justice Belfast BT1 3NX Belfast 235111 PO BOX 410 RUC Ref: C64/27/94 2600/94 DPP Ref: BUGGERY, INDECENT ASSAULT AND GROSS INDECENCY R -v- SPT 54 Subject: Chief Constable DIRECTION - PART I SPT 54 I note that HIA 384 has withdrawn his allegations against SPI 54 Whilst SPT 54 made a statement to social workers admitting that he and HIA 384 has withdrawn his allegations against IA 384 had participated willingly in acts of a sexual nature, he denied such acts when questioned by police after caution. I consider that the evidence available is not sufficient to afford a reasonable prospect of convicting SPT 54 of any offence and accordingly, I direct no prosecution against him. A copy of this direction has been forwarded to the Senior Law Clerk, Belfast Circuit, who will arrange to have the charges presently preferred against SPT 54 withdrawn at the earliest opportunity. The police investigation file is returned herewith. Achroson P ATCHISON Belfast Circuit for Director of Public Prosecutions August 1994 ROYAL ULSTER CONSTABULARY HEADQUARTERS ISSUED INITS -1 AUG 1994 - 3 AUG INGA W. CRIME ADMINISTRATION UNIT OFFICE OF DIRECTOR OF PUBLIC PROSECUTION KNOCKNAGDNEY

Page 5 of 175

**OFFICIAL-SENSITIVE-PERSONAL** 

OCD 2

OCD 2

C64-27-94

Reference C64/27/94 BUGGERY, INDECENT ASSAULT AND GROSS INDECENCY SUBJECT: SPT 54 R -v-Royal Ulster Constabulary Crime Department Knocknagoney House Knocknagoney Road BELFAST BT4 2PP 25 July 1994 Legal Registrar Forwarded for directions please. Both the accused and injured party are inmates at St Patrick's Training School. The initial complaint by HIA 384 has now been withdrawn, however there would be sufficient evidence to continue proceedings against SPT 54 if a decision was made to prosecute. That decision is difficult, based on the facts contained in this report. Both accused have a history of sexual abuse and when one reads the allegations by HIA 384 and the statement that SPT 54 made to the staff at the training school, I get the impression that both parties were, to a certain extent, willing participants in the sexual activities. Although HIA 384 states he was bullied by SPT 54 into performing the sexual acts, he certainly had the sexual activities. Although HIA 384 states he was bullied SPT 54 into performing the sexual acts, he certainly had sufficient opportunity to report the offences long before he decided to do so. Given all the circumstances I would agree with the Sub-Divisional Commander's comments that the proceedings and would support his case is unsuitable for court view that the file be marked 'no prosecution'. ROYAL ULSTER CONSTABULARY HEADQUARTERS 25 JUL 1934 CRIME ADMINISTRATION UNIT **R D COOKE** KNOCKNAGAMEY D/Superintendent for Chief Constable

Page 6 of 175

SPT-21149

OCD 2

C64-27-94

Department of the Director of Public Prosecutions Royal Courts of Justice Belfast BT1 3NX Belfast 542444 PO BOX 410 RUC Ref: ' C64/27/94; and C61/254/95 DPP Ref: 2600/94 and 5148/95 INDECENCY OFFENCES R -v- SPT 54 AND Subject: R -v- Stries SP T 63 Chief Constable FURTHER DIRECTION I have reviewed the evidence and information contained in these files. It is noted that not only did HIA 384 make allegations of sexual abuse by other residents of St Patricks Training School who were of a similar age but the other residents made similar allegations against him. Both HIA 384 and SPT 54 had been in care as a result of previous sexual abuse by adults and any medical findings had to be considered in this light. There was and remains no evidence that any of the persons involved in the sexual abuse were clearly victims rather than actually consenting to it whether or not in law they could so consent. The request by HIA 384 to review the decision not to prosecute because he has now decided he is willing to give evidence does not necessarily require the submission of additional evidence. However, it is only in very compelling cases that such a course will be undertaken and this is not considered such a case. Therefore the original directions of no prosecution on both files must remain. The additional police papers are returned herewith. B J GRANT - Tel 542409 Belfast Circuit JEV for Director of Public Prosecutions August 1998 18 1.2 1328 OFFICE OF DELECTOR OF PUBLIC PROSECUTION

Page 19 of 175

SPT-21162

OCD 2

C64-27-94

SPT-21176

Give salient facts in	The alleged offences committed against HIA 384 First
chronological order	came to light when HIA 384 made a disclosure to staff at
with clarity and	'St Patrick's Training School, Glen Road, Belfast. He
brevity. Do not merely	was asked to write out his allegations which he did
repeat witness	(PART II, pages 1 - 3). Staff spoke to the alleged
statements. Where	perpetrator, SPT 54 who also made a statement
more than one person reported summarise	telling of his activity with HIA 384 (PART II, pages. ***
the case against	4 - 6 refer).
each.	
	On 18 May 1994, HIA 384 attended at Grosvenor Road
Whilst the aim should	RUC Station where he made a statement of complaint (PART
be to summarise the	II, pages 1 - 4 refer). He was medically examined but
facts on one page, a continuation page	[ [ 집 사람 같은 것에 집 집 가지 않는 것 같은 것 같
may be used if it is	no clear medical evidence was apparent of recent anal
necessary for the	abuse. The Forensic Medical Officer, Dr Farnan, did see
nclusion of all the	some signs which he suggested could be consistent with
salient facts.)	anal abuse. It transpired that HIA 384 had been
	sexually abused in Dublin in 1993 and had been medically
	examined at that time also (PART IV, pages 14 - 17 refer).
н. -	On Thursday, 19 May 1994, SPT 54 attended at
	Grosvenor Road RUC Station where he was interviewed on
	tape recorder in accordance with PACE. His solicitor
	Mr John Quinn, SPT 52 and his mother,
	were present throughout. In the first part
	of the interview SPT 54 made no reply to any of
	the questions asked. Mr Quinn requested an opportunity
	to talk to his client. The interview was suspended for
	the purpose. When the interview recommenced SPT 54
	simply denied the allegations as they were put to him
	or kept silent.
17	
1.1	SPT 54 was in St Patrick's Training School as a .
	result of a Training School (CARE) Order. It was decided
	after consultation with SPT 52 ,
	of St Patrick's Training School that SPT 54 should be
	charged with the offences alleged against him. At 1555
	hours, on 19 May 1994, he was arrested and at 1715 hours
	was charged with 1 count - Buggery; 1 count - Indecent
	Assault and 1 count - Gross Indecency. He replied, "Not
	I certify that all witness statements taken by police in connection

Page 33 of 175

OCD 2

C64-27-94

SPT-21189

	-	STATEMENT	OF WITNES	S	
STA			SPT	52	
		Name	OVER 21	Rank	
AG	E OF WITNESS (if ov	er 21 enter "over 21"): .		1010 B	
ETED pre E sta	st of my knowled	atement consisting dge and belief and or at the trial of a which I know to be	I make it kno ny person, I s	pages, each signed t wing that, if it is tenden hall be liable to prosecut believe to be true.	ed in evidence at
Da	ted this 18th	day of	May	1994	
H .	MCAULEY			SPT 52	
		OF MEMBER by who		SIGNATURE OF WITNE	SS
Ia	am the	as recorded or receive		Patrick's Training	School on
11111		The second second		I was informed that	6-11-4-04CD (C-2) (C-2)
1				of sexual abuse.	Your Your American
1.1.1.1.1				osvenor Road RUC St	
1.1				to Sergeant McAule	
1.1.1.1.1.1				ARE). He expressed	
to	talk to the F	Police without	his parents	s involvement. HIA 3	884 has been
wit	h us at St Pa	atrick's since	November 19	993.	
1.1					
		b			
		1			
					×0.
		1			
0.0					
		1			
		4			

Page 46 of 175

SPT-21194

#### C64-27-94

OCD 2

STA	TEMENT OF:	WILLIAM JONA	THAN MCAULEY	CONTINUATION PAGE NO:
Sil	ence.			
The	allegation	of buggery again	explained to	SPT 54
Q	Do you want	to say anything	in answer to th	at allegation?
511	ence.			
Q	Do you want	to deny that al.	legation?	2 ( - 1) 2 ( - 1)
Sil	ence.			
q	Do you want	to say anything	about the alleg	pation?
Sil	ence.			
Tol	d SPT 54 of	further allega	tions.	
q	SPT 54 do yo	u want to answe:	r any of that al	legation?
Sil	ence.			
Fur	ther allegat	ions explained	to SPT 54 relat	ing to other dates.
Q	Do you want	to answer that	allegation?	
Sil	ence.			
Sol	icitor asked	I to speak to hi	s client. Tape	recorder switched off.
Tap	es sealed et	.c. SPT 54 <sub>was</sub>	left in intervi	iew room with Solicitor
and	t his mother.	Interview rec	ommenced. Alleg	gations again explained to
SF	PT 54			
Q	Do you inter	nd to answer any	of the question	ns that I ask you?
A	I deny any a	allegations.		
Q.	First of al	l I put Lo you a	n allegation tha	HIA 384 has made
	suggesting	that on Easter T	uesday of this ;	year you committed an
	offence of t	buggery with him	. Do you want i	to say anything to that
	allegation?	-		
A	I deny it.			
Q	He also all	eges that you co	mmitted a number	r of acts of gross indecen
	with him?	200		
Á	I deny it.	24 C		
Q	Do you want	to know what th	ese allegations	are in more detail?

No suggestion could be made against him. I don't believe for one moment he ever made a suggestion. He is professed and is about the is a saint - works hard at everything.

SPT-10553

BR 86 is here since - came from He is a good religious ; inclined to be soft with the boys.

I talked the thing over with him. I am convinced there is nothing in the charges.

I know he has pets among the boys, but they are not private friends. For example - he ran the tuck shop hwre. I had complaints that he favoured some boys in giving out sweets.

He has favoured some boys, but I would be shocked if there is anything wrong.

BR 70 was here for about ayear prior to He was on temporary vows ; he had been doing ordinary manual work befere.

He was sent here as Prefect. He didn't do well at all. He used to beat the boys.

In October 1946, he beat the boy SPT 30 SPT 30 made as complaint to the Home Office through a solicitor that he/% had been beaten and kicked by BR 70

DR. MAGEEAN : Was there any other fault ? WITNESS : The Home Office held an Inquiry, and I gave permission to have the boy examined by Dr Scarlett, Dublin Road , at the request of Mr. Tughan, Solicitor.

(During the Inquiry BR 70 was suspended. The usual thing is to Suspend the person concerned until the Inquiry is over.)

The allegations were found by the Ministry to be grossly exaggerated, and the Ministry ordered that BR 70 be re-instated.

Because of the Inquiry Brother Provincial changed BR 70 in

DR. MAGEEAN : Were there any charges apart from severity ? Witness: Not then.

The Prefect is always the most unpopular man in the School. BR83 was responsible for having SPT 30 kept in one Sunday. This may have been his reason for making the charge against the Brother. They would know the Brother would be changed.

DR. MAGEEAN : How many boys were concerned in the affair of SPT 33

WITNESS : I questioned five : three denied it : two daid he interfered with them. All were big boys - all Reformatory boys.

When BR 70

I. SPT 30

was changed I got a petition

from 100 boys. They asked to get him kept on. SPI name was the first on the list.

(The evidence was here read to the Witness).

I have nothing to add, change or take away in the answers which have been read to me.

Signed

BR 39

# PRIVATE

- 4. My parents visited me every Wednesday night and I was allowed to visit them on a Sunday. However if I misbehaved during the week the Brothers would not allow me to leave the site. I also received pocket money of half a crown every Sunday. I also remember that I was allowed home for four days or so at Christmas and Easter. I do not remember anyone from Welfare or Social Services ever inspecting St Patrick's in the time that I was there. I was just thrown into that environment and left on my own. I did not have anyone there to check on how I was. The only thing I learned in St Patrick's was more criminality. It was a bit like Oliver Twist.
- 5. The regime at St Patrick's was brutal because a number of the Brothers were very violent. I was terrified of them. On many occasions, I received a beating with a leather strap and was punched and kicked. It went far beyond any chastisement for misbehaving.
  BR 4 slapped me frequently and he used a strap most of the time. I remember one occasion that I was standing in the corridor and he was carrying a bunch of keys in his hand. For no reason at all, he hit me on the side of the head with the keys. I could not hear properly for about a week but I did not receive any medical attention. I was too afraid to ask for help.
  BR 42 was violent towards me and the other boys as well. It was a very violent regime and there was punishment even if you had not done anything wrong.
- 6. Once my mother asked the Brothers if I could return late from home one Sunday evening because my brother was playing in a concert in a local church hall. It was agreed that I could return after the concert which I did. BR 91 removed my mattress and my bedding and I was forced to sleep on the springs. I was told that that it was because I has abused my home leave privilege even though my mother had agreed it in advance. This was the type of punishment for no reason which some Brothers really enjoyed.
- 7. There was also sexual abuse at St Patrick's and I was abused by a number of the Brothers during my time there. The main Brother who abused me was BR 1 He was a sharp featured man who mostly worked in the office during the day. Eventually he left to be in charge of Rubane House in Kircubbin.

HIA 229

PRIVATE

**SPT-041** 

PRIVATE

HIA REF: 282 Witness Name HIA 282

#### THE INQUIRY INTO HISTORICAL INSTITUTIONAL ABUSE 1922 TO 1995

WITNESS STATEMENT OF HIA 282

HIA 282 will say as follows:-

Personal details

I was born on and lived with my parents and brothers and sisters in the of Belfast. There were eleven children in the family and I am the second youngest. I have three sisters and seven brothers.
 I attended and then moved to Secondary School. My father was a and then moved to country and my mum looked after us at home.

#### St Patrick's Training School (21 October 1964 - 20 November 1964)

- 2. I got into trouble when I was about 13 and I broke into a sweet shop near where I lived in I was arrested and I had to attend the Juvenile Court in Belfast. The Court ordered that I be sent to St Patrick's for a month and at that time the Christian Brothers ran the Training School. I left the Court and was taken straight to the Training School in a minibus.
- 3. The first night that I was there I thought that the Brothers seemed okay because one of them got me something to eat because I had missed dinner time by the time I arrived. However after a few days I started to get smacked

HIA 375

PRIVATE

1

#### PRIVATE

on the back of the head or kicks on the backside when the Brothers were walking past me. These were for no reason whatsoever. The Brothers simply hit you and walked on without saying a word. This happened to me and to other boys frequently. I literally became afraid of them and was terrified of one in particular as he was a giant of a man. As far as I remember he was the tallest of the Brothers at the time I was at St Patrick's. The Brothers carried leather straps and I would have got a thump with the leather strap basically for nothing. The Brothers were really vicious. I cannot remember any of their names as it was so long ago.

- 4. There was one Christian Brother who looked after a class in the school and he was okay compared to the others. I never remember him having a strap or hitting anyone. Once I was fighting with another boy and he broke the fight up. He told both of us off but he never raised a finger against us. He was the exception to the rule. He appeared to be an old man and I recall that he walked very slowly and never got angry. He was kind to me and the other boys. Education in St Pat's was poor because I learned absolutely nothing whilst I was there. You would have spent the normal school day in the classroom and there were around twenty boys in the class. We did not change classrooms as you would in secondary school but stayed in the same room all day like in primary school. I liked the Brother who taught me although I cannot actually remember his name. I felt that going into his class was a way of getting away from the rest of the Christian Brothers because when you were in the class they never came in.
- 5. There was a set routine in St Patrick's and it was extremely regimented. One of the Brothers put the lights on in the dormitory and hit the bed frames with his strap. This was usually around half past seven or eight o'clock. I had to wash, dress, make the bed and fold up my pyjamas before going for breakfast. I then went to school and after school I could play in the yard, go to the games room, play handball or go to my dormitory. I do not remember if I had to do any homework. Tea was at the same time every day and all the boys went to the canteen and ate our meal. It always seemed really rushed then there was free time until around eight o'clock. All the boys had to be in their dormitory by then

PRIVATE

2

#### PRIVATE

- 9. A week or so before I got out, it was a Saturday afternoon, we had sausage rolls and beans for tea. I took my sausage roll and I went outside and sat on the main steps leading up into the reception hall. The crumbs from the sausage rolls were dropping all over the place and the particular Christian Brother who terrified me was walking past. He started to go on about the crumbs falling and then he began to hit me on the head with the leather strap. I must have received ten or fifteen thumps with the strap on my head and back and it was really vicious. He would have hit me the same way as you would hit a man if you were fighting with him. I ran away up the steps to get away from him. There were no witnesses and the Brother never spoke to me about what he had done.
- 10.1 was released around a week later and there were marks all over my back caused by his strap and there were a couple of lumps on my head where he had hit me. One evening I was getting a wash and I had my shirt off. My dad walked in and I remember him telling me to behave myself when I went out because I was only out of the home. He then saw the marks on my back and I told him what had happened to me. He contacted his friend and both of them went up to St Patrick's to find out what had happened. I cannot remember the name of the Brother he was speaking to and he told me that the Brother threatened to call the police and that a half dozen Christian Brothers came out to confront my dad and his friend.
- 11. There wasn't any sexual abuse at St Patrick's as far as I was aware. My complaint was just about the viciousness of them and the assaults I sustained. I probably would have got smacked on the back of the head up to six times a day and that wasn't unusual for other kids who were in there as well.
- 12. The abuse never stopped and I really pitied anyone who had a longer sentence to serve there. I know a cousin of mine, was there for two years and he came out a completely different person altogether. He was a happy go lucky kid when he went in but when he came out he was

PRIVATE

# **SPT-050**

#### PRIVATE

regularly, monthly and sometimes more frequently. It happened mainly in his room which was attached to the dormitory.

- 13. During this time other people knew about the abuse. I wasn't the only one. There were other boys being abused and I could see what was happening to them. I could see the pattern. We did not discuss it but I could tell from the pattern of the Brother's behaviour. You could see the Brothers shepherding the boys out of the room, they would be gone for long periods and I could tell from the expression on their faces upon their return that they had experienced the same treatment as I had been subjected to since my arrival at the home.
- 14.1 am not sure who was in charge of the home at the time but Brother BR 83 seemed to be the main brother at the time. I did not feel that I could report the abuse to him. I never told my brothers or my parents about the abuse. My older brother had been in the home two or three years before me but had left by the time I arrived. I did not speak to him either about the abuse I suffered there.

15. The day after I arrived BR 83 asked me if I was related to and I told them he was my brother. He said "if you're anything like him you're in for a really rough time here". He was frightening looking back on it.

BR 42 16. They all seemed like big men to me, apart from as I was BR 42 never hit me. BR 6 never young and small. BR 47 subjected me to sexual abuse but he was really violent. also hit you and he instilled fear in you. They usually hit you with their hands. You would get the odd punch in the ribs, you were forever getting slapped and hit across the back of the head and stuff like that. They would hit you if you were cheeky or did not do what you were told but to be honest they did not need an excuse to hit you. I was just riddled with fear of them all the time;

PRIVATE

**SPT-057** 

#### PRIVATE

4. I was taken away and found out later that he was one of the De La Salle boxers, a sort of blue eyed boy. As a result of that incident I got a lot of beatings from the De La Salle Brothers, mainly BR 1 Brother BR 5 BR 26 and another Brother who was extremely tall and skinny but I cannot recall his name. I was put in a room for a long time because of what happened to him. The room was on the landing above the dormitories and it was known as the sick bay. I referred to it as my cell as it had no natural light coming in to the room.

- 5. On a Sunday we would be given pocket money by the brothers if we were good. You got two and six pennies if you were good but every week I got nothing. I don't think they ever forgave me for the incident with <u>SPT 36</u> <u>SPT 36</u> even though I never touched him. I wanted to apologise to him but I never saw him again after that incident. I have no idea what happened to him.
- 6. You got six slaps on the hand with a big leather strap as a punishment. I used to get three in my right hand but for some reason I couldn't cope with it on my left hand so I struggled and that made the brothers punish me even more. I was beaten in my cell a lot.
- 7. When holiday time came, they let all the city and country boys out home. I was from and considered a country boy but I was never let out because I always seemed to be in the bad books with the brothers and was treated like the black sheep.
- 8. I tried to run away and I was found on the motorway and that made matters worse. I was found by BR 26 the tall skinny brother and two others whose names I cannot recall at present. They punished me by taking me to the swimming pool when they knew I had a fear of water. They brought me there, two took my arms and two took my legs and they threw me into the six foot end. I felt as if they were trying to drown me. I never learned to swim, I still can't swim. I am still very scared of the water because of what they did to me. I think they did this because this was the form of punishment that scared me most.

PRIVATE

**SPT-058** 

#### PRIVATE

- 9. Sometimes they would take you to the pool to punish you at the weekend when the Belfast boys were not there. It happened mainly at holiday time because I was the one that never seemed to get out. I do not know the reason for this. All boys were allowed out whether they were admitted on the care side or the justice side.
- 10. The first time they took me down to Broadway picture house I waited until the screen went dark and then ran away towards the Falls Road. I didn't know where I was going and I had no money. Two brothers, BR 26 and the tall skinny brother, came and picked me up. I got a big punishment for trying to escape a second time. The punishment was so bad that I only tried to escape twice. They took me to the swimming pool. Going down under the water all the time there is no sound and coming up your mouth is full of water and that was torture for me.
- 11.1 remained in the cell for most of my stay at St Patrick's. About a year before I left the school they put me in a dormitory. BR 26 used to come up with a big bunch of keys like a gaoler at 6.30am, he would hit your legs with a stick and tell you to get up for early mass and the sleep was hanging out of your eyes. I think Father Brendan Smyth said mass on occasion.
- 12. On Saturdays and Sundays when the Belfast boys were out, they made me push all the beds back in the dormitory. They gave me two cloths for under my feet and they would splash polish all over the big long dormitory and I had to walk up and down with these squares of cloth under my feet covered in polish and I had to make that floor shine. I had to do that in three dormitories. I always did this cleaning alone.
- 13.1 ran away sometimes and the same four brothers previously mentioned punished me with beatings. They were bad. They took you up to the sick room on the second floor. There was no light, just a frosted window and a mattress on the floor with an army blanket. These Brothers came in with a cane and a belt and you would be beaten anywhere. In the room anything

PRIVATE

**SPT-080** 

#### PRIVATE

away or it was just because I was homesick. I don't honestly remember the reason why I ran away. I always went back to my parent's home and I did tell them that I was not happy. At the beginning they sent me back by as time went by my mother sometimes hid me if the Brothers called to bring me back. When I returned to the home I had to wear shorts for six weeks as this made it easier to identify me if I tried to abscond again.

- 8. I realised that what he was doing to me was wrong because I was getting older and I tried to stop him sometimes. I tried to stand up but he kept holding me tight and continued what he was doing. He threatened me that he would put me in another home for older boys and that I could be raped and that there were men who were worse than him and could do worse than him. I can remember one specific threat about that but cannot recall if it happened more than once. I believe that the abuse may have stopped after the threat but I cannot be totally sure.
- 9. I would say that St Pat's was alright in general but at night time if any of the boys spoke they used to have you out kneeling on the floors for two hours. Sometimes it was the Brothers who punished us but there was also a housemaster called SPT 40 who was involved. He was from and had black hair and swarthy skin. He was evil and wicked. In other cases if anyone misbehaved they waited until about three or four in the morning and they brought everyone down and put us through the cold showers. I don't know what pleasure they got out of it but that's what they were doing. It did not happen every week but it could have happened maybe three or four times in six months. I just accepted that punishment was normal.
- 10. It was a regular occurrence to get slapped by me and other boys such as DL 356

BR 5 This happened to SPT 41 and SPT 42 BR 5 was the main

SPT 42 took his own life a few years ago.

person who strapped me and it seemed that he got pleasure from it. He brought me into the Head Office most of the time and he punished me with a strap. It was about eighteen inches long, made of leather and there was a split in it. It used to nip and left a mark on my legs or my bum which is where he hit me. He used to

HIA 272

PRIVATE

3

#### PRIVATE

swing the strap so it went round in towards my testicles when I was spread eagled.

- 11. Sometimes if he wanted to make an example of me or the other boys he used to punish us in the gym on a Sunday morning in front of the rest of the boys. I remember that happened to me on three or four occasions. I remember two of the instances well as I was strapped for stealing some of the money I had been counting and once for breaking a window. He put a wooden chair out in the gym and bent me over the chair. He slipped my trousers down and I was in just my boxer shorts and got six whips with the strap in front of everyone. There were other Brothers there and a Housemaster but no one intervened. BR 5 was not the only Brother who used the strap but he was the one who used it BR 26 most. was another who used the strap but he never beat me. I BR 85 think also used a strap but I am not certain. BR 42 would use the strap if he saw a boy misbehaving and he was wicked.
- 12. There were a lot of young children in St Patrick's who lived a considerable distance from Belfast. There were no buses because the buses would have been hijacked and burnt so these children were not getting any visitors. Some of the Christian Brothers were befriending them and receiving sexual favours from them. The Brothers gave them food or perks which the boys from Belfast obtained from our own homes. Our visitors were bringing fruit or cigarettes but the country boys had no real visitors and the Brothers were preying on these young lads. The visits took place every Sunday if you were kept in and also on Wednesdays. My mother and older brother came to visit me regularly. We were allowed out at the weekends unless the Brothers stated that you had misbehaved and then you would be kept in.
- 13. I reflect on things now and see that the Brothers were grooming the children but at that time I would not have realised that was what it was called. I was told that a number of different Brothers were involved in this, namely BR 5 BR 26 BR 38 BR 85 and BR 86 It went on

the entire time I was at St Patrick's and I distinctly remember the Brothers

HIA 272

PRIVATE

4

**SPT-091** 

#### PRIVATE

have a lot of money in those days and because we are a large family we could not afford much in the way of luxuries.

- 7. I can recall from the very start of my time there that assaults took place in the Training School. I remember coming down sometimes after we had been playing football and we were going into the shower room. There were a couple of house masters who were always involved. They were called SPT 1 and SPT 2 SPT 1 was a small, heavy set man in his late thirties or early forties and SPT 2 was tall, slim, wore glasses and was about the same age. They always told me and the other boys to hurry up and they slapped us on the back of the head or hit us with boots. On some occasions, I was still naked because I was drying off after a shower. Those two house masters had wet towels and they flicked the towels at me like a whip and it caused big welts on the backs of my legs and back. That type of assault took place frequently and probably once a week. It happened to me and to other boys at St Patrick's. From memory it was always the same two house masters who were carrying out these assaults. It was just accepted and I never even considered telling anyone. I never thought of saying I want to see a Solicitor or I want to see a doctor and make a complaint because you didn't realise you could do these things. It's only in later life that I realised that I could have made a complaint.
- 8. I remember on one occasion I was in a classroom doing woodwork with a teacher called SPT 89 I remember the blade breaking as I was sawing through a bit of wood. I broke the bit of wood and he came over to me and he called me a stupid b\*\*\*\*\*d. I recall during this incident in particular that there was a strong smell of alcohol from SPT 89 He punched me really hard in the eye and I never had a black eye like it in my life. My brother was visiting that day and asked me how I got the injury and I told him. He was angry but I don't believe he took it any further.SPT 89 was slim and in his sixties at that time.
- The Brothers would have slap me or the other boys on the head but they were not too aggressive to me. I remember BR 42 doing this in particular but it only happened if a boy was cheeky or acting up. I am aware that other

HIA 344

PRIVATE

3

#### PRIVATE

people have said that the Brothers beat them up but that did not happen to me. I was also not aware of any sexual abuse and nothing like that ever happened to me.

10. I absconded from the place several times due to the abuse and also because I did not want to be there. I usually went back to my parents' house but they always contacted the Training School and returned me. I absconded many times because I was assaulted and I did not want to stay and be assaulted again. I absconded after I turned fifteen years old and I was remanded in custody to Crumlin Road gaol. I was sentenced to Armagh Borstal for absconding from the Training School. My sentence in Borstal was for a period of six months to two years and I believe that I served twenty one months in total.

#### Armagh Borstal

- 11. I had a very hard time in Borstal and was physically abused frequently during my time there. The regime in Borstal was very strict and if I or any of the boys did not follow the rules to the letter we were subjected to very harsh and degrading punishment. The prison officers would have called us "dirt birds" and I was called a "fenian bastard".
- 12. We were woken at 7.30am every morning by the prison officers. Some mornings they would not wake you and would come in to your cell and throw the bed up in the air to get you up. If you were not awake you were punished by having your association taken away. You also had to make a bed pack every day and if it was not done properly your association was taken away.
- 13. There was a cell inspection every week on a Thursday morning. I was regularly made to clean my cell on a Thursday evening so that I missed Top of the Pops.
- 14. There was a parade in the yard every morning so your boots had to be polished for it. If your boots were not polished well enough or you had boot

HIA 344

PRIVATE

# **SPT-099**

the big house. I was also beaten there by the Brothers. I cannot remember any of their names.

- 17. I didn't tell anyone about the abuse at the time. I had no one to tell. I had no family. I had no visitors. It annoyed me that boys got out at weekends and I did not get to go anywhere. I thought that was wrong. I didn't get out at holiday times either.
- School was on site and it was tough enough with the Brothers. I still had problems with my hearing and I didn't learn anything.

#### St Patrick's Training School

- 19. I was moved to St Patrick's on 24<sup>th</sup> April 1973 because I fought back when the Brother's hit me in Rubane. I was moved under a Training School Order. I think I was about thirteen at the time and was in for around eight months.
- 20. I do not believe I should have been there as there were paramilitaries operating in St Pat's. In the senior side there was the IRA and on the junior side there was Fianna. I should have never been brought up in that kind of environment. I saw people getting their beatings and getting their legs broken. As punishment I got sent to a cell and that is where I got beaten by the staff. I got beaten by two housemasters called <u>SPT1</u> and <u>SPT2</u>. Another staff member called <u>SPT3</u> witnessed the abuse but did not intervene.
- 21. On a few occasions the Brothers made us get in the shower naked and they beat us with a strap which had lead in it. They did this as a form of punishment. On one occasion they did it after a few boys and I got drunk. Two boys that were with me were **SPT 45**. They were both from **I** cannot remember the names of the Brothers who did this but I remember they were smirking while they were beating us.

HIA 94

5

#### Lisnevin

- 22. When they felt they couldn't control me in St Pat's they sent me on again to another institution. I was transferred to Lisnevin on 7<sup>th</sup> November 1973. I was years old. I was of the view that Lisnevin was an assessment centre for IRA/UVF paramilitaries at that time to see if they were fit for prison. I should never have been put in that institution to mix with others who were involved in paramilitary activity.
- 23. They locked me up and kept me in a cell at night and sometimes during the day for about twenty months. Most of the boys stayed in dormitories, however some were also in cells. They said I was uncontrollable. I stayed in almost solitary confinement. I spent two periods of about 6 weeks each time in Muckamore Abbey and I was put on 600mg of Ospolot tablets to keep me suppressed.
- 24. I was beaten in Lisnevin in the cells by the housemasters called LN 1 and LN 2. They punched and kicked me. There was a teacher called LN 3 and I think she saw a lot of things that were going on in Lisnevin. LN 3 is still alive.

#### Other institutions

25. I was moved from Lisnevin to various borstals. I think this was under a court order. I spent time in Crumlin Road Prison and Armagh Prison. I think I was released when I was about seventeen and a half.

#### Life after care

26. I spent time in various prisons including Magilligan and Long Kesh for hijacking and kidnapping after I left care. When I got out of prison I met my mother. There were no feelings there as I didn't know her. I met my father for the first time when I was forty. He lives in the second secon

HIA 94